



GOD AND DEVIL WORLD

BOOK 12

Zi Chan Bao Zeng

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

God and Devil World

(神魔系统)

by

Zi Chan Bao Zeng

(资产暴增)

Synopsis

In less than an instant the world as we knew it was at its end.

That's right. The Apocalypse. In a single blink Zombies appeared and mutated monsters began to rampage all throughout the world. Now it was the human species turn to fight for survival and planetary dominance!

On the same day that the world descends into chaos we meet Yue Zhong. Initially only hoping to get to his friends and escape to a refugee camp our protagonist sets out, inadvertently building a team along the way. After a series of fortuitous events and a few serious hunches our hero decides it's time to do more than just survive!

Yue Zhong begins to form the foundations of an enormous survival plan... before he suddenly discovers that he has only gotten over the first hurdle.... Unbeknownst to Yue Zhong and company, the world outside of China is mostly a wasteland! Country sized swathes of nuclear radiation and an extreme shortage of supplies in the world after the nuclear explosions was quickly becoming the "norm". Mutants, Evolved animals and what's worse, intelligent out of control dinosaurs had quickly appeared and claimed their own sections of the planet. There were several innately powerful Evolved races which appeared that were more than 10 times stronger than humans, nearly all of them possessing bodies impenetrable by normal bullets. The fabled orcs' were another of these Evolved races, the leader of which had in fact enslaved many of the remaining human beings.

Unceremoniously exposed to such a cold and heartless new world, Yue Zhong is faced with a choice: Find a deep dark hole and hope it goes back to "normal"? Or overcome all obstacles and struggle towards Evolution!!!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Editing by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 910: Entering the Radiant Battleship Once More!

One blond girl with a voluptuous body and dressed in a tight black leather suit opened up her eyes wide.

In an instant, there was a green beam that shot out of her eyes, piercing through the storm of energy, allowing her to see clearly. It was precisely sitting at the eye of the storm, exuding that terrifying pressure as he absorbed the energy around him.

Beside her, another girl of about 90% resemblance to her, but her long hair tied in a ponytail, grabbed Elisa's hands, while her eyes were closed and she channeled her own ability.

In the air, the light rays distorted as whatever Elisa saw was projected out.

"As expected, it was him!!"

Seeing Yue Zhong absorbing the atmospheric energy at such an intensity, the experts of the Superhero Alliance could not help but take in a breath of cold air.

Lehman watched with bitterness and envy, "Seems like he had just evolved once more. He was already nigh invincible to begin with, now that he evolved again, who else on Earth can be his opponent?"

Elisa was filled with curiosity as she thought, "Strong... so that's Yue Zhong? Truly formidable, no doubt the publicly acknowledged number 1 expert."

The experts of the superhero alliance were constantly dying in battle, and their ranks replenished by other new experts. Elisa and her sister Eliza were both newbies to the team.

The energy storm continued for another 20 seconds, before Yue Zhong swallowed them all, and opened his eyes. At that moment, it

seemed that his gaze was incredibly sharp, seemingly capable of piercing through the void.

After he opened his eyes, he twisted his head to gaze at Elisa.

With that gaze, the half-step Type 4 Elisa, who was making use of the nanotech to display a Type 4 strength, felt a sharp stab in her eyes. She quickly closed them shut and felt a slight compression in her chest. She then crumpled to the ground, her expression pale, her entire head filled with thoughts of Yue Zhong's sharp gaze.

"How is that possible? It was just a gaze, and he was able to cause us sisters such harm. Furthermore, that was under the lack of ill-intent. If he had meant to, we would have been dead.

Eliza, who was holding Elisa's hands, suffered the same repercussions, as she fell to the ground, pale and full of shock. She had sensed the terrifying might of Yue Zhong through Elisa's vision.

Right now, Yue Zhong was one more step closer to being a God, with all sorts of abilities. A single gaze from him could kill numerous Type 4 powerhouses, a testimony to his new strength.

Lehman spoke out, "Mr. Yue Zhong, we're from the Superhero Alliance, there was no offense meant. We just wanted to investigate the cause of the commotion."

Yue Zhong closed his eyes and replied mildly, "Got it. You guys may go."

"Let's go!"

Lehman shot a deep glance at Yue Zhong before he led his team away.

"Type 8!! I'm finally a Type 8 powerhouse!! I have the Third Order God-Devil Body, and even if I don't use the Domains, I can match the Type 8 Asura warriors!!" Yue Zhong could sense the upgrades to himself, and he was filled with an indescribable urge to howl towards the skies, giving vent to the excitement he felt.

"Now, I should be able to communicate with the Radiant Battleship!" With a thought, he sent his will into the Imprint on his right hand.

Inside the God-Devil Imprint, there was a navigator with the coordinates of the Radiant Battleship. He could sense the presence of it beyond the void.

As his will swept the navigator, the Radiant Battleship responded, and directly sucked him into the confines of the ship.

Once he stepped inside, he swept the battleship a look, and his pupils narrowed. His attention was fixed on the various runes engraved along the walls of the Radiant Battleship, "Ah! There are laws and principles within these carvings."

The interior of the Radiant Battleship was glowing, extremely beautiful, and there was not a single patch where it was not radiating with profound runes.

When Yue Zhong entered the Radiant Battleship for the first time, he had been a Type 4 Divine Warrior, and had no way of understanding or comprehending all of these.

Now that he was a Type 8 powerhouse, with the Third Order God-Devil Body, his innate potential had far surpassed the human limits. In terms of comprehension ability and cultivation, within this world controlled by God, he was on par with those 1-in-a-thousand-years genii.

Yue Zhong stared hard at the runes, his face slack as he continued to absorb the information. Soon, an entire day passed.

His right hand then heated up, as Bai Yi's reminder resounded, "Master, you have spent an entire day, there're 2 more days till the appointed meeting time with the Americans."

Yue Zhong stirred, however, his eyes were still filled with passion towards the walls of the Radiant Battleship, "This battleship is truly a Gold-grade treasure. There're so many profound runes,

hiding the secrets of the universe and the truth of the worlds. These are the true precious treasures. It's a pity I'm lacking time. Otherwise, if I were to stay here for a hundred years, I could directly comprehend spatial laws and reach the Type 9 realm."

He recollected himself and went towards the command center of the Radiant Battleship.

At the cockpit, there was a golden chair, as well as a golden crystal ball floating in mid-air in front of it.

It was the master control of the Radiant Battleship, once he sat on it, he would be able to receive information from the battleship itself, directly controlling every single corner of the battleship.

However, it was not just anyone who could sit on it. If a person of the Type 4 realm and below tried to sit on it, he would be overwhelmed and might even explode. A Type 5 powerhouse could forcefully sit, while a Type 6 powerhouse could barely control it, but unable to receive the notifications from the Radiant Battleship. A Type 7 powerhouse would be able to control most of the information coming in.

Chapter 911: Embracing Chen Yao!

Yue Zhong eyed the golden seat with a heated expression and sat on it.

At that moment, it glowed brightly, and countless nuggets of information flooded his brain, and his entire body seemed to have become one with the powerful and almighty Radiant Battleship, capable of transcending space and visiting over 800 worlds.

The gateway to the other worlds also appeared in front of his vision while connected to the Radiant Battleship. As long as he had sufficient power, he could easily take the leap and had to another world.

With a thought, he pulled out both Type 9 Nuclei and inserted them into the golden crystal ball.

At that moment, the crystal radiated brightly, and the entire Radiant Battleship also lit up, as the different types of machinery and gears began to kickstart.

"A single Type 9 nucleus could allow the controller to transcend worlds, but it's not enough to activate its defenses or offenses. It would take about 5 Type 9 nuclei in order for it to be battle-ready. Inputting 9 Type 9 nuclei, a single cannon would be enough to blast most Type 9 powerhouses to death. At the same time, it feels like this Radiant Battleship could house an unlimited number of Type 9 nuclei. The more the number of Type 9 nuclei, the more terrifying its capabilities. In theory, if there were an unlimited amount of Type 9 nuclei, one could even use it to kill God."

Yue Zhong sat on the seat and felt the changes in the Battleship, thus, arriving at the conclusion.

The Radiant Battleship was strong in both offense and defense and possessed the ability to leap through space and traverse worlds. It could fly around in an unbridled manner, and it was

precisely so due to the huge energy consumption required.

Yue Zhong only had 2 of the Type 9 nuclei and had no way of fully exhibiting the strength of the Radiant Battleship.

He eyed one particular targeted space void, and his eyes flashed with combat intent, "That world has a Type 9 expert, it was that guy who had leaped through space and wanted to steal the Radiant Battleship away. Now that I have comprehended the strength of this Radiant Battleship, against any Type 9 powerhouse that lacks a Gold-grade treasure, I can still escape. Once I'm back from the Bermuda Triangle, I will definitely go to that world to check it out, if I have the chance. A world that could produce a Type 9 powerhouse, it must be strong as well. Opportunities would be rampant there."

Currently, after Yue Zhong entered the Type 8 realm, and reached the Third Order of his God-Devil Body, his combat strength had increased by more than 10 times. Adding on to the might of the Radiant Battleship, even if he could not kill a Type 9, it was more than enough to escape one.

"For now, let me try the strength of this Battleship."

With a thought, the radar system of the Radiant Battleship swept out, and immediately scanned the entire Earth at one go.

In that instant, he could sense every single location of Earth, as long as he willed it, he could leap through the void and appear anywhere on Earth.

"Time to go back and rest, I can also bring Floxenia along, with her help, the information should be more accurate."

After reaching the Third Order God-Devil Body, Yue Zhong's combat strength had soared through the roof and possessed numerous profound abilities. He could even manipulate the atmospheric energy, however, in terms of knowing his subordinates' hearts, he did not have the Mind-Reading ability that

Flozenia had.

As he willed it, in the capital back in China, inside the luxurious villa he was staying, a huge spatial tear appeared. He then walked out of it.

Inside the villa, there were many beauties, and they were considered the prizes of war that Yue Zhong had obtained from other skirmishes. They were all his maidservants.

Seeing Yue Zhong tear through space and directly walking out in front of them, all of them were taken aback, before quickly lining up to greet him, "Sir!!"

Yue Zhong waved his hands and went towards his bedroom.

One particular voluptuous and beautiful maidservant spoke with a great sense of curiosity, "Didn't Sir go to America? How did he appear here?"

"What ability is that? It's too overpowered!"

"You guys will not be able to comprehend the true extent of his strength."

"..."

When he left, the maidservants began to chit chat, although they had no abilities, they were still able to tell that something was out of the ordinary. They knew one thing for sure, that was Yue Zhong had become even more unfathomable. The ladies following Yue Zhong could come in contact with many more things, thus they were clear that while China has already established some form of government, and reinstated order, with laws in place and businesses booming, there were definitely still many problems hiding underneath the perfect surface.

The whole of China was too big and faced the threat of Mutant Beasts, Aliens, Zombies, the Sea Clan, and many more. Under such dire circumstances, a powerhouse was definitely welcomed and looked up to. As for the strongest on Earth, Yue Zhong, it was

natural that they were attracted to him.

Inside the villa, Yue Zhong's mouth suddenly curled up, "Ah? Seems like there's a surprise."

He took a leap, disappearing from his location and reappearing about 10m away. A teleportation over a short distance like this was nothing much to him.

In a few breaths, he had arrived at his bedroom, and he could hear the sounds of water splashing and female laughter within the bathroom.

"Ladies! I'm coming!"

When Yue Zhong heard those familiar voices, his heart started to race as he reached out to pull the doors.

When he opened the door, he was stunned. In front of him, Chen Yao was naked, using a shower head to rinse that alluring body of hers.

Inside the huge pool, there was Ji Qing WU, Zhang Jing Qiao, Zhang Jing Wei, the little loli with huge boobs Guo Yu, the loveable girl-next-door Lu Wen, as well as the genius loli Yao Yao.

The current beauties inside the pool were the first batch of ladies that had followed Yue Zhong throughout, and their relationship was the strongest, thus forming a small group.

As the number of women around Yue Zhong grew, there was an even clearer separation between the cliques, based on areas or worlds they came from.

"Ah!!"

Chen Yao saw Yue Zhong barging in, and let out a shriek, as her body flushed red, her hands trying to cover her important parts. She was embarrassed as she lowered her head.

Ji Qing Wu, who was flaunting her perfect beauty without meaning to, sighed in her heart, "Seems like Little Yao has fallen

for him too."

Ji Qing Wu knew her friend well, if Chen Yao really hated Yue Zhong, she would have slapped him across the face, or rush out of the pool. She would not be acting like this, shy yet enticing.

Seeing Yue Zhong and Chen Yao standing there dumbstruck, Zhang Jing Qiao came out of the pool, bouncing over to Chen Yao, and reached out to grab her. She then shot Yue Zhong a coquettish look and stuck out her tongue to lick Chen Yao's neck, like a little vixen, "Master, let me tell you, Sister Chen Yao really likes you. Now is a perfect time, push her down and make her your woman. Hehe, I shall cheer Y'all on!"

Chen Yao was feeling extremely embarrassed and anxious, as she struggled and squealed, "That's not true! I don't!! Release me, Jing Qiao! Release me, otherwise, I'll get angry!"

Most of the women beside Yue Zhong had obtained decent resources to help them evolve to reach the Type 3 realm. However, while most of them were at that realm or even at Type 4, their combat experience was only equivalent to a Type 2 expert.

Although Zhang Jing Qiao had strength, when compared with Chen Yao, they were on different levels. If Chen Yao wished so, she could easily escape from the clutches. Yet, while she looked like she was struggling, there was no strength involved.

Yue Zhong understood, and he eyed the alluring and charming Chen Yao, his eyes flashing with a passionate gaze.

Those years ago, Chen Yao and Ji Qing Wu were the publicly recognized school belles and were the goddesses of many men. Yue Zhong had been an ordinary guy, working to make ends meet, and they were just on different social levels. Yet now, Chen Yao was in his grasps.

Without any hesitation, Yue Zhong walked over, embracing her as he ignored her struggles and lifted her towards the bed nearby.

After her futile attempts, her eyes shone brightly, with a hint of expectation, at the same time, fear, as she asked timidly, "Yue Zhong, do you like me?"

Although she had fallen for him long ago and was willing to give herself over to him, right before the deed, she was still afraid.

Yue Zhong smiled gently and lowered his head to kiss her on the lips, "Of course, I like you. Don't worry, leave it to me."

Chapter 912: The Sea Clan's Invasion!

The entire room was filled with a feeling of spring.

Throughout the night, Yue Zhong had truly and thoroughly tasted Chen Yao. She had evolved to a Type 4 Divine Warrior level, and her physique was much stronger. Although she just lost her chastity, she did her best to match Yue Zhong, allowing him to have a pleasurable time.

The rebellious girls Zhang Jing Qiao and Lu Wen stood by the side, cheering him on. They were bold and unfazed, allowing Yue Zhong to truly enjoy himself.

Since he battled often and took risks almost all the time, he was often away from home. When he had the chance to get intimate, he would do so, and both sides would cherish the time they had.

Early the next morning, before dawn broke, the beautiful Liu Mei'er came into the room, speaking urgently, "Master, things are not good, the Sea Clan started invading Shanghai this morning, and has already conquered the city center."

However, as she barged in, she saw Chen Yao, Lu Wen laying in Yue Zhong embrace, while the Zhang sisters were grabbing each of his arms. The scene could cause anyone to be flushed.

Liu Mei'er's face was also flushed red when she saw the scene as her heart skipped a beat.

When Yue Zhong heard Liu Mei'er's voice, he immediately opened his eyes and carefully extracted himself from the beautiful bodies around him. He then kissed them all, before turning around to leave.

When Yue Zhong left, Chen Yao also opened her eyes, her smile blossoming.

Yue Zhong quickly arrived at the command center, and asked Chi Yang, "What's going on? Chi Yang?"

When Yue Zhong was not around, the command usually fell to Chi Yang and Ji Qing Wu.

Chi Yang's face was serious as he pointed to a display, "Look!"

On the screen, numerous Mutant Beasts were pouring out from the sea, making their way towards Shanghai.

Within the horde of Sea Mutant Beasts, there were Mutant Lobsters the size of houses, and other Mutant Beasts that were over 1km in length, their shells red and covered in spikes. There was even a Mutant Sea Snake of over 1km long, as well as a Mutant Dragon Turtle that had a long neck yet possessing countless sharp teeth. Many different species were all charging towards the city center of Shanghai, clashing with the evolved Zombies occupying the city.

All this time, the Sea Mutant Beasts had been evolving continuously as well. There were currently many Type 5 and Type 6 ones, and behind them was a strange species that had 3 heads, each looking like lobsters, yet possessing horns on each head. Their bodies were like Ichthyosaurs, and their limbs were ferociously looking. Each of these beasts was over 3km long, covered in strange scales.

On top of these beasts, there were groups of mermaids and mermen, each of them with human upper torsos, and fish lower bodies. Their looks were also incredibly enchanting.

Other than these, there were also Sea Clan experts who wore grim expressions as they charged towards shore as well.

The Sea Clan powerhouses mixed in with the Mutant Beasts, slaughtering the zombies and both sides began to incur rising death toll.

The zombies in the Capital were in the millions, seemingly endless, however, the number of Sea Clan members were even more, and their combat strength was much higher than the

zombies. Thus, when the huge horde of them came clashing with the zombies, they got the upper hand.

Under the lead of the Mutant Beasts, the Sea Clan army quickly got down to the mad slaughter of the zombies, and soon, half of the city had fallen to the hands of the Sea Clan.

Yue Zhong saw this and his eyes narrowed. Shanghai had been on their list to conquer next. There was a 2,000-strong unit led by Bai Xiao Sheng that had already set off towards Shanghai.

This unit under Bai Xiao Sheng were elites, making use of the advanced technology Yue Zhong brought back from the Mech Kingdom to arm themselves. They were even capable of blasting a Type 6 Mutant Beast to death. Among them, there was also a sentient Type 7 Mech, holding the formation. However, if this unit were to come across the Sea Clan, they would definitely be annihilated.

Yue Zhong frowned and asked, "What's the location of Bai Xiao Sheng and his team?"

Chi Yang had a solemn expression, raising his hand to point to one particular red dot, "They've reached this location, and are already engaging some of the zombies on the fringe. About 30km to their right, there's some form of shelter, and about 5,000 survivors are holed up in there."

Yue Zhong took a good look and his face fell, "That position will be overrun by the Sea Clan in another dozen hours based on their speed!"

Chi Yang looked at Yue Zhong and asked, "That's right, so, should we get them to retreat, or stay there and cover the retreat of the survivors?"

For Bai Xiao Sheng to lead a team of 2,000 and cover the retreat of 5,000 survivors, it would be extremely hard. If he was careless, the entire troop could be wiped out.

Be it the zombies or the Sea Clan, they would kill humans mercilessly. Of course, for the sake of habitation, they would also slaughter among themselves.

If Bai Xiao Sheng and his team abandoned the survivors, with their equipment, they were sure to escape with their lives. However, the 5,000 survivors would be the sacrifice.

"I'll go over!"

Yue Zhong thought for a moment, and waved his hand, revealing a spatial tear and he stepped into it.

Chi Yang stared at his back, his face breaking out into a smile of relief, without any envy, "He became stronger."

Near Shanghai, soldiers wielding Enhanced Armor and Laser Guns were currently taking cover behind some simple fortifications, firing at the zombies surging towards them.

A number of zombies had just reached the area when their heads were all blown off by a laser beam, and their corpses crumpled to the ground.

These soldiers were the elites of China, with their marksmanship, and training at the tip-top condition, they could easily take out enemies within a 200m range.

Chapter 913: Chaos!

On top of a tall building about 500m away from the battlefield, a dozen militants were laying prone, looking out into the distance.

One of them, who had tanned skin, his face looking weathered, saw the elite Central Army and was filled with shock. He could not help but curse, "Damn, those fellows have really good equips."

Another young man, who had dyed blond hair, and wore tattered clothes, leaving his torso bare, had a look of fear, "Yea, The L3s could defend against the heavy machine guns, and grenades, yet these soldiers can tear them apart so easily with their weapons. What the hell is up with those weapons?"

These militants had relied on their equipment obtained from border-troops from prior to the apocalypse and thought that they were capable of conquering the whole of China. However, upon seeing the weapons of the Central Army, their weapons felt like useless bats, and all of them were like bumpkins.

One ugly and angry-looking man turned towards a middle-aged man beside him, who was muscular and handsome, wearing a suit, with an overbearing look, and said, "Boss Wei, if they could take out those zombies, and come into our base, we would fall under their control. At that time, our lives and deaths will be at their mercy."

Hearing those words, many of the militants fell silent and looked towards Boss Wei.

These militants were his subordinates, following him as ran amok within the 5,000-strong base. They did as they pleased, and harmed many women. If their crimes were brought to light, they would definitely not be let off.

There was a savage glint in Boss Wei's eyes, "What do we do? Liang Ban, if our deeds were made known, dying 10 times would

not even be enough. Since we're already forced to a corner, the only way is for us to sneak off when they're focused on the other survivors!"

As these militants thought to the people they have tortured and killed, and the bones collected within a warehouse, their hearts turned cold. They were resolute in following their Boss Wei, quickly returning to the base.

There were many structures in Shanghai. The terrain was complicated, and hard for a whole army to move, however, a dozen experts could still move quickly.

The change in the world was coming to its third year, and the powerhouses that had been fighting the evolved zombies and Mutant Beasts constantly had all evolved to the Type 2 or Type 3 Divine Warrior realm. Many of these militants were at the Type 3 realm, and their Boss Wei was a Type 4 Divine Warrior. He was strong and thus could control his subordinates.

When their group reached the base, they quickly chased all the 5,000 survivors out.

Under the urging of the 200 militants, the 5,000 survivors were rushed out, carrying their belongings, some food, looking extremely emaciated.

One bespectacled guy who looked bookish, kneeled on the ground as he pleaded bitterly, "Please, don't chase us away. Let us stay here!! There are so many zombies out there, we will definitely die! I'm begging you, please let us stay!!"

Right now, all around the city center of Shanghai, there were many evolved zombies. Following the passage of time, even the most ordinary zombie had a speed that was not slower than a human, if they were to be surrounded by the zombies, there would not be many left alive.

As time flowed, the rate of evolution was becoming faster.

Humans could handle ordinary zombies in the early onset of the apocalypse, taking them out with a wooden bat, even handle more if they were brave enough. However, now, most ordinary survivors would lose in a 1-on-1 fight, only the special forces, martial artists, and usage of weapons could deal with a zombie.

The sense of smell and hearing was acute for the zombies. With the scent of these 5,000 living people, they would be attracted over.

Once the zombie horde caught the scent of these humans, they would come in droves and hunt them down.

Forcing these 5,000 bare-handed survivors out in the open was a stupid move. It would only attract the zombies over.

However, Boss Wei and the rest had already treated these survivors like livestock. Even if they were gobbled up by the zombies, they would not even blink. To them, they would be happier if that happened. That way, their crimes would not be discovered, and they could even pledge their submission to the new China without fear.

"Please! Let us go back!"

"Please!! Let us live!!"

"..."

Numerous survivors began to kneel, pleading miserably. With their current situation, as long as they continued forward they would be consumed by the surrounding zombies.

One of the militants wielding an assault rifle had a savage look. He raised the gun and swept a volley at the kneeling survivors, "Shut the fuck up! Since you don't want to live any longer, I'll send you on your way!"

Under the rain of bullets, blood flew, and many of the kneeling survivors were punched full of holes, lying in a pool of blood.

The militant then barked out and threatened menacingly, "Who else does not want to move, say it out, I can keep you here forever."

When the survivors witnessed the merciless execution, their eyes were all filled with fear, not daring to say anything else. They could only sob, aggrieved, as they were herded forward.

When the 5,000 survivors were being ushered out of the bomb shelter, their scent was immediately picked up by the huge horde. In a split second, a part of the horde broke away and rushed towards the direction of the survivors.

Bai Xiao Sheng, who saw this, cursed out loud with fury, "FUCK! Which bastard called for such a stupid and idiotic move?! They actually got all the survivors out?! Are they seeking death?! Damn bastard!!"

The strength of the evolved zombies was too much, and Bai Xiao Sheng had too little manpower, focused on engaging the zombies.

These soldiers were the reinforcements that Bai Xiao Sheng was in charge of, meant to cover the main force for retreat. If they were to slaughter their way through the zombies in order to save those people, they could potentially fall.

After all, the zombies surrounding Bai Xiao Sheng and his team were around 1.3 million. The fact that his team could hold them off was because of their combat strength, experience, and equipment. They had also established some structures and fortifications to protect themselves from the assault of the zombies.

He struggled internally, "What do I do? Should I deploy the Type 7 sentient Mech over? But based on this, even if the Type 7 Mech went, it would not be able to save those survivors. Instead, if this trump card is utilized, should there be any unforeseen circumstances, we might not be able to make it back to the capital."

The Type 7 sentient Mech was incredibly powerful, and there was not a single evolved zombie that was a match for it in a one-on-

one fight. However, it lacked the ability to kill hordes at once. It did not have the abilities of Yue Zhong piloting the Scarlet Reaper, wiping out dozens of thousands in a single move.

"Help!!"

"Save me!!"

"Ah!!"

"..."

There were already S6s that had evolved in the zombies, reaching twice the speed of sound. 3 of them instantly charged through the human midst and slashed out, tearing many of them apart.

Although there were only 3 of them, the survivors immediately fell into a panic and mustered their remaining strength to quickly flee as far as they could.

In that instant, the 5,000 survivors were thrown into a panic, running around like headless flies.

In the ensuing chaos, many of them were shoved to the ground and trampled on by the people behind.

Boss Wei looked at the scene of chaos and laughed out maniacally, ordering his subordinate, "Hahaha! Let's go!!"

He sat in a military jeep that was modified, while the rest of his subordinates also sat in their own jeeps with their families and possessions, fleeing in the opposite direction. The chaotic scene was what Boss Wei wanted to see, with the survivors as meat shields, they could quickly escape.

One of them was running towards the jeep when suddenly, a female survivor in tattered clothing fell in front of him.

Chapter 914: Suppressing the Chaos!

The armed militant cursed out loud, "Damn it! Scram the hell away! Otherwise, your father I will execute you!!"

The woman, who had disheveled hair and tattered clothes, began to kowtow profusely as she stammered while retreating, "Yes!! Yes!! I'll scram now, I'll scram now!!"

"Wait a minute!

The militant caught sight of her figure, and his heart skipped a beat. He shot forward and grabbed her hair, revealing a beautiful face underneath that hair. Although her expression was contorted from the pain, one could tell she was an extremely beautiful lady.

The militant had a savage look just then, as he laughed out maniacally, and pulled the beauty towards his hip, "Haha! Not bad! I'm lucky, to actually chance upon such a high-quality babe. I can let Boss and the rest have some fun! Follow me, otherwise, I'll kill you!"

On the other side, a 16 or 17 year old girl rushed out, grabbing the militant's hand, as she screamed out, "Let go of my mum! Let go of my mum!"

The militant laughed out savagely, grabbing this girl as well, dragging both mother and daughter towards the jeep, "Haha, my luck is good! I caught the old one, as well as the young one!"

No matter how much the 2 women struggled, they were weak and undernourished, there was no way they could get out of the grip of the Type 2 Divine Warrior.

There was a tear in the space all of a sudden, and Yue Zhong stepped out, seeing the 2 women struggling. He frowned and pointed out with his finger, sending a bullet of energy slamming into the body of the militant. The unfortunate fellow spat out a mouthful of blood, stumbling back a few steps, and crumpled to

the ground.

Another militant's expression turned dark, as he roared out, "Open fire!! Kill that man!!"

Immediately, a number of militants charged out from their jeeps, aiming their weapons at Yue Zhong and firing wildly.

Yue Zhong frowned, and with a thought, he summoned an energy shield in front of him, causing the bullets to deflect off it.

"Monster!!"

"Flee!!"

"..."

Seeing the bullets bouncing off thin air, the militants all revealed fearful expressions, turning around and fleeing towards the distance.

"Want to flee? Go to hell!!" Yue Zhong shot them a disdainful look, and his fingers extended once more, causing the bullets hanging in mid-air to shoot towards the militants.

In an instant, the militants all had their heads exploded in a shower of blood, as they crumpled to the floor.

Seeing how Yue Zhong managed to take out the militants in a mere second, the mother-daughter pair brightened up, their gazes filled with reverence.

"What a mess! What's going on?"

His perception then swept outward, and he could sense the ongoing situation within a 10 li radius. He could clearly feel the huge group of survivors fleeing in panic, stepping over themselves, while 3 S6s were killing the fleeing humans, causing even more fear and chaos.

"Die!"

Yue Zhong grabbed out at the air, and 3 claws made up of

atmospheric energy caught the 3 S6s. He then clenched his fist, and the 3 S6s were crushed instantly, as they turned into a pile of bloody meat that fell to the ground.

"Stay right there!!"

Yue Zhong eyed the chaos, the 5,000 survivors running around in panic, and he frowned. He then let out a roar of rage, his terrifying Type 8 pressure blasting outwards, directly stopping the fleeing people in their tracks.

Yue Zhong's voice was imbued with his will, and it struck the ears of those humans.

Hearing that shout, the survivors immediately stopped where they are, their heads felt like splitting.

From a sky view, with just that one bark, all the 5,000 survivors stopped completely, as though they were soldiers that had undergone the toughest of training.

Boss Wei sat in the jeep and was also affected by the roar. His body was almost rendered immobile. By the time he regained his sense, his face was pale, "What a terrifying strength! Is this the might of the peak expert of New China? He's too overpowered!! How could humans reach such a stage? If we were caught by him, only death awaits us!"

Yue Zhong's appearance caused Boss Wei and his men to be frightened. They quickly urged their jeeps further away. Currently, there were about a few kilometers between them and Yue Zhong, thus they were hoping to escape out of this.

Yue Zhong swept the militant group a cold look, as he sneered, "Still thinking of running? Truly stubborn, get out for me!!"

With a thought, a huge and powerful atmospheric energy shot towards them, directly sweeping up all 60-odd jeeps and brought them in front of him.

"So strong!!" Seeing such a miraculous scene, the faces of the

survivors below were filled with shock.

Yue Zhong swept the militants a cold look as he barked out, "Get out!"

Although he was still unclear about what had happened, he knew one thing for sure, these militants who had abandoned the survivors and tried to flee for themselves were not good people.

Hearing that order, many of them turned pale, choosing to exit their vehicles orderly.

In the jeeps, other than the militants, there were a number of women, each of them beautiful and alluring. However, their eyes were filled with fear and despair, and they did not say a word.

Yue Zhong swept them a gaze, "Who is the leader here?"

All of them fell silent, but their gazes fell upon Boss Wei.

Left with no choice, he quickly walked out of the group, his face wearing a fawning smile, "This big brother here, my name is Wei Sheng. Please pardon me for not recognizing you. How do I address you?"

The killing intent within Yue Zhong surged out, "I'm Yue Zhong. Was it you who ordered the survivors to be pushed out of the underground city?"

Wei Sheng waved his head hastily, as he tried to explain, "No! It wasn't me!! There was a small radical faction that had appeared in our troops, and they took it upon themselves to push the survivors out! I had not known of it at that time, and by the time I did, it was too late. I can't do anything to the zombies, under such circumstances, I could only choose to flee. I admit that it was not the best way of handling things, and I'm willing to apologize to everyone."

In a few breaths, Wei Sheng had shifted all blame to the imaginary faction he created.

He suddenly had a flash of insight, and started to put on a look of reverence, expressing his loyalty, "Oh yes! Yue Zhong! You are Leader Yue Zhong, the new leader of China right?! That's great, I can finally see you in person!! It truly is an honor! I'm willing to lead my 200 subordinates to join your cause, and submit to your orders! Please take us in!"

When Yue Zhong heard this, he fell into silent contemplation. If what Wei Sheng said was true, he truly was not responsible. Furthermore, if his troops were to join his army and undergo training, it would be an added boost.

Seeing how Wei Sheng had changed his tale and choose to become Yue Zhong's subordinates, the survivors who wanted to say something kept silent. Wei Sheng had vicious methods, and they were not willing to risk their lives.

At this time, the young lady who Yue Zhong had saved broke out from her mother's grasp, and came up to Yue Zhong, "Leader Yue Zhong! You cannot keep him! He's a bad man! He has killed many!! Many of our past survivors had been executed under his orders. He and his subordinates, they had all killed! These are all we have left because of them!! They're all evil!!"

Wei Sheng broke out in cold sweat, "No, Leader Yue Zhong, don't believe her!! That's just her word against mine!! We had not killed, you must believe us!"

Yue Zhong was not interested, however, as he fixed his gaze upon the girl and asked, "Are you a natural gifted person? What's your ability?"

His might was nearing that of a God, and he could sense a strange power within this girl in front of him. It was something rare, unlike those he had seen before.

Chapter 915: Killing Human Scum!

As the world changed, the entire Earth began to change. Many talented and gifted humans managed to awaken their abilities even without the System. These were the natural ability-users and Evolvers. Many of their abilities were rare, even Yue Zhong had hoped for one.

For example, while Floxenia's mind-reading ability might not be as useful in battle, it was something Yue Zhong wanted sorely. If he could possess such an ability, he could easily figure out who was lying to him, and not be paranoid leaving assignments to them.

When the young woman was looked at by Yue Zhong, she felt a tremor in her heart and lowered her gaze, "I'm called Gao He, I'm an ability-user. It's called Treasure-hunting Skill. I can always send some strange force beckoning to me. However, since I've not seen a treasure before, I don't know if my ability is real or fake."

Gao He might be an ability user, but she was more of an auxiliary type, If she relied on her direction and strength to wade through the difficult areas, she would likely die. She had kept her powers under wraps for so long, only after meeting Yue Zhong did she reveal her powers.

Wei Sheng heard the words of Gao He, and was filled with an endless rage, "Treasure-Hunting Skill!! Damn it!! This damn bitch, actually keeping it from me!! If I had known about this long ago, I would have been even stronger than Yue Zhong! Damn it! Damn it!!! Bitch!"

"Ok!"

Yue Zhong eyed Gao He with appreciation, and never thought that there would be such a surprise from his random saving.

To most people, such a skill was worth nuts, because, in most places where treasure could be found, there usually were powerful

Mutant Beasts guarding. Even if they did discover it, they had no way of retrieving it.

However, Yue Zhong was different, with his Type 8 strength, other than a few Type 9 powerhouses that could kill him, it was easy for him to take the items.

Yue Zhong laughed out in satisfaction, and looked around at the survivors, "Very good, let me ask you all. Is what Gao He say the truth? The crimes of Wei Sheng and his men, did those things happen?"

When Wei Sheng and his men heard this line of questioning, their faces fell. However, before they could make any response, a powerful energy came pressing down on them, forcing them to the ground as they gasped for breath, not able to move.

One emaciated man with a balding head, his entire body emitting a powerful stench, and his chin covered in a stubble, came out unsteadily, before kneeling in front of Yue Zhong. He then cried out, "Sir, Wei Sheng, and his men are all scums!! My son, my precious son!! He was taken away by them and tortured to death!! Sir, you must help seek redress!!"

Yue Zhong nodded, and eyed the rest, "I got it, if what you said is true, I will seek justice for you. Is there anyone else?"

"Sir!! My niece was taken away by them and tortured to death as well!! These bunch of scum!! My niece was only 11!! Sir, please, please!!! Kill them!! Kill these bastards!!"

" ... "

Seeing that Yue Zhong had agreed to settle their grievances, the survivors could not hold back their emotions and pent up anguish as they came forward, pointing and revealing all the misdeeds of the militants.

As Wei Sheng and his men heard it, their expressions turned pale. They had indeed gone on in their sick methods for far too

long. Numerous men and women had died as a result. In the past, the survivors dared not say anything due to their power, but now, with Yue Zhong's backing, they were venting out every single thing they can remember.

Hearing the accusations of the survivors, Yue Zhong frowned and barked out, "Enough!"

His voice was like the rumbling of thunder, as the survivors were all stunned momentarily, and ceased their chatter.

"Now, as per your accusations, I judge Wei Sheng and his men guilty as charged, the penalty is execution, and it will be delivered, at once."

With that, he slapped out, and a huge atmospheric energy gathered, transforming into a huge hand that slammed downwards at all of Wei Sheng and his men, turning them into meat paste in one slap.

In a breath, 200 men had been flattened by Yue Zhong. Seeing such a horrific scene, the survivors were all filled with fear towards Yue Zhong.

Killing 200 people with a single slap. Such a move was basically out of the knowledge of ordinary humans. It was practically equivalent to God.

All of a sudden, there was a scream from a man as he ran and sobbed, "Help me!!! The zombies are coming!! The zombies are coming!!"

At that moment, a few S5s were already gaining on the men, about barely 10m away.

Seeing the savage and vicious S5s, many survivors felt despair, and their bodies turned around to flee.

"Die!"

Yue Zhong shot the S5s a look and pointed at them, as a powerful

bullet of energy shot through space, and slammed into the group of them, turning them into meat paste.

After that, Yue Zhong waved his hands and 200 humanoid combat Mechs appeared.

"All of you listen up, these robots will guide you to a safe place. If you want to live, follow them."

Yue Zhong swept them one final look and did not care further, as he wrapped up Gao He and her mother while charging towards the zombies.

From the robots, a melodious and sweet female voice sounded, "Please come with us, we will bring you to a safe place."

Having witnessed Yue Zhong's various means, the survivors exchanged looks, before following the robots towards the designated space.

Among the survivors, many of the female survivors looked at Gao He and her mother, their eyes filled with envy. They knew that the safest place was being beside the god-like Yue Zhong.

Gao He followed beside Yue Zhong as she squirmed about, her eyes filled with wonder, "I'm flying!! I'm actually flying!! This is amazing!!"

In her eyes, Yue Zhong was not a bad guy, since he had killed the 200 militants. She was not afraid of him at all and experiencing flight only made her more excited.

On the flip side, Gao He's mum was extremely guarded and viewed Yue Zhong with wariness and fear.

In a few breaths, Yue Zhong was already above the huge horde.

When the zombies below caught the scent of Yue Zhong, the various H2s, H3s, and H4s began to step out and opened their mouths to fire out at him.

In a breath, a large number of fireballs blasted towards him.

Faced with such an assault, even a Thunder Fighter would be blasted into smithereens.

Gao He looked at this and turned pale, as she screamed out in fear, "Ah!!"

"Get lost!"

Yue Zhong eyed the incoming fireballs, and his eyes flashed with a chilly glint. He slapped out, as a huge palm made out of energy condensed, and slammed downwards as though Buddha himself had just sent out a palm.

When the fireballs came in contact with that hand, they were extinguished immediately.

After that, the hand slammed into the ground, directly wiping out 10,000 zombies just like that.

Gao He turned to stare at Yue Zhong in shock, as her mouth hanged agape, her gaze filled with reverence and adoration, "Strong!! This man is so powerful!! Could he be a deity or a godsend?!"

Among the 10,000 zombies, there were even L2s, L3s, and L4s. Gao He had seen her fair share of those. The militants had trouble dealing with those types. Yet, they were so easily vanquished by Yue Zhong, hence, his power was apparent.

After slapping the 10,000 zombies to death, Yue Zhong waved his hands, and numerous Mech Beasts appeared. Under Bai Yi's control, they formed a mechanical tidal wave that crashed towards the zombie horde.

Yue Zhong had obtained a large number of resources from the Mech Empire City, and they were the best means to deal with these low-level zombies.

Yue Zhong had no interest in wasting time with these zombies. At his current stage, even if he were to wipe out 100 million zombies, the life force absorbed would not be enough to raise a

single tier. It would be a waste of time.

After holding down the fort, he then stepped through the air, and in a few moments, he appeared beside Bai Xiao Sheng.

Chapter 916: Subduing the Zombie King!

Upon seeing Yue Zhong, Bai Xiao Sheng immediately saluted him, "Leader!"

"Leader!"

The rest of the military officers behind also stood up to salute, eyeing him with an excited look of reverence.

Yue Zhong had built the entire state up from nothing and was the number 1 expert on Earth. He was also the protector of China, thus, there was nobody in China that did not know of him.

Many of the military officers had been in half-doubt of his strength, thinking that there were areas that were definitely exaggerated. However, today, they've seen for themselves, that he was easily a hundred times stronger than what the rumors said. They had seen how he took out over 10,000 zombies in a single slap. With such a strength, he was already on par with the gods and devils of the myths and legends.

With a thought, Gao He's mother was sent to Bai Xiao Sheng, "Go get your men to cover the survivors as they retreat. The Sea Clan has already invaded Shanghai. This place is no longer safe. Bring her to the headquarters as well."

Gao He's strength was incredibly precious to him, and he needed to protect her mother. Only like this, would Gao He be willing to work hard for him.

Bai Xiao Sheng had a complicated gaze as he replied, "Yes!"

After that, he took a step into the air and soared towards the deeper parts of Shanghai.

Bai Xiao Sheng watched him go, his eyes flashing with hints of jealousy, envy, and regret. When they had first met, their strengths were on a similar level. Furthermore, as Bai Xiao Sheng was a natural Evolver, he was even more talented than Yue Zhong.

However, in just 2 years, the distance between them had been pulled apart. Yue Zhong could easily flatten him in a single slap. As one of his closest aide and friend, watching Yue Zhong grow step by step, there was a hint of a loss and confusion in his mind.

He took a deep breath, his eyes turning resolute, and he ordered, "Retreat immediately!"

With that, the armed elites quickly pulled out of the frontlines.

The Type 7 sentient Mech that had been kept was finally deployed for the fight back home. It quickly charged through the zombie horde, slaughtering the zombies like it was nothing, even the Hunters, Devourers and the L6s. Such evolved zombies would have posed a problem for most human elites, but against the Type 7 sentient Mech, they were culled like pigs.

In mid-air, Yue Zhong watched Bai Xiao Sheng command his troops and he nodded with satisfaction, "Good! His commanding ability has improved by leaps and bounds!"

Although Yue Zhong was invincible on Earth, there were many things that needed his subordinates. Otherwise, he alone would be pushed beyond exhaustion. Bai Xiao Sheng had been his trusted aide for so long and was one of those he had groomed for a long while.

"Now, it's time to handle Shanghai!"

Yue Zhong retracted his gaze, and with a thought, he sent his perception to cover the entirety of Shanghai.

Everything within the city was soon in his sight, and he could sense every single zombie, their weaknesses, the direction they were moving towards, and even the savage visages. Everything appeared to him clearly.

"Found it!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed, and he stepped through the air, bringing Gao He with him as he shot towards the city.

Yue Zhong could make use of the Radiant Battleship to appear

anywhere on Earth. However, there was a process to it. He had to first step through the void back into the Radiant Battleship, and then make use of its ability to transcend space, before appearing back out of the void. However, since he was not familiar with Gao He yet, he did not want to reveal his biggest secret to her.

The Radiant Battleship was something he had hidden for so long. It was a Gold-Grade treasure, if any other Type 9 powerhouse were to know that he had such a precious treasure, they would go crazy and go to all means to kill him.

Not long after, Yue Zhong appeared on top of a building, which looked lavish and beautiful. He then sent a fist into the glass, causing it to shatter into the building itself.

At the peak of the building, there were 3 men in suits, holding glasses of human blood, sitting casually on a sofa. Beside them, there were 8 beautiful human girls in their teens. Opposite them, there was a lady whose skin was as white as milk, her long black hair lush and glowing, and she held up a glass of blood as well. In front of her, there were 3 handsome young men as well.

At the moment the glass shattered from the roof, all 4 intelligent evolved zombies quickly jumped up, their bodies taut, staring fixedly at Yue Zhong, maintaining their guard.

The leader was a burly man with short hair, and he spoke up, "Who are you?"

Yue Zhong floated down like a heavenly being, eyeing them with a condescending gaze as he ordered coldly, "Are you the Zombie King of Shanghai? I'm Yue Zhong, here to subjugate all of you today. Kneel, and swear loyalty to me. I can spare you. Otherwise, all of you will become my puppets!"

To think those years ago, Yue Zhong had been just an ant-like existence in front of these zombies. However, he could now view them with disdain. Even if they were already at the Type 6 realm, he had nothing to fear.

The Zombie King was a savage and cruel existence. The moment he heard the haughty tone from Yue Zhong, he exploded with anger, "Preposterous!! Human, you're the most arrogant human I have met yet! Everybody, attack him together! Once we capture him, I will let him have a taste of an unending world of pain. I will suck his blood and turn him into my slave!!"

In the midst of his shouting, his body began to split apart, as countless black thread shot out from him, forming into 8 blades. One blade-like tail also shot out from his back. His mouth then tore open, revealing sharp teeth. In an instant, this handsome Zombie King of Shanghai had turned into a morbid creature that looked like a killing machine.

The other 2 also began to transform, one turning into a giant of about 3m in height, his muscles powerful and taut, while the other transformed into a strange creature with an octopus head, 10 long and slender tentacles and 4 main thick limbs.

The beauty in black leather transformed into a female ape with powerful limbs and muscles, as well as breasts the size of basketballs.

The moment they completed their transformations, which took barely a second, they had all charged towards Yue Zhong.

The Zombie King leaped up to the ceiling, rushing towards Yue Zhong.

The tentacle monster shot out its tentacles, routing past the other 2 charging zombies, intending to pierce towards Yue Zhong from his blind spots.

Although the 4 of them looked hideous, their combat abilities were truly heightened. If they were successful in their attacks, even an initial-Type 7 expert might fall.

"Too weak! Kneel!!"

Yue Zhong swept a gaze, and his eyes flashed with a cold glint, as

he slapped out mercilessly.

Immediately, a huge palm made out of energy slammed towards all 4 of them.

Pa!

At that moment, all 4 zombies were pressed to the ground by the energy-formed palm, unable to move.

Yue Zhong then pointed at them, as 4 bullets of energy shot into their heads, knocking them out.

He then followed up with 4 Puppet Runes that soared into their consciousness.

The next moment, they woke up and returned to their human forms, kneeling and declaring, "Zhuo Zhan Wang (Liu Yi Ping, Qián Rú, Wèi Hé) greets Master!"

Gao He saw how easily Yue Zhong had suppressed them, and her idolization towards him deepened yet again, "Such powerful methods! This man is truly formidable!"

Yue Zhong ordered, "Go gather all your forces, attack the Sea Clan, and do not let them get into Shanghai, understand?!"

All 4 of them nodded, "Yes! Master!"

The strength of the Sea Clan was too mighty. If Yue Zhong wanted to stop them from embarking on land, he had to spend some time here. However, he was reluctant to. That was why he chose to control the zombies and get them to mobilize their troops.

The moment all 4 evolved intelligent zombies gave the command, the entire zombie horde within Shanghai charged out at the Sea Clan. Although the Sea Clan was much stronger, they were impeded and their rate of advanced slowed down considerably.

Chapter 917: 3-Headed Wyrms Beast!

After subduing the Zombie King in Shanghai, Yue Zhong then asked Gao He, "Gao He, are you able to discern the location those things that are beckoning to you?"

She closed her eyes and concentrated a while, before pointing to one direction where the Sea Clan was invading, "Over there, I can faintly sense something calling out to me."

Yue Zhong swept the direction a look, and felt his heart shake slightly, "That direction, don't tell me it's the Sea Clan?"

With a thought, he brought Gao He with him as he shot towards the direction she pointed.

Along the way, Yue Zhong saw clearly the state of Shanghai, which had turned into a huge battlefield, covered with ice picks, thunderbolts, wind blades, poison blobs, and all sorts of innate abilities being thrown everywhere. The entire city was being leveled, turning into a wasteland.

Under the orders of the Zombie King, the countless zombies were clashing against the Mutant Beasts. At every second, there were many zombies being consumed or annihilated, but it was also the same case for the Mutant Beasts.

The 4 intelligent evolved zombies were incredibly smart, the moment they joined the battle, they quickly deployed their elite evolved zombies to wipe out the lower level Mutant Beasts. As for those above the Type 5 realm, they would let the ordinary zombies be sent as cannon fodder, saving their elite forces.

Under their lead, many Type 4 Mutant Beasts were wiped out by their units and turned into bones.

The flesh and blood of the high-level Mutant Beasts were powerful nourishment and evolution requirements for the zombies, thus, after the low-level zombies consumed the meat of

the Type 4 Mutant Beasts, they quickly evolved and became stronger.

After consuming a number of Type 4 Mutant Beasts, the elite troops that the 4 intelligent commanders had grown larger.

Yue Zhong watched for a while, before moving on towards the direction of the main Sea Clan force.

As he got closer, on top of the 3-headed Wyrms that was like an island, was a beautiful Sea Clan Mermaid Queen. She stood atop a wave, a ruby-colored crown worn on her head, while her private parts were covered strategically by seashells. Her looks were absolutely stunning. She raised her head to stare at Yue Zhong coldly.

She then spoke out coldly, "Enemy attack!! From the skies!! Prepare to counter-attack!!"

Hearing the order, the numerous mermaid experts and their guards quickly rose their weapons as they eyed Yue Zhong, their killing intent billowing.

The peak-Type 7 3-headed Wyrms also raised their heads, all 6 eyes shining viciously, locking onto Yue Zhong.

The mature Mermaid Queen eyed Yue Zhong and screeched out, "Attack!!"

Under her orders, all her subordinates began to display their strongest trump cards, throwing their attacks into the skies.

One weird monster opened its huge jaws and fired out a thunderbolt towards the skies.

Another whale-head Sea Clan warrior threw the hammer he was wielding at Yue Zhong.

One of the warriors, which had a swordfish head, and a body full of spikes, started to fire the spikes on his back into the skies.

All sorts of attacks were thrown and cast at Yue Zhong, forming a

myriad of colors through the skies, completely sealing any possible route of escape.

"Disperse!"

Yue Zhong just swept them all a cold look, and slapped out downwards, causing a huge source of energy to condense and blast out at the parties below.

The countless attacks of the Sea Clan were immediately destroyed, while the huge energy hand continued to press downwards, instantly turning 10,000 soldiers and their Mutant Beasts into a paste.

Seeing that, the Mermaid Queen's countenance ugly, "Strong!"

She was strong and had reached the peak of the Type 6 realm. However, in front of Yue Zhong, she could easily be slapped to death. She was filled with dread towards Yue Zhong.

When Gao He saw the Mermaid Queen, her eyes brightened, and she quickly pointed, "It's on her! There's some treasure on her! I can sense it calling out to me."

"Come over!"

In mid-air, Yue Zhong executed his Dragon-Catching Claws, and a powerful force congealed, grabbing towards the Mermaid Queen in a tyrannical manner.

There were easily over a million troops of the Sea Clan that had ascended onto land, and even in the face of such numbers, Yue Zhong passed through easily and grabbed their leader. It was overbearing and domineering.

The further one got in the evolution journey, the stronger, when Yue Zhong had been at the Type 7 realm, he was still wary and cautious, not daring to go against a million enemies. However, since he reached the Type 8 realm, his control and strength of the atmospheric energy had gotten more than 10 times stronger. It was enough to let him kill his way through an army as he pleased, and

wipe out the leader of another species.

When a biological life form reached the Type 8 realm, there would be a heaven-shaking change. A single Type 8 could wipe out an entire race. Of course, if it truly came to that, it was unlikely that the entire race would be eradicated, as there would be some that slipped past.

Against that attack by Yue Zhong, the Mermaid Queen's face fell, as she opened her lips and shot out a blue light towards the sky.

The other mermaids beside her also quickly spat out dragon-shaped energy as well.

The numerous blue lights congealed together and formed into a blue pillar that slammed against Yue Zhong's attack.

With a loud bang, the blue pillar was dissolved as the numerous mermaids spat out blood, crumpling to the ground, but they were successful in blocking Yue Zhong's dragon-shaped force.

Yue Zhong watched in shock, "Ah? Interesting!"

In front of Yue Zhong and his Third Order God-Devil Body, these ordinary mermaids were like ants. To think that these 10,000 of ants could actually withstand a hit from him, their innate abilities were truly amazing.

Whereas Yue Zhong, who had walked to his current position through countless arduous steps, no longer had to be afraid that he might lose his life in a moment of carelessness.

The Mermaid Queen eyed Yue Zhong, her face pale. She gritted her teeth and pulled out a huge blue pearl from her bosom, "No, he's too strong! Seems like I need to use the Sea Emperor Sapphire!!"

The Sea Emperor Sapphire was one of the secret legacy treasures of the Sea Clan. On Earth, the surface area of water was much larger than that of land, and there were countless hidden secrets of the seas.

After the world changed, the Sea Clan emerged, and in these few years of development, they had quickly expanded through the various hidden corners of the waters, pulling out countless treasures.

This Sea Emperor Sapphire was one of such treasures, possessing a terrible might.

The Mermaid Queen bit her tongue and spat out a mouthful of fresh blood on it, causing it to radiate in a blinding light, which then caused her and the Sapphire to merge into the 3-headed Wurm.

After they merged, the aura of the Mutant 3-Headed Wurm shot up insanely, breaking past the Type 7 realm, reaching the Type 8 realm. At the same time, a pair of powerful wings formed and unfolded in a swish. There was a final tremble on its forehead, as the top half of the Mermaid Queen emerged.

Yue Zhong stared at the monstrous entity that was formed, his eyes narrowing, "A Type 8 Mutant Beast, and its aura is even stronger than that of the Wurm-Crocodile King! Is this the power of a Sea Clan's Treasure? Truly something good!!"

Even if the Type 7 beast was of the Wurm-race, Yue Zhong was not too worried, as his current strength was enough to deal with one. However, a Type 8 beast was different. If he was not careful, he could perish.

Once the Type 8 Mutant Beast formed, one of the Wurm heads opened its mouth, and fired out numerous thunderbolts at Yue Zhong.

The lightning forked out over a kilometer, dancing wildly in the sky, as though the lightning god himself had descended. If a Type 8 beast was struck by this, it would be injured or even killed.

"Break for me!"

Yue Zhong frowned, and finally got serious, as he bellowed out

and fired out his Level 6 Yin-Yang Palm.

Chapter 918: Boundless Rain of Blood!

At that moment when Yue Zhong sent out his Yin-Yang Palms, the atmospheric energy around was twisted and gathered around him. On his left, it was Yin, while his right held the Yang; one black, one white, forming a powerful palm that seemed capable of suppressing all 800 worlds, as it slammed into the thunderbolt.

With a loud bang, the huge pillar of lightning that was able to kill a Type 8 powerhouse was disintegrated. Yue Zhong's Yin-Yang Palm was also dissipated, and no party got the upper hand in this exchange.

"This beast is something eh?"

Yue Zhong swept it a look, his eyes cold, as he channeled his Shadow Steps and immediately, numerous afterimages appeared as he shot towards the Type 8 3-headed Wyrms Beast.

Another of its head opened its huge jaws and fired out icy shards and a snowstorm at the incoming Yue Zhong.

Kacha! Kacha! Kacha!

The sound of ice breaking rang out, as a huge ice beam that was easily over 2km wide appeared, enveloping all the shadows of Yue Zhong.

At that moment, it seemed as though he was trapped and frozen within the ice beam.

Seeing that, all the mermaids below and the Sea Clan Warriors erupted in cheers.

"Kill him!!"

"Kill that human!!"

"Kill him, don't leave him alive!"

"..."

Yue Zhong was like a terrifying demon in the eyes of these Sea Clan soldiers, invincible and undefeatable. Even the most resolute of soldiers had felt fear and were shaken. Now that their Mermaid Queen had sealed him, they were naturally excited.

Hong!!

At the moment as they were whooping with delight, Yue Zhong sent out a fist, and the entire ice pillar was instantly destroyed, breaking into countless shards.

Even the ordinary Gao He was protected by a ball of atmospheric energy, sticking closely to Yue Zhong's back, with not a single scratch on her.

After reaching the Third Order God-Devil Body, Yue Zhong's blood had already transformed into a golden color, and he was half-god, impervious to weapons, and unaffected by the elements. Even the innate ability of a Type 8 3-headed Wyrms Beast was not enough to seal him completely.

Having punched his way out, Yue Zhong shot out and reached the Type 8 3-Headed Wyrms Beast, sending a powerful fist towards its head.

There was a deafening boom, as the beast sunk into the ground, spitting out a mouthful of blood and essence.

When Gao He saw this, she could not help herself as she cheered, "Good beating!!"

Yue Zhong split into many images, sending a flurry of fists onto the heads of the beast, rumbling like thunder.

In a matter of seconds, he had already punched out over a hundred times, with his terrifying strength, causing the entire body of the Type 8 Mutant Beast to tremble violently.

When he reached the 600th hit, the Mermaid Queen was forcibly separated from the Mutant Beast, her lower body covered in the blood of the beast.

When the Mermaid Queen was sent flying, Yue Zhong continued to smash the heads of the Wyrms-Beast, his devastating strength exploding out. It caused the heads of the beast to be beaten out of shape, as flesh and blood splattered everywhere until finally, a huge life force was absorbed into his body.

"How is this possible? The mighty 3-headed Wyrms Beast is dead!!?"

"Is he still human?! How could there be such a terrifying character?! Even the protector beast of our Sea Clan is dead!"

"..."

When the Sea Clan warriors saw how Yue Zhong pummeled their protector to death, they were all stunned and fell into fear and despair.

The 3-headed Wyrms Beast was one of the most powerful trump cards of the Sea Clan. As long as it willed it, an entire tsunami capable of swallowing a continent could be raised. It moved about unhindered in the seas, and yet, such an existence was killed by Yue Zhong.

When he was done, Yue Zhong grabbed out at the air and caused the Mermaid Queen to be dragged once more in front of him.

He saw the tightly clenched sapphire in her hands, and with a wave of his own, he grabbed it, "Is this the treasure of the Mermaid Clan?"

When he held that Sea Emperor Sapphire, he felt a soothing gush of energy course through his body, nourishing him.

He took a careful look and noticed some engravings and runes on it. He just glanced at them and could already sense a powerful law of water within. Other than that, there was some other strange power contained within the runes.

He committed them to memory, "It seems that other than the laws and principles of water, there's something to do with merging

with a Mutant Beast."

With his evolution stage, his comprehension and intellect were much more powerful. Such a profound item would have been obscure to him at the Type 6 realm. At the Type 7 realm, he would be able to understand slightly. By the time he was in the Type 8 realm, he could easily understand the meaning behind the mysteries.

He then looked at it once more, understanding the usage more clearly, "Other than the runes, there's a pure energy amassed within, which I can absorb."

Energy came in many forms. Lifeforce was the energy within a biological life form and was the best nourishment for evolution. Atmospheric energy was present, and most cultivators absorbed that, refining it to become their own. Other than that, there were items that condensed pure energy and collected them, to cultivators, such items were also rare and precious.

"No!!"

Under the anguished cry of the Mermaid Queen, Yue Zhong crushed the sapphire, and a huge, pure energy source streamed into his body.

The pure energy entered his body and constantly strengthened him. The sapphire had been containing a huge amount of energy, and it was enough to push him to the peak of the initial-Type 8 realm.

Currently, his strength was truly terrifying. Just that increase alone was a huge boost already.

"Her Majesty is captured by that human!!"

"Everyone attack!! Kill that man!!"

"..."

The Sea Clan warriors began to surge forward bravely, even

though they had been intimidated by Yue Zhong. For their Queen, they regained their senses and fought to charge forwards.

"Die!"

Yue Zhong swept them a cold look and sent out a casual palm, condensed of the atmospheric energy, which pressed down and crushed an entire area of them.

The deaths did not faze the rest, however, as more continued to surge towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong frowned and ordered the Mermaid Queen, "Get your people to surrender, otherwise, I'll kill all of them."

The Mermaid Queen stared hatefully at Yue Zhong, speaking in clear Chinese, "Even if all of them died, we will return to the sea's embrace! Every child of the Sea God will not fear death! Human! Our numbers are more than you can ever imagine, this time, it's only a small troop that accompanied me! Your human race would be the one to be wiped out in the end!! Our Sea Clan will be the true ruler of this world!!"

With their intellect, they were much stronger than humans as well, thus, they could easily pick up languages. The Mermaid Queen was already well-versed in 4 languages at the onset of the apocalypse.

"Good! Since you're not willing to submit, you can all go to hell."

His gaze turned frosty and he pointed to the skies, as a blood radiance shot up, forming an insidious cloud.

When it took shape, the atmospheric energy began to gush into it, and suddenly, an evil, dark, and blood-filled stench filled the air, as blood-red fell upon the ground.

As the blood rain came in contact with a huge Mutant Lobster, it immediately began to corrode its back, entering its body and sucking it dry, before congealing into a small thumb size and flowed back to the blood cloud.

Just like this, countless Mutant Beasts were sucked dry of their blood, turning into corpses, as the blood cloud continued to rain and absorb the blood essences, becoming bigger as time passed.

Chapter 919: Conflict in the Hotel!

The Mermaid Queen saw her countless subordinates being reduced to dried corpses and let out a shrill screech of anguish and sorrow, her eyes turning red in fury, "NOOOO!!!"

The blood rain was like a death reaper, culling lives wherever it touched. Corpses piled atop one another, and the entire region started to look like a slaughterhouse.

She stared fixedly at Yue Zhong and cursed, "Human! Your means are so vicious, our Sea Clan will not let you off!! We will kill you!! We will kill your race!!"

Yue Zhong turned to look at her coldly, and sent a force to shake her brains and knock her out, at the same time, a Puppet Rune was imprinted onto her, "It's too late! You will never see that day, just become my slave obediently!"

After that, when she woke up, she stood beside Yue Zhong and saluted respectfully, "Greetings Master!"

Gao He, who was still safe within her bubble, eyed the ravishing and beautiful Mermaid Queen, her gaze filled with envy, "What a beautiful person!"

Gao He was a pretty outstanding teenage girl herself, and she had been proud of her looks. However, in front of this Mermaid Queen, she was astonished at the level of charm and grace.

Yue Zhong swept the Mermaid Queen a look, and gave her a random name, "I have a female maid from the Sea Clan by the name of Hai Lan, you shall be called Hai Mei then."

She responded with a gentle smile, and nobody could have imagined that just moments ago, she had been baring her fangs at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong then asked, "I want to know, why would the Sea Clan choose to attack Shanghai now, as well as the plans for the future."

Having been controlled, Hai Mei was fully submissive, and reported all that she knew to Yue Zhong, "Yes! Master."

From her mouth, Yue Zhong obtained valuable information.

After the world changed, the Sea Clan had many intelligent species among them. The royal clan was the Mermaid Clan, they were naturally gifted and intelligent, without the need for males, and could continue their line. Furthermore, their offsprings were all females.

Within the seas, the Mermaid Clan had proliferated the fastest, with over 100,000 members. Their vassal forces had reached over a billion.

The first mermaid of the seas had been termed as the Sea God, and she had a boundless strength and all sorts of abilities. At the same time, she controlled many of the ancient weapons in the waters. She had been submerged within the deepest recess of the oceans, cultivating arduously, while authority was left to the 2nd in command, the Mermaid Empress of the Seven Seas.

It could be said that she was the true leader of the Sea Clan, wielding authority over the hundreds and thousands of mermaids, as well as the tens of billions of aquatic Mutant Beasts.

This time, with the Sea Clan ascending onto land, it was an objective of the Mermaid Empress. She intended to send her forces to attack China, Japan, Indonesia, Philippines, Vietnam and many other Southeast Asian countries.

The warriors of the Sea Clan had powerful physiques and did not need any logistics or support, as they could easily consume the land Mutant Beasts. Thus, when they attacked, it was like a blitz operation, and extremely smooth. Had Yue Zhong not acted, Shanghai would have fallen.

There was an advantage that the Sea Clan had over the land races and species, it was that their Mermaid Empress could control high-

level Mutant Beasts of the seas. Thus, they had hordes of sea Mutant Beasts attacking alongside them. If Yue Zhong had not taken risks along his journey to evolve constantly and reach the Type 8 realm, it would have been tough to deal with their numbers as well.

"The Sea God? I wonder just how strong she is." Yue Zhong thought for a while, before his heart raced, "Hai Mei, where's the location of your temple of the Sea Clan? Based on the human map."

As the Sea Clan were an intelligent species, they learned and evolved continuously. They had also absorbed countless human knowledge, forming their own culture. Because of this, they had far surpassed any other sea-related species, becoming a threat to humanity itself. As a nobility, Hai Mei possessed more knowledge than most humans.

Hai Mei furrowed her brows, as she sunk in thoughts, before confirming, "The location of the temple should be at the coordinates of the Bermuda Triangle."

The moment Yue Zhong heard those words, he let out a long breath, his eyes flashing with a strange glint, "As expected!!"

Yue Zhong thought to himself, "Now I have to go back and make my preparations. This time, the journey to the temple, I definitely need Floxenia, Hai Mei, and Gao He. Only then would I be able to gain the most benefits."

Floxenia had her mind-reading skills, in front of her, all schemes were useless. With her along, Yue Zhong would be able to see through others and plan or act accordingly. Hai Mei was a Mermaid Queen and knew things that they would not. Gao He had the ability to source for treasures, Yue Zhong was definitely bringing her along. After all, a strong treasure could affect a battle.

Having made his decision, Yue Zhong glanced at Gao He, before knocking her out. He then tore space and stepped right in.

Back in America, outside the suite that Yue Zhong was in, there were 2 female robots waiting outside. These were the prototypes of the Mech Empire. Unless they took off their outer covering, or one used the most advanced of scanners, there was no telling them apart from actual humans. Their body warmth was incredibly life-like, they had the ability to eat, they would bleed when injured, and was almost no different from humans. These were the types of Mechs that the Mech Empire would send out as spies.

In front of them was the group from the America Superhuman Alliance.

Lehman spoke loudly, "The 2 of you, please step aside. I need to see Yue Zhong. We have not seen him for a few days, and today's the agreed date that we're setting off. Please allow me to meet him!"

One of the female robots, who had long black hair spoke coldly, "Leader had given his orders, without his orders, no one is to step inside."

One of the Americans, whose hair was bright and colorful, and he wore a huge nose ring, leering provocatively, spoke out, "What a tone. We have already requested to speak to him, over these few days. Nicely, at that. Yet, he still remains cooped up? Furthermore, we have not seen him once. What if he had been assassinated by the 2 of you? It must be so, that's why you girls aren't allowing us in."

Hearing those words, Lehman frowned, but he did not scold him. He was suspecting Yue Zhong of planning something.

Right now, Yue Zhong's position was indeed heavy, if he were a friend, they could relax and enjoy life. However, if he was a foe, they would have uneasy days.

Although China and America were still considered allies, there was no alliance set forever in stone. Hence, they were still wary of Yue Zhong.

The 2 robots continued to look cold, not saying anything, ignoring the man with the nose ring, as though he was air.

"Damn it, fuck off bitches!" The man with the nose ring became enraged, his expression savage when he saw them ignoring him, and raised his hands to grab towards them.

Before the world end, he had been a hooligan, with a bad temper and he had been prone to fights. Furthermore, along with his journey, he had killed his fair share of enemies and became one of the alliance. Having earned some respect, no one else dared mock his past, and he became even more arrogant and overbearing.

Lehman's face fell, as his right hand shot out, intending to grab his subordinate, as he barked out furiously, "Jerry, no!!"

Everyone knew Yue Zhong's temper, and if they were to antagonize him, even the whole lot of them could do nothing if he were to go on a rampage.

The beautiful Mech frowned, and her hand burst out explosively, slicing into the chest of the man accurately, and pulling out his still-pumping heart in a split second.

Having lost his heart, the man's eyes were filled with fear and despair, as he felt the strength ebb out of his body. Under his frightened gaze, the Mech coldly clenched her hand, bursting his heart.

The other Mech then raised a quick bout of wind that blew the broken flesh and blood to a corner.

"Type 6?!" Lehman saw how easily the Mechs had dealt with the man with the nose-ring, and his face fell. Even someone as strong as him would not be able to deal with a Type 5 powerhouse that easily. Only a Type 6 expert could do so.

The 2 beauties guarding Yue Zhong's door was so savage and vicious, the rest of the American heroes were all fearful, not daring to step up to provoke them.

Lehman's face sunk and he spoke sternly, "Ladies! You just killed my men, aren't you going to give an explanation?!"

Chapter 920: Strength!

The beautiful Mech spoke coldly, "It was your man who moved first. I acted in self-defense. He deserved it."

Hearing those words, the entire party of experts from the Superhuman Alliance became enraged. While Jerry was not some good soul, his character dubious at times, but he was one of them, and had hunted numerous zombies and Mutant Beasts before. Now that he was killed off, and the other party seemed nonchalant, they were definitely angry.

Lehman stood forward and barked out while staring coldly at her, "Ma'am, this is not China, but America. You just killed our man on American soil, if you don't give a good explanation, we will not let this go!"

Right at this time, the door opened, and Yue Zhong stepped out, his gaze icy as he swept a glance over the American elites. He then challenged them, "Oh! Are you not going to let this go? How so?"

Seeing Yue Zhong, Lehman and the rest of the heroes all felt their hearts freeze a little, their courage dissipating in a flash. This man in front of them was practically a god, able to destroy an entire country by himself. Even the strongest, Lehman, could be killed in a single squeeze.

Lehman gathered his courage, and barked at Yue Zhong, "Mr. Yue Zhong, this subordinate of yours, just killed someone from our Alliance, indiscriminately! You have to answer for that."

"Answer? What kind of answer are you expecting? I know what transpired earlier. She did nothing wrong." Yue Zhong stared at Lehman coldly, as he exerted a powerful pressure towards him, his killing intent oozing. "I had passed the order, anyone who dares barge into the room is deemed as an enemy, and they are to be wiped out directly. Lehman, you allowed your subordinate to act so unbridledly, what thoughts do you have? Are you intending to

perhaps, assassinate me, and affect the relationship between China and America? Killing the leader of a country is a heavy crime, even if I were to kill all of you as punishment, Taff would definitely not say anything. Since that's the case, let me help America clear you guys up!"

Hearing those words, the experts of the Superhuman Alliance tensed up in fear and were on the verge of attacking him. The first to attack would usually get the upper hand, if they waited for Yue Zhong to make the first move, they would all be dead.

Right at this moment, there was a clear, tense shout, "Do not move!!"

There was a strange energy to the voice, and it completely immobilized all the Americans at once.

Then, an incredibly sexy and beautiful woman dressed in military attire appeared, followed by 20 subordinates who were wearing nanomechanical armor.

That beauty saluted Yue Zhong, "I'm Revy, I'm incredibly sorry, Mr. Yue Zhong. This time, it was entirely our fault. Please forgive our mistake."

Yue Zhong swept the military woman a look, and fell silent, as he eased back slightly on the pressure.

By now, the backs of the experts were all drenched in sweat. If Yue Zhong truly meant to kill them, there was no way they could retaliate. Furthermore, they knew that Taff would not hold it against Yue Zhong, after all, the difference in strength was too great.

Yue Zhong was silent for a while, before speaking slowly, "Alright, I'll let it slide. I do not hope for a second time."

Hearing that, everyone immediately let out a breath of relief. There was no way they could muster any fighting intent under that pressure.

Revy then ease up as well, "Of course!"

She then asked respectfully, "Sir, today's the agreed date, have you made your preparations?"

"I'm done, who is going on your side?" Yue Zhong laughed lightly, as Floxenia, Gao He and Hai Mei stepped out from his room.

"What beautiful women!!"

"Holy shit!!"

"..."

When the heroes of America saw Hai Mei, their eyes brightened up and began to discuss in small voices. After Hai Mei transformed her bottom half to that of a human, she looked like an incredibly alluring and attractive beauty, with an air of elegance and grace that was not commonly seen in most women, thus attracting their gazes.

"Look! The little girl by his side is truly beautiful as well, seems like he is really a lolicon."

"Wa, the reports were real! He even brought such a loli with him."

"..."

The experts caught sight of Floxenia who stood beside Yue Zhong, and their eyes flashed strangely, yet no one dared to say anything.

Even Gao He was eyeing Yue Zhong strangely, "There's no one who is perfect. Even the best of heroes in history had their shortcomings, who knew the most powerful person on Earth was a lolicon?! I wonder how history would remember and judge him."

Floxenia heard all of these and she smiled mysteriously, grabbing Yue Zhong's hands.

Revy quickly kept her thoughts, and introduced to Yue Zhong,

"The 5 on our side are me, Lehman, Elisa, Eliza, and Agardi!"

Yue Zhong swept them a look, noticing that the other 3 were those he had seen before. Only Agardi was new. He was a burly and ordinary man, without anything special and he was at the Type 4 realm.

Yue Zhong had a powerful perception since he stepped into the Type 8 realm, and could tell a person's strength and weaknesses just by looking. Of the 5 America had sent, Revy and Lehman were at the Type 5 realm, while Elisa and Eliza were at the Type 3 realm. Agardi was at the Type 4 realm, and other than Revy and Lehman, there were easily other stronger experts.

"Alright, let's set off!" Yue Zhong did not say much, instead, he led them out.

As the group left the lavish hotel, the Protector Battleship soared above them, covering the skies as it descended.

A bright beam shone from it, shining upon the group.

With that, the entire party was beamed up into the battleship.

"What an amazing battleship! Why isn't it ours?!"

"That was so cool!! That beam used to exist only in the movies!! I won't get sick of it no matter how many times I see it!"

"..."

The heroes below stared at the Protector Battleship in awe and envy.

Every single ship was like a huge floating fortress, with the ability to wipe out a hundred thousand foes. If America came to possess such a battleship, their forces would definitely rise in power.

After entering the Protector Battleship, Yue Zhong led the rest into a room, as he said, "Revy, this is your room, before reaching the Bermuda Triangle, please stay here and do not run around.

This Battleship is one of our China's top secrets. If you guys run around, I cannot guarantee your safety."

Elisa asked unceremoniously, "What if we want to bathe and use the toilet?"

Yue Zhong chuckled, "Everything you need is right in here."

"Thanks!" Revy nodded and led Lehman and the rest into the room.

Yue Zhong suddenly asked, "Oh right, Agardi, what kind of a person is he? What powers does he have? Why would you bring him, Elisa, and Eliza to the Bermuda Triangle? With the dangers there and their strength, it would be hard to protect them."

Revy smiled coyly, "Mr. Yue Zhong, everyone has their secrets. It isn't too gentlemanly of you to ask."

With that, she quickly shut the door, evidently unwilling to answer him.

Yue Zhong chuckled, before bringing Floxenia and the rest into the control room.

As he sat down, he asked Floxenia, "Nia, what are they up to?"

She blinked and raised her cheek towards him, smiling cheekily, "Brother, kiss me, and I'll tell you."

Yue Zhong stared blankly, before sighing helplessly, and pecked her on the cheek, "Is this fine?"

"En, hehe." She revealed a satisfied expression, before scowling, "Brother Yue Zhong, those fellows are untrustworthy. They're trying to lay a trap for you."

Yue Zhong laughed out, "Trap me? They don't have that ability."

At the Type 8 realm, his body was even invulnerable to laser beams and all sorts of poisons. Even if he were caught in the middle of a nuclear explosion, he would be unharmed. He could not understand how the Superhuman Alliance would be able to

harm him.

Chapter 921: Bermuda Triangle!

Florenia saw that Yue Zhong was not too worried, and she became flustered, "Brother Yue Zhong, you cannot be careless. In their hands, there's a treasure that Revy had obtained, it's called the Yang-Desiring Stone. It might not have killing potential, but it has aphrodisiac properties. When activated, it is truly potent. Even Leo, with his God-Devil Body, had been affected by it before. They're intending to utilize it when it comes to obtaining the treasure, sacrificing Elisa and Eliza to seduce you, while Agardi will get the treasure. He is also someone who has the God-Devil Imprint. His ability is Camouflage, and he's not American, but from the Netherlands."

When Yue Zhong heard this, his face revealed a thoughtful expression, "So this is the case. No wonder Taff agreed so readily, to think he had such a trump card!"

On Earth, it was not just Edward, Yue Zhong and Leo who had the Imprints. It was just that among those who had them, they were the top 3 famous experts, and were part of, if not the leader of, the greatest factions in the world.

During the course of the Earth's mutation, many forces had been annihilated. Even so, the strongest experts of those factions would not die, instead, they wandered and evolved constantly by fighting wild Mutant Beasts.

Agardi was one of the early experts of Netherlands, having led the elites of the country to attack the main city. He had gained the God-Devil Imprint and had entered the 2nd World.

However, he was not able to prevent the overrun of the Netherlands from the zombies, and thus, he had wandered about, before finally ending up in America.

Yue Zhong would not underestimate anyone who had the God-Devil Imprint. With Agardi's camouflage ability, Yue Zhong had no

way of discerning his true strength. If there was any miscalculation in assuming his strength, then at the critical moment, he might be bested by Agardi.

Yue Zhong asked, "As for the clues to the world and God, is it true?"

Flozenia replied, "From what I read of their minds, it seems true. At the same time, there's a possibility of a huge secret that might change the fate of a faction. However, they don't seem to know much about it."

Yue Zhong ruffled her head affectionately, "Thank you, Nia. Having you around is a really great help."

Flozenia could sense the sincerity and affection from him, and she revealed a bright smile, curling up like a little kitten in his embrace, celebrating silently in her heart.

With her ability, Yue Zhong had assigned her to the intelligence department, handling the different traitors and spies. She could sense the fear from her subordinates and the unbound hatred from those who were sentenced to death by her. Few would like such a superior who could read their minds, thus, she could only obtain warmth and trust from Yue Zhong, that was why she was even more reliant on him.

Yue Zhong continued to stroke her head, while he thought on how to handle the Americans and a cold glint flashed past his eyes.

After flying at full speed for an hour, the Protector Battleship quickly arrived over the Bermuda Triangle.

When they were in the airspace above the sea, the ship began to rock, and Yue Zhong felt a heat on his right wrist, as Bai Yi's voice sounded, "Warning! Warning! There's some unknown interference in this area, and in another 10 seconds, the Battleship would lose balance. Please switch to manual or prepare to leave the region immediately!"

The Protector Battleship was being controlled by Bai Yi. If she received any interference or disturbance, it would cause the Battleship to lose control. Hence, there would be the ability to toggle between autopilot and manual.

Yue Zhong ordered, "Open the doors and let us out, you control the ship back to the country!"

"Got it!"

Her words had just landed when bright lights enveloped Yue Zhong's team as well as Revy's team.

Under the lights, they were beamed down and sent out of the Battleship.

The Protector Battleship then turned around and shot off into the distance.

"Ah!! Help!!"

"No!! Save us!!!"

Being suddenly ejected from the ship, Revy's team found themselves free falling in mid-air. Elisa and Eliza both screamed out, their faces pale.

The Battleship had been flying at an altitude of 6,000m, falling from such a height, even if they were to land in the sea, the intense impact could kill them.

Other than the 2 of them, the other 3 did not panic at such an abrupt situation. Instead, their faces just fell, and they did not utilize any abilities.

"Hiding themselves deeply." Yue Zhong muttered while stepping on thin air. He used the atmospheric energy to support Floxenia and the other 2, while he observed the reactions of Revy's team. However, they did not do anything, as though having given up.

Other than a Type 7 powerhouse's ability to manipulate atmospheric energy, only those with flight related abilities or

treasures would be able to keep afloat before the Type 7 realm. Yue Zhong had even assumed that Agardi was at the Type 7 realm. However, they did not do anything, looking as ordinary as a Type 4 powerhouse. Even Yue Zhong could not help but praise his level of camouflage.

When they were about a hundred meters away from the surface of the sea, Yue Zhong waved his hand and caused a bout of atmospheric energy to wrap all 5 of them.

With that, the speed of their descent fell drastically, and they landed peacefully on top of the water.

Revy and the rest felt a chill in their hearts, as they thought of Yue Zhong's strength, "Powerful..."

There was even a slight hint of envy in the eyes of Agardi.

Yue Zhong then brought the 3 women of his team with him, as he spoke, "Revy, the previous arrangement with Taff was that I would bring the 5 of you here. Everything else is on your own from here on out."

After that, he directly left them as he shot into the sea. At that moment, it felt like the sea was cleaved apart as he summoned the atmospheric energy around him to wrap around his team while traveling through the waters at high speeds.

Lehman frowned, and asked, "What do we do?"

"Follow the plan! Tail them!" Revy pulled out a blue box covered with engravings, which radiated in a blinding light. It enveloped them and transformed into a number of strange armors that covered all 5 of them.

When they were encased in those suits, their team then dove into the water, swimming swiftly towards the seabed.

"Aquatic combat suits? Seems like they're well prepared!"

Yue Zhong saw the group and their armor, and his heart raced

slightly. He then pointed to Floxenia and Gao He, as 2 black beams shot out and landed on them, forming into 2 sets of black aquatic armor.

He had obtained numerous items from the Mech Empire City, and the water nano armors were just part of them.

Currently, the seas had already transformed into heaven for Mutant Beasts. There were ferocious beings everywhere, especially the Bermuda Triangle.

The moment Yue Zhong's team had just entered the water, over 10,000 Mutant Piranhas swam over, their teeth sharp and capable of tearing through Type 3 Mutant Beasts.

These Mutant Piranhas were incredibly vicious, if they even came across a land-based Type 5 Mutant Beast that dropped into the water by accident, they would devour it completely, leaving only bones.

Even a few Type 5 and Type 6 powerhouses had landed in the sea and met these Mutant Piranhas, and were consumed. The seas were different from land. Many land-based life forms could not exhibit even 10% of their strength, they were naturally not able to withstand such hits.

"Die!"

Yue Zhong looked at the fishes pouncing towards them, and frowned, before pointing out and summoned energy that turned into sharp blades slicing towards them. In that instant, there was a mass of blood and scattered parts of the Mutant Piranhas.

Had he still been at the Type 6 realm, it would have been troublesome dealing with these fishes. However, since he was at the Type 8 realm, it was as simple as flipping his hands to deal with them.

All of a sudden, a mass of different Mutant Beasts shot out from the depths of the sea. There was a 10m-long Mutant Swordfish, an

entire school of Mutant Piranhas, countless Mutant Sea Snakes that were over dozens of meters, and looked like wyrms, as well as a few huge, towering Mutant Beasts the size of houses.

Within this Bermuda Triangle area, there were numerous bloodthirsty Sea Mutant Beasts, the moment they caught the scent of blood, they would rush over.

Chapter 922: Deep Sea Mutant Beasts!

Yue Zhong looked at the pouring numbers of Mutant Beasts and felt his scalp go numb. He could deal with one easily, and he did not fear hundreds or thousands of them. However, such a size, where there seemed to be hundreds of thousands, it was not something he could handle without breaking a sweat.

The Mutant Beasts in the sea were numbering in the tens of millions, even if Yue Zhong was in the Type 8 realm, it was still a far-off thing to kill every single Mutant Beast in the sea. If he continued to take the never-ending swarm on, there was a possibility that he might fall.

Seeing them pour out as though they were bees that were agitated, even Revy and her people felt their scalp numb and felt a sense of terror.

Right at this time, Hai Mei spoke to Yue Zhong, "Master, don't worry, I can command the Beasts to not attack us!"

Yue Zhong ordered, "Good! Do it!"

"Yes!"

With his order, she did not hesitate further, and quickly opened her lips, to sing a beautiful song.

As her song sounded, a strange energy reverberation traveled through the region. The originally bloodthirsty beasts felt their frenzy dissipate. They twisted their bodies in confusion, before finally stopping and swimming towards the side.

All royalty of the Mermaid Clan had the ability to use their songs to control Mutant Beasts. Hai Mei was a mature Mermaid Queen, her strength formidable, and her position royal. When she burst forth with all her ability, she was able to get the Type 6 Mutant Beasts to befriend her, and become her subordinate, fighting for her.

Of course, in order to use the Mermaid Song to subjugate a huge number of Mutant Beasts, it was incredibly difficult, but to rid them of their animosity, it was simpler.

Seeing how Yue Zhong was able to absolve the situation, Revy and her team quickly arrived behind him.

The seas were different from prior to the apocalypse. The danger was rife, and the party was all land-based experts. Even on land, they could only flee when they came across Type 5 or Type 6 Mutant Beasts, not to mention in the sea. Death was the only outcome.

The entire group proceeded towards the sea bed silently.

Along the way, Yue Zhong noticed a terrifying scene. At the bottom of the Bermuda Triangle, there were even Type 3 and Type 4 Mutant Beasts that were more than just a few hundred meters long.

Many of these Mutant Beasts were just organisms that had barely existed prior to the apocalypse. As for those Mutant Sea Snakes, that were hundreds of meters long, as they gathered in groups, they moved around, with nothing capable of stopping them.

On land, a single Type 4 Mutant Beast of over a hundred meters in length would be enough to storm a few places. Yet, in the seas, they were everywhere, as though they were just rank-and-file soldiers of a huge army. Their numbers were in the hundreds of thousands, and common.

Even someone as strong as Yue Zhong could die if he was not careful and surrounded by an endless number of Mutant Beasts.

At such depths, his abilities were reduced by about 70%, only by activating the God-Devil Domain would he be at his peak. However, the domain consumed much of his strength, and he would have to end the battle quickly if he did use it, otherwise, he would fall when he was weakened.

They proceeded through the horde of beasts carefully, continuing down.

After some unknown length of time, they finally reached the seabed.

At the bottom of the sea, there was not a single ray of light, it was like darkness had shrouded the entire area. However, with Yue Zhong's God-Devil Body, his eyes were able to peer through regardless if there was light or darkness. He could see the area clearly.

After glancing around, he felt a chill.

Beneath the Bermuda Triangle, there were numerous huge mountains of over a kilometer in length. When he took a careful look, he realized these were all Type 5 and Type 6 Mutant Beasts with unimaginable strength.

There were easily over dozens of thousands of them That was to say, there was over a dozen thousand Type 5 Mutant Beasts at the bottom of the sea. Such a force was invincible within the seas.

If they were to come on land, they would be able to crush anything in their way. Furthermore, in the sea, nothing could possibly annihilate them. Even Yue Zhong had to maintain his guard

Revy and the rest caught sight of the slumbering beasts and sucked in cold breaths, their countenances turning even uglier.

Although they did not possess eyes like Yue Zhong's, their aqua armor had the infrared sensors. They could see for themselves the terrifying mountains. Just a single one of those beasts could wipe them out, not to mention tens of thousands.

Yue Zhong swept a glance, before speaking to Revy, "Miss Revy, you should be able to tell us the position now?"

Although he had Hai Mei, if they were able to ascertain the location, it would be even better.

Revy nodded slightly, and pulled out a jade box from her grasp, retrieving an ancient, black map.

The moment the map appeared, it struggled out of her hands, before flitting towards a direction with a speed that was neither fast nor slow.

Seeing its strange movement, everyone exchanged looks and followed behind quietly.

Their bodies were small, and to those Type 5 Mutant Beasts, they were just ant-like existences. They did not move, as though they were dead.

However, everyone present knew that it was just that they were immobile for now. If they were to act suddenly, no one could withstand.

They followed the map for a short distance before it led them to a bright patch of light within the dark waters. Inside the light, there was a shield, and in it, an altar laid with numerous mystical items. There were chests and weapons, and opened boxes, revealing countless Mutant Beasts nuclei, and it looked like a huge storage.

Seeing the shield, Lehman and the rest felt their gazes brightened. Their suits then fired out jets, propelling them towards the direction of the shield.

Yue Zhong was immediately suspicious of this sudden windfall, but the number of treasures no doubt attracted him. He even saw a few Type 9 Mutant Beast nuclei. He could not let up on such precious resources.

At this time, Floxenia suddenly urged out, "Brother Yue Zhong, don't go! It's a trap!! It's dangerous there, I can sense an incredible killing intent with evil designs on us!"

Yue Zhong immediately stopped as his gaze narrowed. He asked Gao He, "Gao He, try using your power to sense if there are treasures there?"

In response, Gao He closed her eyes and frowned slightly, before replying with uncertainty, "There's definitely a treasure there! But it's only one! And it's not in the light, but rather, behind!"

Yue Zhong immediately channeled his voice in a line towards the ears of the 5 Americans, "Come back!! It's a trap!"

Hearing that, there were different reactions.

Revy, Elisa, and Agardi stopped immediately, while Eliza just slowed down, hesitating slightly, Lehman, on the other hand, increased his speed.

Lehman's eyes shone with greed as he thought, "Hmph, I've used such tricks so many times myself. This treasury is mine! Once I gain control of it, I can go through a change and become a powerhouse surpassing even Leo and Yue Zhong!! I'll become Earth's true number one expert!"

Greed could blind. Many intelligent people had fallen prey to their own greed before.

Lehman was a gifted expert, and he hoped to surpass Leo and Yue Zhong. It was all he thought about every day. With such a treasury in front of him, to him, it was the only opportunity that he had to grab.

Just as he got close to the light, suddenly, from within the shield, a huge tongue unfolded and shot out, wrapping around Lehman and pierced his body. Before Lehman could even scream, the tongue retracted back into the radiant light and disappeared.

Seeing that, Eliza, who was next in front, let out a blood-curdling scream, and tried to retreat backward, "Save me!! Save me!!! Save me!!!"

At that time, the light world retracted, revealing a huge mouth of over 1km, filled with countless sharp teeth, exerting a powerful suction force on Eliza as well as the rest.

Chapter 923: Killing the Mutant Beast!

Yue Zhong's face turned, as he grabbed out at thin air, and a powerful atmospheric energy gathered, transforming into a huge hand that grabbed onto Eliza and pulled her towards him.

The jaws of the huge beast snapped shut at that moment, closing in on the entire area where Eliza was escaping from and managed to bite through her legs, as fresh blood flowed.

"Ah!!! Help!! It hurts!! Save me!!!"

Eliza screamed out in pain.

Elisa saw that and could not help but scream out as well, "Sister!!"

Yue Zhong's gaze narrowed, and his God-Devil strength gathered in his eyes, and he activated his Eyes of Perception, taking a good look at the beast with gold light shimmering from his eyes.

It was a huge beast of about 3km long, its body covered in thick scales, and there was a strange meat ball that emitted light like a lantern which formed on its forehead, about 500m-wide. It turned out to be a Type 7 Mutant Black Seadevil Fish, and it was incredibly ugly.

After it was discovered, the eyes of the fish glinted dangerously, and the lantern on its head radiated brightly, sending a bright light shooting outwards.

Yue Zhong was shocked, and he quickly summoned an energy shield to cover him and his 3 girls, while he could not afford to bother with the elites from America.

At that critical moment, Revy and Agardi could no longer bother about hiding their strength and quickly pulled out their strongest defensive cards.

Revy revealed a blue box that quickly transformed into a mechanical ball that wrapped around her.

Agardi had a glint in his eyes, as a number of strange tattoos radiated on his body. A powerful psychic barrier emerged and formed around him.

Elisa and Eliza were both without any defensive treasures, and could only swim towards Yue Zhong with all their might.

Among these people, Yue Zhong was the strongest, and only he was able to protect them from the enormous Mutant Beast.

The bright light shone brightly, bypassing Yue Zhong's energy shield, and pierced his body.

At that moment, Yue Zhong felt his consciousness shrouded in pain, as the scenery around him changed.

"Master, you're awake!"

"Master, come and catch me!"

"..."

Currently, he was surrounded by many beautiful women of different ages, style, and charms, and he seemed to be in some paradise on Earth.

The countless women were either playing heavenly music, or singing in their melodious voices, or dancing in absolutely stunning dances.

As these amazing beauties surrounded him, they were dressed in light silk, their expressions coy, as they competed to get his attention.

They had exceptional skin and were all elegant even in their merry-making.

In such a heavenly setting, even Buddha might sink in forever.

"What a powerful illusion, if I had not undergone the baptism of the Type 9 powerhouse will, I might have truly been swept up in this forever." Yue Zhong took in the mesmerizing scent of the ladies beside him, and his eyes flashed coldly. He then barked out

violently, "Get lost!"

At that moment, it seemed as though a powerful ax capable of splitting the heavens and earth appeared and cleaved through the scene.

As it sliced through, the world was destroyed, and the women, fruits, and paradise shattered like glass.

At that moment, Yue Zhong stirred from the illusion, and his perception swept outwards, noticing that other than him, everyone had their eyes shut, their expressions of bliss.

Even Floxenia, who was on his back, had a scarlet flush, her breathing rushed, "Brother Yue Zhong, no! Nia is still not yet of age! However, if Brother Yue Zhong really wants it... then... Nia, Nia will not resist."

As everyone was engrossed in their dreams, without any means to retaliate, the Type 7 Black Seadevil Fish opened its jaws once more and began to suck in deep, trying to suck everybody into its mouth.

Yue Zhong frowned, and with a thought, he cast his Summon Tamed Beast technique, as a void appeared in the sea, and the type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King flew out, immediately pouncing towards the Type 7 Black Seadevil. It opened its own jaws and bit down viciously on the body of the Type 7 Mutant Black Seadevil Fish.

The Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King was a beast of sea, land, and air, and it could adept at fighting in all 3 terrains. However, its innate ability was wind, thus, in the waters, it was not particularly effective. That was why it spent most of its time outside of the water.

Even so, it continued to urge its innate ability, while its physique was at the Type 8 realm, posing a formidable challenge to the Type 7 Mutant Black Seadevil Fish.

When the Type 7 Mutant Black Seadevil Fish was bitten by the

Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King, a huge chunk of flesh was torn off its body. It trembled in agony and opened its huge jaws, firing its powerful tongue at the Type 8 Mutant Beast.

As the tongue slammed into the body of the Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile King, it trembled but was not able to penetrate the hide. Instead, it only served to infuriate the Type 8 beast more.

The Type 8 Wyrms-Crocodile was incredibly vicious, as it bit off the flesh harshly and burrowed towards the flesh.

After that, with a blast of powerful wind blades, it forcefully sliced the Black Seadevil Fish into two, as fresh blood dyed the water.

In the seas, while the might of the wind blades was not comparable to on land, however, in close vicinity, it was able to exert considerable destruction.

With the death of the Type 7 Black Seadevil, a huge pool of blood dissipated outwards, and at that moment, the numerous Mutant Beasts of the waters swarmed over.

A few of the mountain-like Type 5 and Type 6 Mutant Beasts that had been slumbering also lifted their heads, swimming over.

The blood and flesh of a Type 7 beast were extremely enticing to these Type 5 and Type 6 Mutant Beasts, as it could allow them to evolve further.

Yue Zhong asked Gao He who had just stirred awake, "Where's the treasure, Gao He?"

She pointed towards the tail of the corpse of the Type 7 Black Seadevil, "Over there!"

With a thought, he charged forward like a knife slicing through the water with the atmospheric energy surrounding as he arrived at the tail.

Gao He pointed at one particular lump, and spoke resolutely, "It's

right there!"

With a point, a blade of atmospheric energy sliced through the area, tearing it apart, as a golden God-Devil Imprint covered with blood soared towards him.

Yue Zhong stared at it with excitement, and he grabbed it, "It's a God-Devil Imprint, no wonder this damned beast could reach the Type 7 realm, so it had gotten an Imprint. I wonder which unfortunate bastard had been eaten by it."

After he obtained it, he placed it within his Universe Storage Ring and continued further into the ocean.

The black ancient map had not left, instead, it waited for Revy and the rest to arrive before continued forward.

Revy carried Eliza, whose legs had been bitten off, and had been knocked unconscious by injecting anesthesia, and came to Yue Zhong, "Mr. Yue Zhong, Eliza's legs had been bitten off. This time, it had truly been dangerous, please show grace and take good care of her."

Yue Zhong swept her a look, as well as Elisa who was standing beside and laughed coldly, "Revy, they're your people. You want me to take care of them? Since they're no longer capable of protecting themselves, get Elisa to escort her out. If she cannot, then Agardi can fill that role."

Revy frowned. Of the 5-man team that came, Lehman had been eaten alive, while Eliza had lost her legs. They only had 3 able-bodied staff left. If anyone else left, their plan would go up in smokes.

Her gaze flickered as she spoke coldly, "Yue Zhong, I know you have the ability to help her regain her legs. If you can take care of her now, when her legs are healed, she's yours. If you're not willing to accept her, then leave her here to die."

When Elisa heard those cruel words, her expression turned ugly,

as she grabbed her half-dead sister, and cursed out, "Revy! What the hell are you saying?! She's my sister! A hero of the Superhuman Alliance! You actually treat her as a commodity to be given out? What kind of a joke is this? I'm not interested in this mission any longer. I will bring my sister back now, and leave you bunch of crazy, inhumane bastards."

Chapter 924: Sea God City!

Revy took a cold look at the agitated and infuriated Elisa, and just replied coldly, "This time, you have to complete your mission. The aqua armor on you is equipped with an explosive. If you insist on abandoning on your mission, I will detonate it, and you can go to hell with your sister."

When Elisa heard those cruel words, she felt like her entire body was plunged in ice, as her visage turned pale, while she starred at Revy venomously. Initially, when both she and her sister were selected for the mission, they had been excited and filled with hope for it. However, she was filled with hatred and fear towards it now.

Revy swept her a look, before offering a 'carrot', "Elisa, when you complete the mission, you will be recognized as a hero of America. You can regain your freedom and reside wherever you wish to. The American government will compensate you with 1 billion New US Dollars."

America also had regained some form of society and rebuilt their structures. There was a new currency, the new US Dollar. The old US Dollar was useless, and only the new currency could purchase items.

A billion US Dollar was not a small amount, enough to purchase over 50 luxurious villas in the city, and one could live comfortably for the rest of his or her life. Of course, that was dependent on the stability of the American government and that inflation would not be too insane.

Elisa gritted her teeth and spoke, "Fine! I will do it."

Under pressure, sometimes, one had to bend. Elisa was an intelligent girl. She knew that if she fought on, Revy would just kill them on the spot.

After being inducted into the Superhuman Alliance, Elisa and

Eliza were no longer innocent girls. They had been through a lot and had seen the darkness beneath the facade of the government.

Elisa turned to Yue Zhong and sobbed while she pleaded, "Yue Zhong, please, save my sister. If you do it, I can go to bed with you."

Revy had already set her mind, if Yue Zhong was still adamant about not helping, Elisa would die. Elisa only had this sister, and they had supported each other until today through the cruel apocalypse. For her sister, she was willing to do anything.

"Fine! I will save her!"

Yue Zhong saw how Elisa was crying and was touched by their strong relationship. He pointed and a black light enveloped Elisa's body, turning into a rocket-like mechanism, that shot for the surface of the sea.

Yue Zhong then spoke indifferently, "Relax, your sister won't die."

The rocket was formed from a Type 6 Mech Beast, as long as it did not come across the assault of a Type 7 Mutant Beast, if it wanted to leave the sea wholeheartedly, nothing could stop it.

The black map continued to float through the sea, passing numerous mountains beneath the sea, nests of all kinds of Mutant Beasts, as it proceeded towards a seemingly endless dark tear.

Yue Zhong and the rest followed tightly.

After entering that tear, they descended another thousand of meters, before they were wrapped in a bright blue light. Suddenly, a city with numerous large statues emitting powerful auras appeared in front of them.

Within the huge city, there were countless Sea Clan members walking around on the streets. It was a bustle of activity.

At the same time, inside the city, the defense was tight, with a

guard every few meters. The inner city was truly well-defended.

Hai Mei swept the Sea God City a look and introduced to Yue Zhong, "Master, this is the Holy Land of our Sea Clan, the Sea God City. The great Sea God Empress is beneath this city, comprehending the mysteries of the universe. This city was actually something left behind by an ancient civilization, with only 4 entrances. The rest of the area had been covered, and unless attacked by a Type 9 powerhouse, it is impossible to breach."

Yue Zhong swept the city a look, his mouth twitching slightly. However, he did not say much. While this city might be impossible for others to breach, to him, who had the Radiant Battleship, it was not considered much.

Hai Mei had an apologetic look as she continued, "The 4 entrances are the East, West, South, North Gates of the cities. That gate nearest to us is the North Gate. I've some dealings with the protector of the North Gate before. As long as I appear, they will let me through. However, I have to trouble Master and the rest of you to pretend to be my servants."

Yue Zhong suddenly asked, "You being my subordinate has not been revealed, right?"

She swiftly replied, "It should not be. It had happened secretly, and for the news to reach the great Seas, it would take at least 10 days, and to reach the Sea God City, it would take half a month. The great Sea God does not usually concern herself with this. Latest news would go to the palace first, before reaching the Sea God City."

Yue Zhong heard this and was slightly clearer about the mystical entity, Sea God. She should be a powerful, cultivating freak, with her whole mind focused on training. She did not care about other matters and was more of a source of hope and faith for the masses.

Such a character was terrifying. Yue Zhong guessed that she was either a peak Type 7 or Type 8 existence, and in this sea, which was

her domain, Yue Zhong might not be able to best her.

"Go! To the North Gate!"

Under his orders, they quickly masqueraded as Hai Mei's servants and the group proceeded towards the gate.

The citizens of the Sea God City required food as well, and every day, a large number of Sea Clan members would exit and enter the city. It was rife with activity.

Exiting was easy, as many Sea Clan members would leave the moment they got out. However, there was a long line queuing to enter.

Yue Zhong did not want to queue up obediently. He looked at the long line, and grabbed out, pushing a particular Prawn-man in front of him to one side in an overbearing manner.

The Prawn-man swiveled around with a vicious expression and was about to lash out in fury when he suddenly saw the Mermaid Queen Hai Mei behind Yue Zhong. His eyes dimmed, and he stood one side obediently.

Chapter 925: Possia!

The Mermaids were the royalty among all of the Sea Clan, and the rest of the species had no way of standing up against them. Most of those in line were directly thrown aside by Yue Zhong and did not dare to say anything.

Just as they reached the North Gate, there were 4 Sea Warriors, with octopus heads, their hands like hooks, stopping Yue Zhong as they barked, "Halt, who are you guys?"

Yue Zhong eyed those 4 Octopus-warriors, his face turning cold as he barked, "Scram! Behind me stands the great Mermaid Queen Silemoya, you dare to obstruct her way?"

Hearing that furious shout, the 4 Sea Warriors turned to gaze behind, and their faces froze in shock, as they kneeled and spoke respectfully, "Greetings, Your Highness Silemoya! We had offended you without knowing better, please pardon our ignorance!"

Hai Mei glanced at them with disinterest as she ordered, "Enter!"

At that moment, they were about to relax and enter the city, there was a coquettish voice that sounded, "Sister Silemoya, didn't you bring some forces to invade Shanghai of China? Why are you here? Did you abandon your troops and come back alone?"

The entire group turned behind and caught sight of a lavish sedan chair being hoisted by 4 burly Sea Warriors. It was constructed out of red crystals, and laden with pearls. Following behind were 300 powerful Sea Warriors.

On top of that sedan, there was a young Mermaid who sat on it, her body also covered with precious pearls, smiling as she looked over.

This young Mermaid was obviously of high status, and Yue Zhong could sense that there were in fact 2 Type 6 Sea Clan

warriors acting as her bodyguard.

The Sea Clan also valued the strong, to think an ordinary Mermaid could be protected by Type 6 Sea Clan warriors, her identity was definitely not simple.

Hai Mei swept a look at that Mermaid and spoke icily, "Possia, I have my reasons naturally, why should I tell you? Let's go!"

Possia laughed, pointing at Yue Zhong, "Wait. Sister Silemoya, I'm very interested in that human slave beside you. Can you give him to me? I can gift you with a 100 Tiger-Shark guards."

The Tiger-Shark Guards was one of the most elite of troops in the Sea Clan. Each of them was at least at the Type 4 realm, and a hundred of them was a sizeable force even for these Mermaid Queens.

Most trades were of such powerful guards. They were like currency and commodities.

There was a cold look in Hai Mei's eyes, as she rejected it icily, "Not interested. Let's move!"

Possia's eyes flashed, as she laughed out cruelly, and gave a vicious order, "Hu Sen, go tear that human apart!"

"Yes! Master!"

There was a cruel light in the eyes of the Type 5 Tiger-Shark guard beside her. His entire being burst forth with a powerful aura, as he shot towards Yue Zhong, sending a claw over.

"Courting death!"

Yue Zhong looked at the incoming Tiger-Shark warrior, his eyes flashing coldly. He sent his right fist exploding out at the head of the Sea Warrior. With a loud smack, the Sea Warrior's head was separated from his body, and a fresh cloud of blood dyed the area of water red.

"Dead!?"

"The Tiger-SharK General was killed just like that?!"

"That was too scary!! Who the hell is this slave?!"

"..."

Seeing Yue Zhong take out the Tiger-Shark warrior in a single hit, the rest of the Sea Warriors were filled with shock and respect. The Tiger-Shark General was at the Type 5 realm, with a powerful combat might. Yet, he had been slapped to death by Yue Zhong in a single hit. Since their race also valued the strong, such an expert was worthy of their respect.

Seeing her own subordinate killed in a hit, Possia's brows furrowed, as she assessed Yue Zhong carefully.

Hai Mei did not bother about Possia as she ordered, "Move!"

As they entered the Sea God City, Hai Mei spoke to Yue Zhong through a transmitter, "Master, Possia is the 107th Princess of the Sea Clan. She might not be strong, but her intelligence is publicly acknowledged to be among the top 10. We had left such a huge mark, we might not be able to hoodwink her for long.

Although they had entered the city easily with Hai Mei's status, with things and their development, as long as Possia searched a little more carefully, they would be exposed.

Yue Zhong eyed the black map in the skies, muttering indifferently, "No worries, we just have to act faster."

After that, the entire group followed after the black map.

At the entrance of the city gate, Hai Mei' frowned, as she ordered a swordfish mullet to her side, "Wei Sheng, go to the Imperial City and search on Silemoya's tracks and battle record. If there are any strange points, immediately flag it out for Her Majesty the Sea Empress to send experts here."

"Yes!"

One swordfish guard beside her responded and quickly tore

through the water and disappeared in a flash.

Possia continued, "Jing Kui, go to the Sea God Temple and report, say that Silemoya has already defected, and had brought human spies into the Sea God City, Request for aid in suppressing her."

The whale-head expert beside her, who was 8m-tall, and exuded a might of a Type 6 expert, frowned, "Your Highness, has Silemoya really defected?"

She nodded, without a hint of anger, "I'm 80 - 90% certain."

Jing Kui hesitated before asking, "Your Highness, without any evidence, if she turns out to be innocent, we would be captured by the Sea God Temple and branded as slaved. Furthermore, without any evidence, they would not act."

Possia laughed lightly, her voice turning incomparably cold, "There will be evidence. Just report it as Silemoya had brought humans in order to deal with the Temple, and those old-fashioned farts would definitely send the most powerful elites out. This is an order. Are you trying to disobey?"

Jing Kui immediately got down in fright, "Your subordinate does not dare, I will go immediately." before swiftly heading towards the North Gate.

As time passed, there were more experts produced in the Sea Clan. While the Type 6 powerhouses were not many, it was considerable. If a Type 6 expert like Jing Kui were to be executed for disobeying orders, there would be no tears for him.

To the Mermaid Clan who could control Mutant Beasts, a Type 5 Mutant Beast was much more powerful and useful than a Type 6 Sea Clan expert.

There was a strange power to the black map, and ordinary people could not see it. Only Yue Zhong, Revy and those which had seen it initially could see it float through the city.

As it continued to float, they saw the direction that it was traveling towards. There was a huge golden pyramid that seemed to be constructed out of the purest gold, exuding a powerful and mysterious aura in the distance.

There were sentries and guards everywhere, as powerful soldiers patrolled around the pyramid.

The elites patrolling the pyramid were at the very least a Type 4 powerhouse. There were many Type 5 and Type 6 powerhouses, and the experts were truly plenty.

This was just the force on the surface. Yue Zhong could clearly sense with his perception that the most terrifying factor was that below the pyramid, about a few dozen kilometers below, there was a terrifying Mutant Beast exuding a peak-Type 8 aura.

An ordinary person could not sense the terror of that Type 8 Mutant Beast, but Yue Zhong was sensitive to it.

It was already at the peak of the Type 8 realm, half a step into the Type 9 realm. If the Wurm-Crocodile King were to challenge it alone, it would definitely be torn apart in a few rounds.

Even among Type 8 experts, they were split into different tiers. To the beast below the pyramid, it was just lacking that little spatial waves. Once it comprehended spatial laws, it would be able to step into the realm and break through, turning into a terrifying existence that could transcend space.

The black map shot out, entering the pyramid and disappeared.

Hai Mei quickly exclaimed to Yue Zhong, "Master, this is the Sea God Temple that the mighty Sea God is cultivating beneath!"

Chapter 926: Heroism!

Yue Zhong looked at the golden pyramid, his eyes flashing with a glint, "This is the Sea God Temple?"

The Temple was constructed beautifully, with a mysterious and holy feel. He just had to look at it and could sense the might and terror hidden within.

With his intuition, he could sense that if he were to barge in, it was likely that he would be suppressed within.

The Sea God Temple was not like the Mech Kingdom's Empire City. Although danger was rife at that time, with countless experts at well, Yue Zhong had Bai Yi as a trump card, and there was also a Type 9 expert distracting the bulk of the defenses, that was how he had made off with the treasures.

As for this Sea God Temple, Yue Zhong could only rely on himself, as well as the Wyrms-Crocodile King that he tamed.

Yue Zhong eyed the huge pyramid, his face changing multiple times before he took a deep breath, and his powerful blast outwards, "China's Yue Zhong is here to challenge the Sea God!!"

"China's Yue Zhong is here to challenge the Sea God!!"

"..."

His voice reverberated throughout the entire Sea God City.

Hearing his voice, many of the residents within the city were shocked, and immediately, all the Sea Warriors poured towards the location.

"Yue Zhong!!"

"That's the top human expert on land!! Yue Zhong!! He actually came to our Sea God Temple to challenge our mighty Sea God!! Seeking death!!"

"Yue Zhong!! It's China's Yue Zhong!!"

"To think the top human expert came to challenge the Sea God!! I must go and kill that human!!"

"..."

Hearing his voice, many battle-crazed Sea Warriors were excited and incensed, charging towards their location in a frenzy.

Since the Sea Clan had begun evolving and developing intelligence, they had captured a few human slaves over the course of their short years of development and absorbed whatever knowledge they could. Thus, they were aware of the top expert Yue Zhong from China.

In the past, they had clashed with him once in Japan. However, at that time, he had not been able to fend them off, and could only board a helicarrier to flee the assault of the Sea Clan. Thus, many Sea Warriors despised him and thought that the human race was just merely so-so.

Hearing Yue Zhong challenging their revered Sea God, many of them were provoked and wanted to hunt him down.

Agardi, who had been masking his identity and kept silent throughout, rushed towards Yue Zhong in a somewhat stricken manner, "Are you crazy?! Damn it, aren't we exposed like this?!"

Revy was also in disbelief as she stared at Yue Zhong, She had not expected for him to announce his arrival so loudly, right smack in the middle of the enemy's territory.

With such a roar, Yue Zhong's mind whirled, as the energy within him surged. There was not a sense of glory, instead, what replaced it was a bristling heroism, a desire to battle.

At the initial stages of the apocalypse, he had struggled constantly to evolve. Against powerful enemies, he had to hide and evade constantly, and had suffered numerous times.

At various stages, he had to plan his moves carefully and stealthily, simply because he had been too weak. Now that he was

at the Type 8 stage, almost invincible, his mindset was naturally changing.

In order to become a true expert at the peak, one had to tear through the countless obstacles, and forge and baptize oneself through challenges, wiping out enemies. When Yue Zhong released that roar, he had instinctively comprehended that principle.

In this Sea God City, there were plenty of experts, as well as a formidable opponent with untold depths. If he was not careful, there was a chance that he could fall. Even so, he did not put it to heart, and just wanted to fight it out, showcasing his strongest potential.

Yue Zhong swept Agardi a look, "Agardi, I know that you're the top expert of the Netherlands, and an owner of the God-Devil Imprint as well. If you're fearful, you could leave here right now. With your strength, it should not be an issue"

Agardi's face fell, as he roared at Yue Zhong, "You fucking maniac!! I shall watch how you die!" before dodging towards a small alley, disappearing into the darkness.

Anyone who had the God-Devil Imprint and returned from the 2nd World was not a simple person. Each of them would have the ability to evade their captors. Otherwise, they would have already been torn apart by the Saint Clan of the 2nd World.

Revy's gaze turned complicated as she shot Yue Zhong a look, before choosing to follow after Agardi.

In the distance, Possia saw Yue Zhong standing, floating in the water, exuding an overbearing aura, and her eyes flashed with appreciation, "This Yue Zhong person is truly brave, and could be considered a hero. Too bad, he's about to die!"

The Sea Clan revered the strong, and they admired those who dared to flaunt their strength. Although she was an enemy, she could not help but admire Yue Zhong's strength and guts.

"Human, the Sea God Temple is not an existence you can offend, you can die for me!"

One Type 6 swordfish-person roared, and shot towards him with a Mach-5 speed, attacking Yue Zhong viciously.

The entire frame of this Swordfish warrior transformed into a sharp blade, and it was one of his trump killing cards. Even a Type 7 powerhouse would be pierced by him.

"Die!"

]

Yue Zhong pointed at the incoming Sea Warrior, and a sharp atmospheric energy condensed into a blade, slicing through the warrior, in a shower of blood and organs.

"Strong!!"

"General Jian Ci was killed!! This human truly has some capabilities!"

"..."

Seeing the death of the Type 6 Swordfish-warrior, the eyes of the surrounding Sea Clan warriors narrowed, not daring to underestimate Yue Zhong.

The Type 6 Swordfish Warrior was considered a peak expert within the Sea God City. Such an expert was killed in an instant by Yue Zhong, proving his might.

Possia watched on in interest, as her lithe body trembled in excitement, her eyes flashing with passion and pity at the same time, "He was able to slaughter General Jian Ci in a split second! He truly is strong! What a pity, he's a human!!"

"This human is strong! Everybody, forwards, do not let him defile and shock the great Sea God!"

One Sea Clan warrior roared out, channeling his innate talent, and fired a bolt of lightning at Yue Zhong.

The roar of the Sea Clan warrior was like the fuse to explosives, as the entire horde of Sea Clan warriors exploded in an uproar, channeling their innate abilities and launching them at Yue Zhong.

"Since you're all seeking death, you can go to hell!!"

His eyes flashed coldly, waving his hands, as 36 beams of blood radiances shot out and swirled through the water, enveloping the entire scene below him.

Anywhere the blood radiances touched, the patches of Sea Warriors would be instantly turned to emaciated corpses, and the blood radiances themselves would expand larger.

At that instant, he had already killed over tens of thousands of Sea Clan warriors, as the stench of blood got thicker and spread further.

Among the abilities of Yue Zhong, the Blood Manipulation ability was the most insidious, and most effective against low-level biological lifeforms. It had a large area of effect and consumed little of his strength. As long as it continued to slaughter, with Yue Zhong's present strength, it would not even wear him out to maintain it.

Compared to the more powerful God-Devil Domain, it was much more practical.

Possia saw this all-consuming blood field, and her face froze in shock as she retreated in horror, "Not good!! This human actually knows such an evil art!! Damn it!! Retreat!!"

"Kill!!"

"Kill him!!"

"..."

The countless Sea Clan warriors roared out, charging at Yue Zhong, trying to reaching him, to no avail as they were all sucked dry.

In just a few breaths, there were over another dozen of thousands of Sea Warriors that had died at Yue Zhong's hands, as he continued to absorb the life force from all over.

"Stop!!"

At that moment, there was a powerful and stern voice from the pyramid, as it released a powerful and saintly energy towards the blood radiances.

As the light shone onto the blood radiances, there were traces of smoke, and patches of the blood radiance were vaporized.

It continued to shine and expand, wiping out more of the blood radiances. The terrifying Blood Manipulation ability of Yue Zhong that no one had been able to overcome was slowly being erased by that golden light.

With a thought, Yue Zhong quickly resummoned the remaining Blood Radiances back into his arms.

Chapter 927: Defeating the Sea God!

The golden pyramid then opened up, as a beautiful mermaid rose from within, wielding a blue staff that had a gold wood essence within. She wore a golden crown, her body covered in pearls, her long hair blue in color. Her eyes were bright and clear, her figure extremely alluring, and her looks were absolutely stunning.

Yue Zhong looked at her, his gaze turning serious, "Sea God?"

She exuded a powerful aura as she emerged, apparently at the Type 8 realm.

Regardless of where they were, a Type 8 powerhouse would be considered a tyrant. Before the Earth had changed, there was not even a single Type 1 Divine Warrior. In just 3 years, there was already a Type 8 powerhouse. This was the terrifying innate talent of the Sea God. What was more, she did not possess the God-Devil Imprint like Yue Zhong, who could evolve by killing other life forms.

The Sea God stared at Yue Zhong coldly and with a hint of disdain, "You're the strongest human powerhouse, Yue Zhong? Very good, you're strong. However, you should not have come. Stay here and be my slave, I can let you live. Otherwise, it'll be your death day."

Yue Zhong laughed out loud, but there was no joy in his eyes, just an incomparable cold, "Haha! Just based on you? I'm lacking a female slave, and you seem decent enough. You can just scam over here and beg for me to take you in. That way, I can let you live, as well as spare the rest of the Sea Clan in this city."

The humans and Sea Clan were fighting for the hegemony of Earth, and there could only be one ruling race. This fight was bound to happen in the end, that was why Yue Zhong did not bother dispensing any pleasantries.

"Courting death!"

The Sea God spat out these two words with an icy tone, and in a flash of blue light, her staff began to glow, including the golden nucleus embedded in it. A bright gold light that was able to vaporize the Blood Radiances earlier shot towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong activated his Shadow Steps, as he stepped through the air and shot towards the Sea God with countless shadows.

With a thought from the Sea God, the gold light split apart, turning into numerous beams that pierced throughout the skies.

The countless gold beams pierced through Yue Zhong's shadows, and one even shot towards his actual body.

Yue Zhong willed it, and a powerful energy shield congealed in front of him.

As the gold rays fell upon the shield, they pierced through it easily, shooting for Yue Zhong.

"Oh! Decent force!"

He let out a surprised sound, as he slapped out at the gold beam, causing a huge sound as the beam was destroyed.

After causing the gold light beam to dissipate, Yue Zhong quickly fired out his Level 6 Yin-Yang Palm at the Sea God. A powerful palm imprint that was filled with both Yang and Yin aura quickly covered the sky, as it shot towards the Sea God viciously.

Yue Zhong was not in the mood to be chivalrous, if he could, he would slap her to death.

"What a powerful human, he actually knows such an incredible technique!!"

Sensing the might of the Yin-Yang Palm, the countenance of the Sea God turned ugly, as she wielded her staff and thrust it towards the pyramid below.

At that moment, an archaic and saintly aura surged forth. It did

not belong to the Sea God, instead, wrapping around the staff, as a gold dragon head appeared from the crystal. It gave off a tyrannical strength as it snarled at the Yin-Yang Palm imprint.

Hong!

Following a loud sound, the gold dragon was disintegrated by Yue Zhong's Yin-Yang Palm, while the attack was also crushed by the force behind the gold dragon.

Yue Zhong could achieve the Level 6 of the Yin-Yang Palm, allowing him to exhibit a strength 64 times that of his own. With a single palm imprint, it was as though 64 Type 8 powerhouses had attacked at the same time. It was enough to crush some Type 8 powerhouses in a single strike. With such a powerful move, coupled with his Third Order God-Devil Body, under most ordinary circumstances, he could only fire off 10 times of such an attack.

Once the dust settled, and both attacks had canceled each other out, the resulting backlash caused the Sea God to be pale, as she spat out a mouthful of blood, her face full of shock, "How is this possible?! As a Type 8 powerhouse, I had even borrowed the force of the ancient pyramid to fire out, and yet, he was able to meet my attack and it doesn't seem like he's the least bit injured."

When the Yin-Yang Palm was destroyed, although Yue Zhong had been at the epicenter, he was not injured at all. After reaching the Third Order God-Devil Body, his physique had reached an unbelievable level. Almost nothing could hurt him anymore.

At his current stage, even if he was at the center of an explosion, with the defensive ability of his Third Order God-Devil Body, he would not be in danger. He might feel some pain, while some of the weaker aspects of his body could be injured.

Yue Zhong did not seem to mind that the Level 6 Yin-Yang Palm was extinguished by the attack of the Sea God. He stepped forward and appeared in front of her, his right fist punching out, wrapped

in countless shadows. In a single move, he threw out over a hundred fists.

The Sea God wielded her staff, her eyes flashing dangerously as a gold shield appeared in front of her.

Yue Zhong blasted out multiple times at the gold shield, his powerful strength exploding forth, smashing into it like a crazed wild beast.

In a flash, he destroyed it completely and sent a fist at the Sea God.

With his Third Order God-Devil Body, Yue Zhong's physique was tougher than the teeth and claws of some Type 8 Mutant Beasts, and he preferred using his body to fight.

The Sea God raised her staff to defend.

Kuang lang!

As his fist struck the staff, it broke through the bright staff, causing the crystal to shatter, while his fist continued through and slammed into the abdomen of the Sea God, sending her hurtling through the waters at an incredible speed.

"Impossible!!"

"How could a human be that strong?!"

"Impossible!! The great Sea God would not lose!"

"..."

In the Sea God City, many experts watched on in horror as the Sea God was sent knocked back by Yue Zhong, their eyes filled with disbelief, even despair.

Right at that moment, 2 top beauties of the Mermaid Clan, both of them Type 7 existences, came out from hidden corners of the temple and raised their staff at Yue Zhong.

2 bright beams of blue light shot forth, coiling around Yue Zhong

like ropes, and began to absorb him of his strength.

The staffs in the hands of those 2 Type 7 Mermaids were old ancient weapons and were called Devil-Suppressing Chains. They were extremely hard to deal with, once caught, the strength of the captive would be sapped quickly.

The strength of this particular treasure was unrivaled, and while it might not be effective against Type 9 existences, most Type 8 powerhouses were still susceptible to the ropes. This was one of the trump cards of the Sea God City.

The Sea Clan had occupied such a treasure trove, and within the seas, they had obtained countless treasures of the past. That was how they were able to develop so fast. Otherwise, even with their innate talent and potential, it was impossible to reach the Type 8 realm in such a short time.

"Break for me!"

The moment he was caught in those ropes, he frowned, and with a furious roar, he struggled and the innate strength of his Third Order God-Devil Body burst forth. The ropes were instantly ripped apart, breaking into pieces, while he sliced out with his hands, and 2 energy blades cleaved down on both Type 7 mermaids, killing them immediately.

As he was engaged with them, the Sea God pulled out a strange stone engraved with runes with a pale expression.

"Damn you, Yue Zhong, you forced me to!! Break the seal!!" The Sea God gritted her teeth and threw the stone towards the seabed.

The moment the stone landed on the ground, it was absorbed into the soil.

The next moment, a powerful aura surge out from the temple and caused the Sea God City to shudder.

The protection of the Sea God City broke apart, and the surrounding seawater surged into the city, threatening to engulf

everything.

The ground of the Sea God City began to crumble and split apart, as a huge Wyrms-Dragon's head of about a kilometer in length started to emerge, exuding a terrifying aura.

The moment that half-step Mutant Wyrms-Dragon appeared, the entire Sea God City started to crumble, and many of the Sea Clan members started to fight to flee. They could sense the terror and might of the half-step Type 9 Mutant Beast, and as long as it meant to, it could slaughter them as easily as breathing.

The Sea God swam up to the half-step Type 9 Mutant Wyrms-Dragon, and spoke, "Glorious Sir Agnis, it is I, Allexia, that released you from your seal. Please honor your vow, and fight for me, to wipe out my enemy!"

The Wyrms-Dragon looked at the Sea God with an indifferent gaze, "So it was you, puny thing, that released me from the seal?"

Chapter 928: Agnis!

Sea God Allexia laughed lightly, "That's right, it was I who has released you from your ten-thousand-year seal."

Agnis closed its eyes, feeling the atmospheric energy, before opening them again. It then turned to look at Yue Zhong, "This is the human you want me to kill?"

When Yue Zhong heard those words, his body turned taut, his fists clenching, as he prepared himself for the worst.

A half-step Type 9 Mutant Beast was truly terrifying. The energy and strength emitting from Agnis were much thicker and powerful than an ordinary Type 9 powerhouse. It was only lacking the comprehension of spatial laws. Otherwise, once it did, it would immediately ascend and be able to dominate other Type 9 powerhouses.

Allexia gritted her teeth and pointed at him, "That's right, I'm ordering you to kill him immediately!"

Agnis turned its gaze to Allexia, back to Yue Zhong, before its huge Wyrms-Dragon head suddenly opened its jaws and snapped down on Allexia without warning.

The Sea God had not expected the terrifying beast she released to suddenly attack her, and without any preparation, she was instantly swallowed by Agnis.

"Not bad, it's been over ten thousand years, to think I can get to enjoy the taste of a Type 8 powerhouse when I'm released! Not bad at all!!" Agnis licked its lips, before laughing insidiously, "Releasing me, and you think you can order me around like a dog? Little mermaid, you lack the qualifications to want to be my master."

"The Sea God is dead!!"

"Heavens, the mighty Sea God is dead!"

"..."

Seeing Allexia consumed by the half-step Type 9 Mutant Wyrmdragon, the Sea Clan members were all fearful, their morale and faith crumbling. In that instant, they all tried to flee.

Yue Zhong himself also had a cold look, as he retreated slowly and quietly.

Although Agnis had launched a sneak attack, to be able to kill the Type 8 Allexia in a split second, it proved that he was indeed strong. Even if he were to show all his trump cards, it was unlikely that he could overcome this Mutant Beast.

Agnis turned its gaze towards Yue Zhong as it drawled, "Human, what's your name? There's no need to retreat, I bear you no ill intentions. Unless you offend me first, I will not treat you like an enemy."

Yue Zhong responded respectfully, "I'm Yue Zhong, Senior Agnis."

This Agnis was an old, undying freak, who had been sealed for ten thousand years. Its strength was horrifying, and it should be privy to the secrets of the world. It was what Yue Zhong came for anyway, being respectful would not harm anyone.

Agnis stared at Yue Zhong and asked, "Is the world undergoing a mutation again?"

Yue Zhong asked curiously, "Again? It's true that the world is mutating. Senior, in the past, could this world have undergone a change before?"

There was a strange glint in Agnis's eyes, as it reminisced about the past, "That's right. Ten thousand years ago, this world had undergone a mutation once, as most of the bright and prosperous civilizations were annihilated, and all intelligent life forms died then. I had been sealed beneath the sea for 10,000 years as well.

Yue Zhong felt his heart tremble, "That's right, there were

strange ancient weapons turning up recently, it should be the legacies of those civilizations of the past. Even a half-step Type 9 powerhouse like Agnis was sealed, don't tell me the strongest expert then was already at the Type 9 realm, or... even someone who had crossed the legendary Type 10 realm?! However, if there was such an expert, he or she would have dominated Earth. Why is there no sign of such a person?"

Yue Zhong asked, "Senior Agnis, may I ask you about the world and God?"

It was rumored that there was something here beneath the sea that could enlighten one on the secrets of the world. It was apparently this 10,000-year-old Mutant Beast.

When Agnis heard those words, there was a flash of fear in its eyes, as it hesitated before sighing, "I don't know much, to be honest. I only know this, all life forms of the 800 worlds are all just pawns in the cage of God, regardless where you come from. Even a Type 9 powerhouse is just a stronger worm. Only those who cross that realm could gain control of his or her own life."

"Even if ordinary powerhouses cultivated with all their minds and time, they would not be able to breach the Type 9 bottleneck in 10,000 years. Based on what I know, within these 800 worlds, over the last millions of years, there had only been 20 heaven-defying characters that had broken through the Type 9 realm, reaching the legendary Type 10 realm and left the confines of these worlds, heading for some unknown domain."

Yue Zhong's face fell when he heard this, "A million years, and only 20 who broke through?! Seems like it's really tough."

Every single world had been governed by some powerful civilization at some point in time, with plenty of experts. Talents were definitely not lacking. Under such circumstances, to think there were only 20 Type 10 powerhouses. It was an extremely minuscule number.

Agnis's head shook, and revealed a door beneath it, "Beyond these 800 worlds in God's cage, there's a world known as The Great God World. In every world that has a Type 9 expert, or a world that is mutating, there would be a door that leads to the Great God World. There are no limitations on the powerhouses that want to head there. The number of experts there are plenty, and you get all sorts of characters, with numerous resources. There are easily over a thousand Type 9 powerhouses there. There are even some at the peak of the Type 9 realm. The door that leads there is right here. As long you go through it, who knows, you might gain more knowledge from the Great God World."

Yue Zhong looked at the door beneath Agnis, his eyes flashing with a strange glint, but he did not move.

After a moment of consideration, he pointed at the door, and a black light congealed to form a beautiful woman, who entered the gate.

Not too long after that, the beautiful Mech, who was controlled by Bai Yi, came back through the gateway, nodding to Yue Zhong, "It truly is a new world, and the energy seems to be thicker and more powerful than the current mutating Earth."

After getting Bai Yi's confirmation, Yue Zhong smiled at Agnis, "Senior Agnis, can I trouble you to step back about 50 li for the time being?"

Since the gateway was beneath Agnis, if it decided to take a bite at Yue Zhong while he was soaring through it, he would be powerless.

Agnis squinted, and spoke in a voice that was hard to discern if it was amused or annoyed, "You don't trust me?"

Yue Zhong chuckled, "Senior Agnis, it's not that I don't trust you. However, I've never liked to leave my life in the hands of others.

Agnis replied without batting an eyelid, "And if I refuse, what do

you intend to do?"

Yue Zhong spoke in a steely manner, "Then I can only choose to retreat, and come back some other time."

A half-step Type 9 powerhouse was simply too terrifying. If Yue Zhong really swam over, it would be foolish. Agnis had just displayed how quick it was to flip, consuming Sea God Allexia in an instant. It was definitely not kind. Furthermore, Agnis definitely knew that Yue Zhong had the God-Devil Imprint, he was practically like Tang Sanzang to it. If it could consume Yue Zhong, who knew, it might actually evolve into the Type 9 realm. No one could withstand such an allure.

Agnis sighed softly, as it twisted its huge head, and made for the distance, "Alright, since you don't trust me, I can only move away!"

Its body was extremely large, with a single movement, the entire seabed seemed to tremble.

All of a sudden, the ground beneath Yue Zhong split apart, as a single-horned serpent burst out, its teeth sharp and its jaws putrid. It tried to bite down on Yue Zhong.

The speed of the single-horned giant serpent was extremely fast, with the principles and laws of water behind its movement. There seemed to be no water resistance at all, as it reached 20 times the speed of sound. Even a Type 9 powerhouse would find it hard to dodge that bite.

At that instant, Yue Zhong's heart was alarmed and he immediately channeled the God-Devil Domain, forming a powerful region around himself.

He then disappeared with a single thought, reappearing in the God-side of the Domain.

Agnis, whose expression had been friendly earlier, was now savage, as he laughed out maliciously, "God-Devil Domain, as expected, you're an Oracle. You're too wary, kid. Be good and let

me eat you, alright? Like this, we can both be in one body, as I break past the Type 9 realm and become a Type 10 legend!"

Chapter 929: Entering the Great God World!

"I think it would be better for you to die and become the stepping stone for my evolution."

Yue Zhong's gaze turned cold, as the Heaven-Piercing Bow appeared in his hands. With a thought, the holy manifestations of the God Domain quickly surged into his bow, and a powerful arrow congealed before he released it at the head of Agnis.

The moment it was fired out, it absorbed an intense amount of atmospheric energy around, forming a huge pillar as it slammed into Agnis's head.

A bright light radiated out of its head, as a huge energy shield formed and blocked in front of it.

The arrow from the Heaven-Piercing Bow slammed into the energy shield and tore into it easily, and proceeded to slam into Agnis's head. It actually pierced through its head, causing a huge, bloody and gaping wound, as fresh blood splattered everywhere.

After that hit, the God Domain crumbled, while Yue Zhong revealed an exhausted look in his eyes.

The usage of the Heaven-Piercer Bow was taxing on him, if he did not channel all his strength into the arrow, it would not be able to pierce through Agnis's head.

"Not right, it's still not dead!!"

After the arrow penetrated Agnis's head, Yue Zhong did not sense the influx of the life force, and his face fell before he retreated in an explosive manner.

From the seabed, 8 heads that looked like poisonous serpents shot out, their jaws opened wide, attacking Yue Zhong.

Inside the waters, even with Yue Zhong manipulating the atmospheric energy to split the water, his speed could not compare

to those serpents.

In an instant, one of them appeared in front of Yue Zhong, biting at his chest viciously.

With a thought, Yue Zhong conjured an energy shield to appear in front of him.

The snake bit down viciously, crushing the shield, and was barely stopped for a second before it continued towards Yue Zhong.

The energy shield was effective against lower-leveled enemies, but against opponents of the same realm, it was too weak.

The huge snake swallowed Yue Zhong, as well as the other 3 women with him.

"No! I didn't get him, how did he escape?"

As the snake bit down, the rest of the snakes twisted another way, their eyes scanning the area warily.

At that moment, in front of the world gate, there was a tear in space, and Yue Zhong shot out from within, turning into a beam of light as he flew right through it.

Even at his half-step Type 9 realm, Agnis was caught off-guard, and could only stare wide-eyed as Yue Zhong charged right through the gate.

Something strange then happened, the head of Agnis that had been injured quickly regenerated.

"The power of space! He actually can control space to some degree. Unbelievable!" Agnis was a half-step Type 9 powerhouse and could sense the vibrations of spatial laws.

Agnis stared at the gate, its eyes flashing with a strange glint, "That was definitely not his own strength. That means to say, he has a spatial treasure. That's great! In order to exit from the Great God World, he has to pass through this door, I just have to wait here, and eat him when he gets back. Like that, the spatial treasure

on him would become mine. With that, plus the consumption of this Oracle, I will definitely be able to break through to the Type 9 realm."

As it thought to this point, Agnis sat in front of the gate, and hundreds of serpents burst out from the ground, eyeing the gate with vigilance.

It was true that anyone could pass through this world gate, even a Type 10 powerhouse could make use of this gate to leave the Great God World. However, compared to the Gates of Hell, this gate only allowed life forms not more than 15m tall. Agnis was over hundreds of meters tall, it was impossible for it to pass.

It was due to this limitation, that many giant Type 9 Mutant Beasts could not make use of the gate to invade other worlds, stuck in their worlds.

"Damn it, that half-step Type 9 Mutant Beast was truly vicious, I was almost killed there."

In a breath, Yue Zhong had charged out of the gate. Just as he exited, black qi poured out from his wounds, as he swayed and fell to the ground.

On his waist, there were a few bloody holes, as black qi came gushing out, while tainted blood flowed out as well.

Although he had used the spatial powers of the Radiant Battleship to escape death, he had truly been bitten by Agnis, and the blackened blood was flowing without stop.

The teeth of the Mutant Beast were sharp were incredibly poisonous that could kill even a Type 8 powerhouse. If it was not for Yue Zhong's physique having been transformed by the God-Devil Body, and his blood changed into the golden blood which was full of vitality, he could have already been poisoned to death. Even so, the incredible poison was enough to make him dizzy.

After passing through the gate, he came to a huge mountain

gorge. He sat down weakly, gasping for breath, as the golden blood continued to flow out. After a while, all the black poison within his body was completely forced out.

At the same time, he waved his hands and sent out numerous nano flies to scout the surroundings.

They were Bai Yi's eyes and ears and could feedback all intelligence and information back to Yue Zhong through her.

The Third Order God-Devil Body was truly impervious to many poisons, to the extent that it was able to force out the poison of a half-step Type 9 powerhouse. Had it been any other Type 8 experts, they would be invaded by the poison and turned to a blackened corpse by now.

Once the poison was out, Yue Zhong pulled out a vial of Type 9 Mutant Beast blood to drink, feeling his insides boil. After a while, his energy began to recover swiftly.

The blood essence of a Type 9 Mutant Beast was filled with incomparable power and was a powerful tonic and source of nourishment.

A single drop of it would allow an ordinary human to go through a metamorphosis and improvement in physique. That was how precious it was.

After fully recovering, Yue Zhong quickly got to his feet, observing his surroundings, before heading out.

The path was long and narrow, going for about 80 km. They continued walking until they finally exited the path.

The exit was on top of a mountain range that was over 8,000m in height, and it seemed as though they were touching the clouds. Yue Zhong stood there and swept a glance below, using his eyes with the God-Devil Body to observe and he could see that about 10km below, there was a human city, with human-like figures entering and exiting the city.

He flickered and flew down towards the city.

He had just flown forwards about a dozen meters, when suddenly, out of a cave along the mountain wall, there was a huge horde of black Mutant Bugs the size of palms, with sharp stings and powerful jaw pincers, that rushed out at Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong glanced at the horde of bugs and frowned. With a thought, a huge force pressured down on the bugs.

The moment they were enveloped by the pressure, they were squashed together. However, there were some of them who were struggling wildly, without any signs of being injured.

Yue Zhong looked at them in shock, "What?! Their resistance and defense are really high!"

After all, Yue Zhong might have just thrown out a casual grab, but his grab could easily flatten a Type 7 Mutant Beast. Such a strike was actually unable to wipe out the Mutant Bugs, their defense was truly terrifying.

Following that, even more Mutant Bugs were flying out from the cave towards him.

"Since I can't crush you, I'll suck your blood, it should do the trick."

He swept them a glance, and the blood radiance shot out, enveloping them.

The blood radiance was evidently the bane of these Mutant Bugs, as the moment they came in contact, their blood was absorbed dry, and they started to fall out of the sky like raindrops.

In just a few breaths, the blood radiances had absorbed the bugs cleanly, turning them into dry husks.

After wiping out all the Mutant Bugs, there was suddenly a roar of rage, as a shadow flashed out and slammed towards Yue Zhong, At that moment, there was a flash of a blade, as a cold light sliced towards his head.

Chapter 930: Type 8 Mutant Bug!

Yue Zhong used all of his strength, and arched his body back, as the terrifying blade sliced past his chest, causing a deep gash where one could see the bone and blood was flowing.

With a thought, he activated his God-Devil Domain once more, and a huge region of about 60 km was enshrouded by his domain.

At the next moment, he willed it and retreated about 5 km, standing within the God Domain. His gaze swept out at the entity that had launched a sneak attack on him.

That life form that almost sliced Yue Zhong in half was a huge Type 8 Mutant Bug that had a pair of wings, forelimbs like praying mantis, pincers like ants, with thick and power locust-like legs. As it stood straight, it towered at 2 meters.

The moment the bug was shrouded by the Devil Domain, it was immediately assaulted by the devilish energy, and its speed was instantly reduced.

The countless demonic manifestations and devils were rushing at the Type 8 Mutant Bug, lunging for it, and biting whatever area they could.

The Mutant Bug struggled frantically, killing any devils that it could, and the entities continued to disintegrate as it rampaged.

Unfortunately, the manifestations were limitless, as they continued to form and attacked the Mutant Bug.

As the Devil Domain continued to assail the Mutant Bug, within moments, it was already riddled with injuries. It used all its strength to struggle, but no matter how, it was still being attacked viciously.

As it struggled and fought back, slamming everywhere with all its might, it slaughtered many of the manifestations in a bid to escape the domain. It was to no avail, as the numbers continued to grow,

while the edge of the Domain was not so easily broken.

After a dozen breaths, the Mutant bug was already overwhelmed by the demons and devils, falling helplessly.

Since Yue Zhong had reached the Type 8 realm, his Domain had become as powerful as well. It was able to kill Type 8 powerhouses now. The Type 8 Mutant Bug was only at the initial-Type 8 realm, with speed being its strongest point. The moment it entered the Devil Domain, it was suppressed. Had it been a strength-type Beast, it would have fared better. However, an agility-type would suffer under such circumstances.

At that instant, Yue Zhong appeared on top of its body, and slammed down on its head with his fist, instantly turning it into minced meat.

When the Mutant Bug's head was destroyed, a huge source of life force surged into Yue Zhong, nourishing his body.

Kacha, kacha, kacha!

The moment the bug was killed, the entire mountain that had housed the horde of bugs began to crumble, as more Type 8 Mutant bugs began to fly out of the mountain, surging towards Yue Zhong.

In an instant, he was suddenly met with over a dozen Type 8 Mutant Bugs.

If each of these bugs was placed on Earth, they would be able to decimate an entire country, turning into an Overlord-class character. However, in this Great God World, just a mountain itself already contained 13 such beasts.

Due to the huge area that the God-Devil Domain covered, which was over 60 km, within the domain, the Mutant Beasts were charging at him in a frenzy.

At the same time, other Mutant beasts which had not attacked him were enshrouded within as well, and the beasts within the

mountain range began to view him as an enemy.

Countless powerful beasts were charging towards Yue Zhong's location in a frenzy.

"Die!"

Yue Zhong looked at them, a cruel expression flashing in his eyes. His body charged forwards as he appeared in on top of those Type 8 Mutant Bugs like a specter, his right hand punching out at the heads, exploding them one by one.

In the God-Devil Domain, Yue Zhong was basically invincible. In a few moments, he had already taken them out.

The life force continued to fill him up, and it reached the maximum point of the initial-realm, causing him to break through, and reach the mid-Type 8 realm.

Once he reached it, he quickly congealed his Yin-Yang Palm and sent it viciously out at the enraged horde of Mutant Beasts.

The entire mountain range trembled as the huge palm imprint pressed down from the skies, slamming into the horde of Mutant Beasts without mercy.

Under the impact, many of them instantly disintegrated, as numerous sources of life force continued to surge into him.

The others roared in rage, channeling their innate abilities to fight back against the palm, intending to break it.

However, no matter how they struggled, there was no way they could break it, and the entire palm came crashing fully into the ground, turning every single beast underneath it into meat paste.

When the beasts were all killed by Yue Zhong, he absorbed another huge bout of life force.

By the time that the thousands of Mutant Beasts were dealt with, there was only 6 Type 8 Mutant Beasts still struggling within the Devil Domain.

They fought back madly, utilizing 6 different forms of innate abilities, trying to slam their way out of the Domain.

Ice shards, flames, wind blades, lightning, water jets, even stone edges, were all cast and thrown at the Domain, in a bid to break it apart so that they could escape.

However, while the abilities were able to vanquish some of the devils and demonic entities, they could not break through or tear the Domain apart, and could only continue to struggle madly and in futile.

Chapter 931: Rescue!

Yue Zhong's body flashed and appeared on top of one particular scarlet-red, 8m-tall huge ape. He sent a fist down on it and caused its head to explode.

After killing the Type 8 Huge Ape, Yue Zhong continued to flicker through the remaining 5 Mutant Beasts like a specter, sending a fist to each one, directly exploding their heads and absorbing their life force.

Those Type 8 Mutant Beasts were instantly taken out by Yue Zhong, and with a flash of his Storage Ring, the corpses were all absorbed into the ring.

They were ordinary Type 8 Mutant Beasts, and outside of the God-Devil Domain, they could definitely rely on their own strength to take on Yue Zhong. However, since they were caught in the domain, he was able to kill them easily due to their suppressed state.

Only a creature like Agnis would be able to break through the domain with its pure strength.

Inside this mountain range, there were many other Mutant Beasts, and Yue Zhong wiping them out in a short while caused them to be deeply shocked.

Within the domain, he continued to take in the Type 8 life force, some of them weak, some of them strong. The stronger ones among them were near the peak of Type 8, while the weakest was just at the initial Type 8 realm.

The auras of the other Mutant Beasts in the mountain range began to surge, but no one took the initiative to attack Yue Zhong any longer, as they stared at Yue Zhong, while killing any devils and demons that got near them.

Within the horde of Mutant Beasts, there was a rumbling voice

that sounded, "Human, keep your domain. Do you want to make use of it to kill all of us? If that's the case, all the experts of our Raven Valley will treat you as an enemy from now on, and we will go all out to hunt you down."

Hearing that voice, the rest of the Mutant Beasts still shrouded by the God-Devil Domain also released their auras, intending to intimidate him.

Since Yue Zhong reached the mid-Type 8 realm, his combat strength had a huge increase, and it was easy for him to use the God-Devil Domain to suppress over 20 initial-Type 8 Mutant Beasts. He would be able to take on even a peak-Type 8 Mutant Beast now.

However, the current number of Mutant Beasts in his domain was over 50, and if they were to go all out, there was a chance for them to break out of the domain. If both sides clashed, he might perish.

Yue Zhong's mind raced, and quickly retracted the God-Devil Domain to about a 3km-radius, as he announced loudly, "No, I did not intend to make an enemy out of you guys. I acted because they took the initiative to attack me first."

The voice then rumbled out, "In that case, human, please leave. You're not welcome here."

The Raven Valley was the playground of these strong Mutant Beasts, none of those with intelligence would like to share their territory with a human.

Yue Zhong chuckled and turned around, flying far quickly. He could sense the might of a Type 9 existence within the mountain range, and it was currently slumbering. If he were to go too far and antagonize that existence, who could be either cultivating or sleeping, then he might be slapped to death.

In a barren plain, there was a Type 3 Mutant Lone Wolf with a

horn on its head, as well as scales covering its 2m-long body, and it was currently devouring the carcass of a Mutant Deer.

About 20m away from the Lone Wolf, there was a group of 7 young men and women, prowling on the ground. Their rifles were trained on the Type 3 Mutant Lone Wolf.

The leader, a young woman who was wearing a green robe, stared fixedly at the Mutant Beast and waved her hand coldly.

Immediately, the killing intent of the 6 other soared as they fired their guns.

Unfortunately, at the moment they fired, the Type 3 Mutant Lone Wolf leaped to the side.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

Following the gun sounds, although the Type 3 Mutant Lone Wolf had leaped to the side, it was still struck in the abdomen by 2 bullets, causing 2 bleeding wounds.

It was a serious injury, but the Type 3 Lone Wolf had a vicious glint in its eyes, and it disappeared the moment it landed on the ground.

The face of the lead woman changed, as she roared and got on her feet, pulling out a long blade, "Not good! Prepare for battle!"

The expressions of the others also turned ugly, as they quickly leaped up and whipped out their long blades.

At the moment they jumped up, one of the young men let out a piercing scream, as the Type 3 Mutant Lone Wolf had already appeared in front of him, biting down viciously on his throat.

One woman with short, blond hair suppressed her fear, slashing out with her combat blade at the beast, "Go to hell!! Beast!!"

The eyes of the Type 3 Lone Wolf flashed, and it disappeared once more, reappearing in front of the woman, and its sharp claws slashed out, directly decapitating her.

As a Type 3 Beast, the Lone Wolf had a strong close-combat potential. The 7 hunters were all also at the Type 3 realm, but against the beast, there was only death.

When the burly man beside the blond hair girl saw her die, he let out an agonized scream, as he charged towards her corpse, "Annie!!"

In just a second, the Type 3 Mutant Lone Wolf appeared in front of the burly man as well, its claws stretched out towards his throat.

There was a look of fear and despair in his eyes, and he could feel the call of the death reaper beside him.

Peng!

At that time, there was the sound of a clear gunshot, as a wound appeared in the head of the Type 3 Lone Wolf, its body crumpling while in mid-air.

The moment the wolf was killed, the remaining 5 people swiveled, staring at the direction of the gunshot in alarm and caution, noticing Yue Zhong wielding a huge rifle as he walked over.

The leader stared at Yue Zhong and barked out loud, while raising her weapon at him, "Stop!"

The rest also brought their weapons up. In the wilderness, in order to hunt, there had been many cases of slaughter even among teammates, where human nature was unpredictable and dangerous.

Yue Zhong kept his weapon while speaking loudly, "Is this how you treat a benefactor? If it was not for me, you guys would have all died."

Although the rifles of the 5 people could hurt a Type 3 Mutant Beast, it was impossible to leave an injury on Yue Zhong.

When the woman saw Yue Zhong holster his weapon, she heaved

a sigh of relief and waved her hands, signaling for the rest to lower their weapons as well. She then stepped forward to introduce herself, "I'm Aisha, a hunter from Adenia Town. Thank you for your assistance earlier and saving our lives. As per the rules of the wild, this Type 3 Lone Wolf is yours."

One youth behind her spoke out aggrievedly, "Sis Aisha, Annie and Jess had died for this Type 3 Lone Wolf!!"

Aisha frowned and rebuked, "Shut it, Shaq. If it were not for this mister, we would not have been able to best this Type 3 Mutant Lone Wolf, in fact, we would have been its meal."

Hearing that, the rest lowered their heads helplessly. The most important thing about the hunt was always the first strike. If they were unable to take down a Type 3 Mutant Beast in a single strike, then things would usually go downhill. They knew this well. However, it was not comfortable to give away their hunt, even after the cost of 2 of their teammates.

Yue Zhong grinned, "Hello, Aisha, I'm Yue Zhong. I'm a world-traveler. I'm actually in need of a guide as I have just arrived here. You guys keep the wolf, let it be the price of guiding me."

He had been through so many treasuries of different worlds and obtained plenty of Type 3 Nuclei. One single one was nothing to him.

Aisha was elated and replied, "That's great! I'll keep it then. From now on, I will be your guide in Adenia Town!"

Hearing those words, the rest of the soldiers also looked at Yue Zhong more favorably.

To these hunters, a Type 3 Mutant Beast was a decent haul, even if they had to split 7 ways, it was a huge sum of money. It was because of that that they dared risk their lives.

With Aisha's invitation, Yue Zhong followed this troop back towards Adenia Town.

Chapter 932: Giant!

Along the way, they engaged in idle conversation, and Yue Zhong got to know the 5 better.

The leader Aisha, had short golden hair, her skin a healthy wheat color. She had a sexy figure, her legs long and slender. The other young woman on the team was called Xi Jie, an ordinary-looking girl with a full figure and freckles on her face. The other 3 were men, one of them burly and easy-going. That was Haug. Another one had a bald head, and he was extremely skinny, that was Gru. The final one, who had lost his loved one earlier, looking decadent, was called Sid.

Adenia Town was a small town that had a medieval European feel to it. It was a called a town, but in fact, it was as big as a city on Earth, with a huge 15m-tall wall, as well as a huge moat about 10m wide.

On the wall, there were a few huge cannons, embedded with Mutant nuclei as well as covered by numerous runes. A number of soldiers were carrying the same rifle that Aisha was using, as they patrolled around.

At the city gate, a middle-aged soldier greeted the rest warmly, "Aisha, what did you guys get this time?"

Xi Jie hurried to reply with a proud look, "Uncle Magsay, this time, we got a Type 3 Mutant Lone Wolf!!"

"What? A Type 3 Mutant Lone Wolf? Are you lying?"

"It really is Type 3 Lone Wolf!!"

"Aisha and the rest actually hunted a Type 3 Mutant Lone Wolf! Incredible!"

"..."

When the rest all heard that, they gathered around and pointed

at the carcass of the Mutant Lone Wolf while discussing in shock.

Yue Zhong stood one side and observed the humans here quietly. With his perception, he could sense that in this town, the most ordinary of person was at the Type 2 Divine Warrior realm. The soldiers guarding at the gates were all at the Type 3 realm. It was apparent that the humans of this world were much stronger.

However, to these experts, a Type 3 Mutant Beast was still extremely dangerous to deal with. It must be known that if a Type 3 Mutant Lone Wolf were to get wild, it was not too tough for it to kill even a Type 4 Divine Warrior.

Yue Zhong's perception was powerful. With a thought, he had already swept through the entire town and understood the strength of the town completely. Most of the people were at the Type 2 or Type 3 realm. The strongest were 4 Type 5 warriors and 158 Type 4 experts. If it were on Earth, this was a considerable strength. However, in this Great God World, it was just a weak town.

Magsay's gaze landed on Yue Zhong, and he asked Aisha, "Aisha, who is this person?"

Aisha chuckled, "Uncle Magsay, he is Yue Zhong, a world-traveler. He helped us hunt the Type 3 Mutant Lone Wolf."

Magsay revealed a warm smile, "How do you do, welcome to Adenia Town. As long as you abide by the laws of the Holy Sirius Empire, you will be a welcome guest of Adenia Town."

Yue Zhong had already obtained information from Aisha beforehand, Adenia was a small town of the Holy Sirius Empire, with a population of 200,000.

Yue Zhong chuckled, "I will abide by the rules, and not make things difficult for you guys."

Magsay nodded in satisfaction, and let the entire team through.

After entering the town, Yue Zhong saw that the buildings within

the town were indeed in the medieval Western style. The people walking around the town were of different races and skin color, and most of them were wielding rifles on their backs. Even the kids and women had some form of weapons made of Mutant Beast claws.

All around Adenia Town, there were many savage Mutant Beasts. Many of them were even able to leap over the walls or make use of the water and moat to sneak into the town. After a few of such incidences, the people in town were all wiser and wielded their weapons as an added precaution.

Along the way, Yue Zhong also saw many stands, displaying all sorts of nuclei and materials, and the stallowners were calling out and announcing their items passionately.

Aisha and the 4 others entered a miscellaneous stall and quickly brought out the Type 3 Mutant Lone Wolf carcass, in exchange for 300 Sirius Coins.

The 5 of them split the amount into 9 portions, with 4 parts going to the 2 deceased. They then took the remaining 5 and went on their separate ways.

Aisha swept Yue Zhong a look, "Tonight, why don't you come with me. However, let me say this first, if you dare have any funny thoughts, don't blame me for breaking your throat."

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, "Relax, I will not do anything funny."

Aisha was an extremely beautiful woman, however, it was not to the point of world-toppling. Yue Zhong had seen his fair share of beauties, and as long as he willed it, he was able to get a few beautiful women to serve him. There was no need to have designs on Aisha.

"Then that's great!" She snorted, before leading Yue Zhong to her place.

Aisha lived alone in a small 3-storey bungalow. It was not

particularly luxurious, but it was clean, tidy and bright. It was apparent that she loved to keep things neat.

Yue Zhong tried asking, "Aisha, I want to ask. I heard that at the center of this world, there's a sacred place, where all the experts of the world are gathered. Do you know where it is exactly?"

The Great God World was, after all, a place connecting those worlds with a Type 9 expert. In this world, it was filled with secrets and many experts.

Yue Zhong knew nothing about this world, but if he had to guess, there should be some form of a location where such experts would gather, and there would be plenty of technology, weapons, as well as secrets to be obtained.

"There is such a legend." Aisha lowered her head as she thought, before replying, "In the legends, our Emperor of the Holy Sirius Empire used to be an ordinary person. After he entered the world where those Heavenly Gods reside and obtained their pointers, his cultivation improved swiftly. He then led our ancestors through the wilderness and slaughtered their way out, building a huge city, which expanded over time to become the Holy Sirius Empire."

Yue Zhong's eyes brightened up, as he asked hurriedly, "Where is this place where the Heavenly Gods reside, do you know?"

Aisha shook her head, "A lot of people in the Holy Sirius Empire have hoped of getting to that world, but no one has succeeded. I guess that only the Emperor who has lived a thousand years would know where it is."

Yue Zhong was slightly disappointed, but he still relaxed, "There's finally a lead."

He guessed that the place Aisha was referring to was likely where the intersection of the countless worlds laid. The Emperor of the Holy Sirius Empire had likely gone there and made use of the resources to evolve quickly, becoming a powerful expert.

Aisha frowned slightly while reminding him out of goodwill, "Yue Zhong, it is just a rumor. Many have tried to find it to no avail, and had even lost their lives over it."

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, "Thanks for your concern. Anyway, Aisha, where's the location of the palace of the Holy Sirius Empire?"

She thought for a moment before replying, "It's about 3000 li west of our Adenia Town. It's called Hippoa City."

Having obtained the intel he needed, Yue Zhong was relaxed and began to engage in idle banter with her, to better understand the customs of the people here.

To Yue Zhong, a distance of 3,000 li was just a day's journey. After resting a day, he would head there directly.

About 20 li away from Adenia Town, there was a vast barren land. 12 hunters were gathered around a pile of Type 2 Mutant Deer bodies, their eyes filled with joy.

"Haha, 36 deers, this time, we're rich!"

"With this amount, I can rest well for an entire month! Haha!!"

"..."

Just as they were celebrating, there was a rumbling of the ground, as though an entire group of horses was running.

Feeling the shockwave, one hunter turned towards the direction of the sound, and his face turned pale, as he muttered, "Giants... giants!! Many giants!!! Flee!!!"

The rest of the hunters swiveled around, and their faces also turned ashen, their hearts filled with fear.

In the distance, there were a number of savage-looking humanoid creatures, standing about 4 to 6m-tall, their bodies burly and muscular. They were currently running towards the group of hunters.

Their speed was not slow, and although they were huge, their speed was extremely fast. As they ran, it was not much slower than the speed of sound.

"Flee!! Run and notify the base!!"

One hunter turned and screamed, as he headed towards the direction of Adenia Town.

The rest of them also turned pale and quickly fled towards the direction of Adenia Town.

Chapter 933: Man-eating Giants!

There was a strong gust of wind, as an 8m-tall male giant full of muscles suddenly appeared behind a hunter. He reached out and grabbed the hunter in his hands.

The human hunter had a horrified expression, full of despair, as he swiftly pulled out his huge rifle and fired it at the giant, while screaming, "No!! Beast!! Die!!"

Peng!

There were small bullet holes that appeared on the forehead of the giant. The bullets that could pierce even the toughest of hides of a Type 3 Mutant Beast, barely left a peanut-sized scar.

When the giant was attacked, there was a savage look in his eyes. His other hand reached out to grab the head of the hunter, and plucked it with force, pulling it out cruelly in a shower of blood.

After killing the hunter, the giant then threw the rest of the corpse into his mouth and bit down as fresh blood flowed down his mouth.

That particular scene was actually witnessed by another who was fleeing. His face turned pale, and his breathing turned ragged. He increased his pace, but as a result, he tripped over a stone and tumbled onto the ground.

As he fell, he saw another 5m-tall giant coming towards him. In his fear, he started pissing himself, while his eyes were wide with fear and despair. He began to plead and mutter, "No, no don't kill me!! Please don't kill me!! Don't kill me!!"

There was a savage grin on the 5m-tall giant, and he came up to the hunter, grabbing him and threw him into his mouth, crushing him into two.

The Giants continued to run quickly and approached the fleeing hunters, killing them in savage fashion before eating them.

After killing all the fleeing hunters, they reduced their speed to walking, heading towards Adenia Town.

The high-speed movement to any biological life form would take a lot of energy. Their bodies were incredibly huge, and even if their speed was extremely fast, it was not possible to maintain their speed.

Behind those leading the entire group, there was a dense group of them, all gathered together and surging towards the direction they were headed, eliminating everything along their path.

No matter the life form, as long as it was moving, and within their vision, they would be grabbed and thrown into the mouths.

Of the 12 hunters, there was one who had a special movement ability, and he managed to escape their encirclement.

The human hunter charged all the way towards Adenia Town, as he roared out madly, "Man-eating Giants!! There are Man-eating Giants currently on their way here!"

"What?! Man-eating Giants?!"

"Are they coming?"

"Are you kidding?! Man-eating Giants are the most savage and cruel of man-eating entities out there!"

"..."

Hearing the report, the rest of the people at the city gates were in chaos and panic.

Within this Great God World, there were many terrifying beasts, with no shortage of Type 8 Mutant Beasts. However, a Mutant Beast was not likely to leave its territory and wander around. After all, there was plenty of other Type 8 powerhouses, once it leaves, it could easily become prey for others.

With so many powerful entities, as long as humans did not antagonize them, they would not stir trouble with what was

considered ant-like existences to them.

However, there were certain races that loved to prey on humans. These were termed as man-eating races. Among them, the Man-eating Giants were the vilest and foulest of races.

As the hunter finished reporting, there were rumbling sounds from behind, as the first of the giants appeared on the horizon.

When the guards at the gate saw the giants, their eyes flashed fear as they quickly shouted out, "Giants!! The giants are here!! Quick!! Go inform the mayor!! Inform the mayor!!"

The hunter that was still running back to report screamed out with fear and despair, "Save me!! Save me!!!"

Everyone saw clearly, as a huge, 10m-tall giant with disheveled, golden hair rushed up to the hunter, and grabbed him. She ignored his struggle and directly popped his entire body into her mouth, her teeth gnashing together and the hunter died amidst loud bone cracking sounds.

Seeing that cruel scene, the soldiers at the gate were all frightened out of their wits, their faces pale. Many of them even started vomiting.

After swallowing the human cruelly, the golden-haired giant turned her head, revealing a grotesque and twisted smile.

By now, the soldiers screamed out in fear and panic, as they fled into the town. They could only pray that the soldiers on top of the wall could hold off the giants.

The wall commander trembled as he shouted out, "Close the gates, open fire!! Open fire!! Blast those bastards to death!!"

Under the orders of the wall commander, the soldiers on the city wall quickly got into position and began adjusting the magic cannons powered by the Mutant Beast nuclei.

Hong! Hong!

With a flash of the nuclei, the magic cannons began firing out at the oncoming giants, punching them full of holes as fresh blood splattered everywhere.

At the same time, many other soldiers were firing their rifles at the giants, as the bullets rained down upon them.

However, those bullets that could penetrate the scales of Type 4 Mutant Beasts only served to cut out little bullet wounds. They could not even impede their movement.

Under the bombardment of bullets and cannons, 6 15m-tall giants suddenly launched into a charge at the wall. They ran forward with all their might, reaching Mach-6 speed. They reached the city wall in an instant and sent powerful fists blasting towards the magic cannons and human soldiers atop the city wall.

Hong!

The 6 giants were incredible savage, with a slap as though they were swatting flies, they flattened a number of magic cannons as well as the human soldiers controlling them.

The moment the giants rampaged, they instantly caused widespread chaos and panic atop the wall.

Most of the rest of the giants reached the front of Adenia Town, and leaped up with all their strength, easily crossing over the wall.

To these Man-eating Giants, a 15m-tall wall was nothing.

Adenia Town was surrounded by the city wall, but it was never meant to defend against these giants, instead, it had been prepared for low-level Mutant Beasts.

"Help!!"

"Giants are here!!"

"Save me!!"

"..."

The Man-eating Giants leaped into the town, and immediately, there were screams and cries from within.

The people were running around amok like headless flies, their combat strength straw-like in front of these giants.

Right at this time, Xi Jie came barging into Aisha's bungalow, screaming, "Sister Aisha! Something's terrible had happened!! Giants!! Man-eating Giants have invaded the town!! Let's flee quickly!!"

Aisha's face turned pale, as she pulled out her rifle quickly, running out, "What?! Man-eating Giants?!"

"Man-eating Giants?"

Yue Zhong followed closely behind, and with a thought, his strong perception swept out to cover the town, and he could sense the strength emitted from those giants.

Some were weak while others were strong. The bigger ones were obviously stronger. Those at the 3m-height range had the strength of a Type 4 Divine Warrior, while those at the 15m-range were at the Type 6 Divine Warrior realm. There were even some 40m-tall ones, possessing a strength of the Type 7 realm. Some over a hundred meters were at the Type 8 realm.

This horde of giants was easily over hundreds and thousands, of which, those above a hundred meters tall were about 13. This was not a force an ordinary town like Adenia could hope to withstand.

After sensing the strength, Yue Zhong could not help but be shocked, "Strong! These giants, there's actually 13 Type 8 Giants!! This Great God World truly contains experts."

Chapter 934: Type 8 Giant!

A Type 8 expert would easily be an overlord in any world. Yue Zhong had been to the Mech Empire, and within the empire, there were only 8 Type 8 experts.

However, upon reaching this world, just the Raven Valley alone already had so many Type 8 experts. A single clan of Man-eating Giants already consisted of 13 Type 8 powerhouses. It was evident that this world contained so many more Type 8 experts.

After walking out of Aisha's bungalow, what greeted them was a hellish scene. A number of giants were rampaging around Adenia, slapping the buildings and demolishing them, grabbing people and amidst horrific screams, swallowing them.

All of a sudden, Xi Jie looked into the distance, and screamed out, "That's Haug!! No!!!"

In the distance, a 7m-tall giant had grabbed Haug, who was wielding his rifle and directly shoved him into his mouth. With a loud snapping sound, Haug was bitten cleanly in two, as fresh blood and organs came spilling from the side of the giant's mouth. It was incredibly gruesome.

Xi Jie saw her comrade consumed by the 7m-tall giant, and her eyes were filled with fear. Her legs trembled uncontrollably and a puddle of yellow urine came out uncontrollably.

Aisha's eyes revealed a frenzied expression, as she readied her weapon and began firing at the eyes of the 7m-tall giant, "Beast!! Beast!! Beast!! Go to hell!!"

Peng!

With the gun sound, the right eye of the giant went blind, revealing a bloody hole.

The giant twisted to look towards the direction of the gunshot, his face vicious and enraged.

When she was stared at by the giant, Aisha, for all her years of hunting, was instantly enveloped by fear, and goosebumps appeared on her skin. Her legs also began to wobble, and she had no way of moving.

Xi Jie was ashen by now, and crumpled to the floor, trying to crawl away as she sobbed, "Ah!! Don't kill me!! Don't kill me!!"

The giant instantly charged towards their direction madly.

With each movement of the giant, the entire ground trembled. Huge footprints were embedded into the ground, and in 2 breaths of time, he had already reached Aisha, reaching out to grab her, who was still frozen in shock and horror.

Due to his speed, Aisha could not even react fast enough, just watching the giant approach her.

At the moment where she felt a strong despair, there was a flash of a blade, and the right arm of the giant was chopped off, as fresh blood poured out.

The blood of humans and the giants were different. The 7m-tall giant was bleeding black blood, and that murky color was pouring out like a waterfall after its arm was sliced off. It was truly shocking.

The person who had chopped off the giant's arm was precisely Yue Zhong.

After slicing off the giant's right arm, Yue Zhong's Wings of Hope unfolded, and he wielded his alloy blade, charging right atop the giant's head. With a mighty cleave, he sliced around its head, and the entire head of the giant rolled.

The moment the headless carcass fell, a huge source of life energy entered his body.

He relaxed slightly, "Seems like their weak point is their head."

Against Agnis, he had utilized all his strength in order to destroy

its head, but it had not affected anything. Instead, it was still able to retaliate strongly, thus, Yue Zhong had truly learned his lesson.

Aisha saw Yue Zhong killing the giant, and her eyes were filled with shock and excitement, "It's Yue Zhong! He was able to kill a Man-eating Giant?! That is too formidable!!"

"Aisha, go evacuate, I will kill those giants."

Yue Zhong spoke this sentence, and with a flash of his wings, he soared towards the direction of the giants.

Seeing the 7m-tall giant killed instantaneously, 8 other giants who were hunting the humans whirled around and quickly charged after him.

Aisha saw them and screamed out despite her fear, "Watch out!!"

One giant was already hard to deal with, even if all the experts of Adenia were to act, they would have to pay a huge price to hunt a single giant. This time, 8 of them had gone after Yue Zhong. The strongest of Adenia would have perished under such an assault.

At this moment, Yue Zhong transformed into 8 different clones, as they flickered and appeared atop the 8 giants respectively, as the heads of the giants fell in a shower of blood.

Aisha saw this and was shocked, "Strong!!"

After managing to kill the 8 giants, Yue Zhong waved his hands, as his Blood Radiances soared to the sky, before transforming into a huge blood cloud, that rained down upon his enemies, filled with an intense bloodthirsty feel.

As the rain fell and landed on the bodies of those giants, any one of them who was 15m and below were instantly sucked dry of their blood and water, leaving only a dried corpse.

After the blood rain absorbed the blood of the giants, they seeped out of the bodies and floated back into the blood cloud in the sky.

Numerous giants were being assaulted by the insidious blood

rain, and in a short span of time, over 6,000 low-level Giants were already reduced to dried corpses.

"Is this the strength of a human expert? You dare kill our warriors, go to hell!!"

Among the giants, there was a particular one who was over 160m tall, his entire body scarlet red, and he had many runes carved all over his body. He looked at the blood cloud in the sky with a savage glint and spat out at it.

In an instant, a huge pillar of fire burst out towards the skies, aiming for the blood cloud.

As the flames and blood came into contact, there was a sizzling sound, as the size of the blood cloud got reduced, and smoke billowed.

The perfect counter to the Blood Manipulation ability was flame or even lightning, anything that has purifying properties. As long as it was targeted with those abilities, the blood cloud would suffer a decrease in strength.

Under the burning of the flames, the blood cloud was shrinking at a speed visible to the naked eye.

Another giant, who was over 200m-tall, whose body was also covered in runes, and in fact, he looked like his entire body was made of jade. He spoke up, "A-Huo-Gu did well. He is precisely the bane of such an evil art. Once we break through the blood cloud, we will be able to charge through this human town and eat them all!! As for the expert behind this cloud, I will tear off his limbs and watch him struggle in pain, before eating him alive."

This jade-like giant was the largest and tallest among the 13 of the Type 8 giants. He was also the strongest, at the peak of the Type 8 realm, with barely a step into the Type 9 realm.

Another one, who was about 140m, with taut muscles and his entire body looked incredibly lean, as though he was a sharp blade

waiting to be unsheathed, "A pity, there isn't any strong human in such a small, rural town. If we can consume another 10 or so Type 8 humans, A-Huo-Gu should be able to break through to the half-step Type 9 realm."

A-Huo-Gu laughed savagely, "It's not easy to find Type 8 humans. As long as I can consume another 300 Type 7 humans, it will be the same. I want to eat up all of the experts in this human kingdom, I should be able to break through all the same. At that time, we will be able to take on another human kingdom."

The Giants were just like any other species, consuming others to become stronger or replenish their strength. It was due to this that they were a nomad race, constantly wandering around to hunt humans. While other species were nourishment to them, humans were the true ingredients for them to evolve.

Many low-level giants would consume a large number of humans to evolve faster. To these Type 8 giants, there was no point in consuming ordinary humans. They had to devour more powerful experts for there to be some effect.

"All you bastards, go to hell."

Following a spirit-like voice, the entire world seemed to dim, as the Devil Domain enveloped the Type 8 giants, bringing with it a powerful, demonic atmosphere.

The crux of this battle was these 13 Type 8 giants, if they were dead, the rest of the giants would follow suit.

Chapter 935: 3 Giants!

Yue Zhong's appearance was too sudden and caught unprepared, 10 of the Type 8 Giants were instantly caught within the Devil Domain, assaulted by the endless devilish manifestations.

In an instant, Yue Zhong flickered in front of the flame-using giant, his fist punching out on the head of the Giant.

The strength of his Third Order God-Devil Body burst forth, directly causing the head of the flame-using giant to explode in a shower of blood and flesh.

A huge amount of life force was also absorbed into Yue Zhong, as the corpse crumpled to the ground.

At the same time that Yue Zhong launched that sneak attack, the jade-like giant roared out in rage, as a powerful jade Domain appeared around him, shining resplendently with different colors, and blocked the assault of Yue Zhong.

Besides the jade giant, there was one other with blades growing out of him. His eyes flashed dangerously, as a Domain comprising of blades appeared, clashing towards Yue Zhong's God-Devil Domain.

There was also a 180m-tall one whose strength was not that far off from the jade-giant, his face seemed to be made out of stone. With a thought, all sorts of boulders and rocks appeared in a domain around it, smashing against Yue Zhong's God-Devil Domain.

Only the talented of the Type 8 powerhouses could comprehend domains after understanding laws. Among these 13 Type 8 giants, only 3 of them had comprehended domains.

Those who did not, were enveloped by the God-Devil Domain, however, they did not panic. Instead, they started roaring with rage, like wild beasts, as they gathered their strength and started

hammering the edges of the domain.

A Domain might be powerful, but there was a limit. Once the threshold was broken through, then the Domain would crumble as well.

The abilities and powers smashed out at Yue Zhong's domain, causing the demons and devils to dissipate, however, they had no way to breach his God-Devil Domain.

Since he gained the Third Order God-Devil Body, Yue Zhong's God-Devil Domain had become more than a hundred times stronger than it was when he was a Type 7 Divine Warrior. The struggling Type 8 giants were unable to threaten his domain.

'Break for me!'

In an instant, Yue Zhong teleported to a 135m-tall giant, who could channel wind blades. He sent a fist out at his head.

With a loud bang, the wind-manipulating giant had his head destroyed in a shower of flesh and blood.

Although Yue Zhong was small and miniscule to these giants, with his Third Order God-Devil Body, his strength was above these giants, and he was able to explode with a strength more terrifying than them in close-combat.

"Beast!"

Seeing the wind-controlling giant killed by Yue Zhong in a second, another agile giant stepped up, bursting forth with a speed that surpassed most other Type 8 powerhouses, appearing beside Yue Zhong in the next instant.

As Yue Zhong was about to be captured, he willed it and disappeared from his location, and the giant's grasp closed in on thin air.

The next moment, Yue Zhong had already appeared on top of that giant, his gaze cold, as he sent out a powerful fist down on the

head of the giant. It immediately burst the head of the giant apart.

Within the Devil-domain, Yue Zhong could easily teleport to wherever he liked. Inside the domain, he was invincible.

"He can teleport with his domain, everybody, watch out!!"

There was a serious glint in the eyes of the jade giant now, as he roared out and channeled his Jade Domain out at Yue Zhong's God-Devil Domain.

Most Type 8 powerhouses with domains would prefer to use their domains to clash against their opponents, this was the only known method to take down the opponent, by brute force.

If the disparity in strength was huge, the other party might be destroyed in a single hit.

As the 2 domains clashed, the Jade Domain was constantly shrinking. Yue Zhong's God-Domain Devil was not spared either.

The Jade Giant was a peak-Type 8 powerhouse and had understood the principles of jade. Although it was not as strong as compared to Yue Zhong's God-Devil Domain, it was not weak either.

As for the Blade Giant and Stone Giant, the both of them continued to channel their domains to smash against Yue Zhong's God-Devil Domain.

The 3 Type 8 powerhouses set their domains against Yue Zhong's, with both sides slowly wearing each other down.

Yue Zhong ignored the 3 of them, instead, he continued to flicker around like a phantom, taking out the giants one by one by pummeling their heads, bursting their heads.

These giants might be at the Type 8 realm, but within Yue Zhong's God-Devil Domain, they were reduced to single opponents, with no means of gathering and working together, and could only be slaughtered by Yue Zhong one by one.

By the time he was done killing the rest of them, his God-Devil Domain, as well as the domains of the 3 remaining domain-capable giants were all destroyed together.

Their strength was above the rest, and although their domains could not compare to Yue Zhong's, with their joint attacks, they were able to wear Yue Zhong's domain down, at the expense of their own.

"Human, you dare kill our comrade!! Damn you!! I will not let you off!! I will definitely tear you apart and eat you alive!!"

The Jade giant saw the rest of the giants dead by Yue Zhong's side, and his eyes had a vicious glint. He let out an enraged roar that shook the entire region, as he sent a powerful fist containing the laws and principles of jade, towards Yue Zhong. Under that strike, the entire surroundings seem to freeze into a jade-like world.

When the Jade Giant got enraged, his combat strength was stirred to the maximum potential, and the region around him transformed, allowing him to reach the height of his power.

In the Giants' clan, any Type 7 and above giant would already possess human-like intelligence, but only the Type 8 ones would refer to one another as comrades.

Their group had developed for so long, and only managed to produce 13 Type 8 giants. In an instant, 10 of them had been annihilated by Yue Zhong, causing the Jade Giant to go into a fit of rage.

Against that attack, Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, as he controlled the Wings of Hope to flap once. The energy around him stirred, and he disappeared from his position, dodging that punch by the Jade Giant. He then appeared on top of the Blade Giant, sending out a fist at his head.

"You want to kill me? Not so easy!! Break!!"

The Blade Giant roared out in indignation, and his killing intent soared. Without any intention of dodging or evading, right at the moment Yue Zhong got close, a powerful blade shot out from him, bursting towards Yue Zhong.

In that short distance, facing that dangerous attack, Yue Zhong basically had no way to evade or dodge. His eyes flashed with a serious glint, and he twisted his body, controlling the Wings of Hope to soar slightly up, as he sent a fist towards the head of the Blade Giant.

A powerful strength burst forth, and the head of the Blade Giant also burst apart. However, it was not before he had summoned his strength to sent out a sharp blade from his head, while locking the space, to slash out at Yue Zhong, preventing him from escape.

At the most critical moment, Yue Zhong's left shoulder tensed, as a huge shield appeared in front of him.

The blades of the Blade Giant slammed into the shield, causing a huge sound of impact. Under the imbued power of laws, the bone blade sliced through the shield after barely one second of being stopped, as it continued and sliced through Yue Zhong's left arm. Golden blood began to flow from his wound.

Making use of that opportunity, Yue Zhong quickly flashed away.

When the Stone Giant saw how the Blade Giant was killed in an instant, he could not believe his eyes and was shocked, "How is that possible? A-Ren-Gu was so strong that his laws could even injure a Type 9 expert. How could this human be able to withstand it?! How is he so tough?!"

The Blade Giant was also one of the most heaven-defying geniuses of their generation, and while it was only at a height of 140m, it already possessed combat strength of a high-Type 8 powerhouse. Also, with his comprehension of a domain and his blade technique, he could injure a Type 9 powerhouse easily. Yet, his strongest strike had been unable to kill Yue Zhong. This was

the reason for his shock.

The Jade Giant roared out once more in grief and rage, disappearing from his position, and reappearing behind Yue Zhong's back. He sent a fist towards Yue Zhong while yelling, "Do not fear, A-Yan-Gu, he is an Oracle. As long as we consume him, we can possibly evolve into the Type 9 realm."

The Stone Giant also leaped forward, his own fist carrying stone laws, turning the surrounding into stones, intending to capture Yue Zhong.

The 2 of them joined hands, their power bursting out, locking everywhere around them, preventing Yue Zhong's Wings of Hope from flying away.

Against this joint attack, Yue Zhong revealed a cold look. Without retreating, he shot forwards and sent a Yin-Yang Palm, causing an entire palm to materialize, capable of blocking the sky, as it slammed downwards at the 2 giants.

Chapter 936: Defeating the Giants!

Hong!

Following a powerful blast, the ground shattered apart, as the resulting shockwave spread outward. The punches that were filled with the laws of jade and stone directly fell apart, and the remaining force dispersed.

When the remaining force from jade-laws touched the ground, the region transformed into jade as well as stone, from the resulting stone-laws as well. Many giants could not dodge in time, and were turned into jade-sculptures, or stone-hard statues.

As for the Jade Giant and the Stone Giant, the both of them were struck by the recoil, and spat out a mouth of blood.

Yue Zhong's Yin-Yang Palm was also scattered, while his person was sent flying about a few hundred meters. He spat out a mouthful of gold blood. At the same time, the left side of his body began to petrify, turning into jade, while the right side, stone.

He flashed and charged towards the skies, and brought out a vial of Type 9 Mutant Beast blood to gulp down, "Damn it!! These giants are truly difficult to deal with!"

Any one of the 13 giants, even the Jade Giant, Yue Zhong had the confidence to deal with them one by one, without exerting too much energy.

However, if any of them were to join hands, the threat they represented was very different. Yue Zhong had already killed 11 of them, and he was already expended. Facing the combined efforts of the Jade Giant and Stone Giant, there was no guarantee that he could walk out unharmed.

"He definitely cannot be allowed to escape!! If he flees, the next time he appears will be our death!! Quick, chase and kill him!!" The Jade Giant's face fell, as he roared out in rage. The atmospheric

energy gathered around him and he stepped into the air, turning into a beam of light as he chased after Yue Zhong.

This time, the 2 Giants were able to injure Yue Zhong gravely, it was because Yue Zhong had expended so much of his energy to kill the other 11 giants. If he was allowed to recuperate, they would likely suffer. After all, the combined 3 domains of the Giants could not even dominate Yue Zhong's God-Devil Domain. If it were just the two of them, no matter how they tried, they would not be able to flee from the domain.

The Stone Giant also quickly channeled the atmospheric energy and stepped through the air, chasing after Yue Zhong like his life depended on it.

Both sides were on a hunt, and quickly travelled more than 60km.

After Yue Zhong finished that vial of blood essence, his strength quickly recovered, and the slowly hardening sides of his body ceased, as he sent out a force to shatter them.

At that instant, he suddenly turned around, and executed the God-Devil Domain once more, directly enveloping the 2 giants.

When they were caught in it, the eyes of the Jade Giant flashed with fear, as he roared out madly, "How?! We broke your domain!!! How could you cast it so fast again?!"

A domain was a huge part of a Type 8 expert's strength. Once it was broken, then the Type 8 powerhouse would usually suffer some form of a backlash and be weakened over a period of time, unable to cast it.

Only a domain could counter another domain, and the Jade Giant was unable to execute his domain within such a short period of time. The moment they were caught in Yue Zhong's God-Devil Domain, there was only death.

"You can take your questions with you to death!"

A cold glint flashed past Yue Zhong's eyes. In that instant, he appeared on top of the Jade Giant, and sent a fist down on his head.

"You can't kill me!!! Turn into jade for me!!"

Bellowing out in rage, the Jade Giant began to channel his energy comprising of jade laws, causing a huge jade plate to appear, as he merged into it, and charged towards Yue Zhong.

With a thought, Yue Zhong reappeared on top of the Stone Giant, and his fist continued down towards the head of the Stone Giant.

"So hard!!"

Following a huge impact, Yue Zhong's fist slammed into the head of the Stone Giant, his immense strength bursting forth, causing a 1m-deep hole in his head, as parts of the giant shattered, but it was not enough to kill him in one blow.

There was something both giants had in common, which was that their defenses were powerful, even Yue Zhong could not possible kill them off at one go.

The Stone Giant roared out, as his strength burst forth, both hands grabbing his head. Stones began to surge out from his body, replenishing the wound that Yue Zhong caused, "I will not die!!"

The 2 giants did not waste any more energy to attack, instead, devoting it to strengthening their defenses. Their combat experience was rich, and they knew the stronger the domain, the more taxing on the user. Yue Zhong's God-Devil Domain was definitely powerful, and it was impossible for it to be maintained it for long.

Yue Zhong had a strange glint in his eyes, "Stone Giant and Jade Giant, I can offer you a way out. Submit to me, work for me, and I will not pursue whatever you've done in the past. If you reject, then there'll only be death."

A crafty look passed in the eyes of the Jade Giant, as he pretended

to hesitate, and did not say anything. The Stone Giant also fell silent.

"Not replying, that means you're not interested. Since that's the case, you might as well die!"

Yue Zhong saw them keeping quiet and did not bother waiting. With a thought, he stepped into the God Domain, as the angelic beings and holy manifestations went into his body, his strength surging and reaching the high-Type 8 realm.

After that, he retracted the God-Devil Domain, and sent out the Flames Domain, as the 2 giants found themselves suddenly enveloped by powerful flames.

The Flame Domain was the strongest in terms of offense, and against the 2 giants, whose defenses were perversely high, it was the perfect counter.

While in terms of might, the God-Devil Domain might be stronger than the Flame Domain, but the consumption was too high. Furthermore, it was not as concentrated on damage as compared to the Flame Domain, which sought to incinerate everything and anything.

The moment the 2 giants were enveloped by flames, they felt their bodies turning red, as crackling sounds occurred.

The Jade Giant's face turned in horror, "This is a Flame Domain!! Flee!!"

The Jade Giant gathered his energy and tried to charge out of the domain. After all, the Flame Domain did not have a sealing ability like the God-Devil Domain.

The Stone Giant also readied himself, preparing to charge out.

However, at that instant, Yue Zhong, who was enveloped with the God-Devil Flames, had already soared in front of the Stone Giant, and he charged straight at him in the form of a blazing pillar.

Hong!

Following a terrifying explosion, the Stone Giant was actually blasted apart in multiple pieces, as well as countless shards, and a huge life force went into Yue Zhong.

After destroying the Stone Giant, Yue Zhong's Wings of Hope appeared in a flash, and he shot towards the Jade Giant.

As he reached the air space above the Jade Giant, there was a crazed look in his eyes. The Jade Giant roared out at him, "Damn human, let us perish together then!!"

In that instant, the Jade Giant began to detonate his jade laws, and a powerful explosion occurred, blasting outwards.

"Damn bastard, he actually self-detonated!!"

Facing that sudden suicidal attack, Yue Zhong's face changed. He brought up his remaining right arm to block in front of him, while the Wings of Hope churned quickly to bring him backward.

There was a bright bloom of a cloud in the shape of a mushroom, as everything within a dozen li was covered by countless jade pieces.

Under that resplendent light, the entire region turned into jade, and every single living thing caught in the radius became jade sculptures.

After the cloud dissipated, there was a sculpture that fell from the sky, landing on the ground, and causing a huge ditch.

It was precisely Yue Zhong himself, and half his body was already petrified into jade. The residual jade laws and energy were still trying to invade his body, and everything below his waist had already transformed into jade.

He took in a deep breath, gritting his teeth, as he took out another huge container of Type 9 Mutant Beast blood, downing it, "Damn it!! That damn Jade Giant was a mess to deal with. Even in

death, he cost me so much!"

As he absorbed the energy from the blood, he forcefully repressed the invasion of the jade energy, however, within a short span of time, he could not purge out the jade energy from his legs.

That Jade Giant was almost half-step into the Type 9 realm. His self-explosion was indeed terrifying. Had it been anyone else, they would have been killed or turned into a jade sculpture. Even a Type 9 powerhouse would not get out of it unharmed. The fact that Yue Zhong was still living was incredible.

"I wonder how Adenia Town is doing?"

He willed it, and a handful of nano-mechanical cells came out from his right hand, enveloping his legs, forming 2 mechanical legs. Once they were formed, he quickly shot back towards the direction of Adenia Town.

Chapter 937: Wiman!

Along the way, many dead giants could be seen, each and every one of their corpses dried and emaciated, having been killed by the blood cloud.

The rain cloud was like a pesticide, killing a huge number of the giants. However, there were still a few powerful Type 6 giants who were still surviving and wandering around.

The blood rain might be effective against the low-level giants, but hardly against those high-level giants.

Since the 13 Type 8 giants, who were the leaders, had been killed, the rest of the giants fell into chaos. Some of them charged towards Adenia Town, continuing to rampage, while others separated and fled for their lives.

As Yue Zhong made use of the mechanical limbs to support himself back to Adenia town, he noticed that the chaos was still present, and most of the human survivors were already evacuating.

Inside the town, a dozen giants were still hunting down humans, as they gobbled up their unfortunate victims one by one.

Yue Zhong controlled the Blood Manipulation to contain the rain outside of Adenia town. Had he not done that, then Adenia Town would have been a dead town, and no one could have survived.

If he controlled it himself, it was possible to prevent the rain from culling human lives. However, as he had to focus on the Type 8 giants, the rain had no way of discerning friend from foe.

The remaining human soldiers were being led by some of the experts of the town to hunt down the other low-level giants.

One 4m-tall giant was walking along the streets of the town, when suddenly, it stopped in its tracks and came up to a house. He then slapped the roof away, revealing a mother-daughter pair

within.

The 2 ladies were shivering in fear, as the giant's expression contorted to reveal a savage grin, and he reached out to grab them.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

All of a sudden, there was a burst of gunfire, as the bullets punched into the body of the giant, instantly creating thousands of holes on his body.

The giant whirled around, seeing a burly man charging out at him with a 2m-long alloy blade, slashing down at his head. In a splatter of black blood, the giant's head was chopped off and rolled to the ground.

The burly, middle-aged man swept the mother and daughter pair a look of concern, "Are you guys alright?!"

The mother cried out, thanking the man, "We're ok! Wiman, we're ok, thanks to you!! Thank you!!"

Wiman spoke in a low voice, "You guys had better escape too. We're not a match for these giants. We can only buy some time for Y'all."

Wiman was the top expert of Adenia Town, although he could easily kill a 4m-tall giant, there were too many stronger giants out there in Adenia Town. Each of those who were above 10m in height could easily kill him. Not to mention that there were some over 50m.

Those taller than 50m had the ability to cause massive destruction to Adenia Town.

Hearing Wiman's words, the mother and daughter quickly scrambled out of their house, heading for the outside of town.

Right at this time, there was a scream of horror, "Help!! Wiman, help!!"

Wiman turned around, only to see his good friend grabbed by a

30m-tall giant not far away, who was about to toss him into his mouth.

The dozens of guards of the town were wielding their weapons firing madly at the giant, and the bullets struck his body, to no avail, unfortunately.

The giant then placed Wiman's good friend in his mouth, closing it with a loud crunching noise as he swallowed it amidst a savage grin.

When the rest of the soldiers witnessed this cruel scene, they were all pale from fear.

Many of them turned immediately, throwing their weapons aside, fleeing to the distance madly. Their fighting spirit was thoroughly broken.

Wiman's eyes were filled with despair and rage, as he led the experts beside him charging towards the giant while roaring, "No!!! Altair!!"

The 20 elites beside Wiman followed him as they charged at the giant.

The 30m-tall giant laughed savagely, turning his body and running right at Wiman. His strength was fearsome, and by running at full speed, he was able to reach 6-times that of the speed of sound.

At almost a split second later, the giant had already appeared in front of Wiman mysteriously, reaching out to grab him.

With a loud crack, the giant squeezed with strength, and there was a loud cracking sound of bones breaking from Wiman's body.

"Let Wiman go!!"

The other human elites quickly rushed at the giant, letting out furious roars.

The giant looked at the humans running towards him and he

smiled savagely, slapping out with his left hand, sending one of them flying, smashing into walls, turning into a pile of mashed meat from the impact.

Seeing their comrade's gruesome death, the rest came to a halt, their bodies trembling from fear, with no courage to get closer.

In front of this giant, they were truly ant-like existences.

After slapping the human in front of him to death, the giant smiled viciously at Wiman, opening his huge and smelly mouth, intending to bite down on him.

Wiman stared at the mouth in despair and fear, he had never been so close to death before.

At the moment right before he was placed into the mouth, there was a bright flash of light that slammed through the head of the giant, bursting it apart.

The moment he died, Wiman fell out of the slackened grip, as he turned to look towards the direction of the white light.

"Uncle Wiman, are you alright?!"

Under his astonished gaze, 2 young women wearing enhanced Mech armor, wielding A-Grade Particle Cannons came running towards him. They looked like futuristic soldiers.

Wiman stared at the 2 familiar girls and asked with slight disbelief, "Aisha, Xi Jie, is it you?"

As the top expert in Adenia Town, Wiman had also trained Aisha before. He knew her well and knew that before today, she definitely did not possess such equipment.

Aisha spoke somewhat proudly, "It's me!"

Wiman asked curiously, "Aisha, how did you guys get this equipment? It doesn't look like anything from our Adenia Town."

The other soldiers who had been trembling with fear and helpless earlier had looks of envy, as they stared at the equipment

of the 2 ladies. They could tell that they were extraordinary.

Aisha and Xi Jie had only been ordinary Type 3 hunters prior to this, however, with that equipment, they could blast a 30m-tall giant to death. The might of the equipment was apparent.

"Yue Zhong gave these to us!" Aisha replied quickly, before frowning, and said, "Uncle Wiman, we're going to hunt the remaining powerful giants. We'll leave the lower-level ones to you guys."

Wiman replied swiftly, "Alright, rest assured, we'll handle the low-level giants."

He and his team had confidence in dealing with the giants lesser than 10m-tall.

As they were about to go on their separate ways, Wiman asked suddenly, "Aisha, who is Yue Zhong?"

He was wary of someone who could take out such advanced technology. To have a random powerhouse with such equipment appear without any reason, it was hard for him not to suspect Yue Zhong.

Aisha frowned, when suddenly she felt a feeling, and looked towards the distance at a 70m-tall giant, pointing, "Uncle Wiman, look for yourself, that's Yue Zhong."

Wiman and the rest of the elites of Adenia Town turned to look at the giant, only to see Yue Zhong walking through the air, in an instant appearing atop the giant's head and punching downwards.

With a loud blast, the head of the giant burst apart in a shower of blood.

"Holy!!! Is that a human?!"

"Monster!!! He must be a monster!! He actually killed a 70m-tall giant in a single punch!!"

" ... "

Wiman and the rest saw this and were shocked beyond disbelief. Their gazes were fixed upon Yue Zhong, only to see him flickering continuously, appearing on top of the giants above 50m, and with each punch, he took out one giant. Their heads would burst apart, turning into a pile of minced meat.

Wiman watched Yue Zhong kill those giants, as he let out a long breath, with a complicated gaze, "Too strong. To kill such powerful giants so easily, only the legendary Emperor could do so. Seems like Yue Zhong's strength is on par with the Emperor."

Chapter 938: Jody and Lina!

The moment Yue Zhong acted, the remaining giants in Adenia Town were killed quickly.

Even if he was fighting with his mechanical makeshift limbs, the lower-leveled Type 7 giants were not his match.

After wiping them out, the town people began to stream back into their homes under the guidance of the mayor.

Within the mayor's home, the mayor, Visni greeted Yue Zhong respectfully, "Mr. Yue Zhong, thank you for acting to save us. This is a small token of appreciation, please accept it."

After those words, the soldiers beside brought out a number of chests, revealing piles of gold that could turn a man blind with greed.

When Aisha and Xi Jie saw the gold in the chests, their breathing became haggard and their eyes shone with desire. They had never seen such wealth in all their lives.

Yue Zhong swept a look at the chests, grinning slightly, and with a wave of his hands, a bout of energy whisked them all up, channeling them into his storage ring.

He waved his hands once more, as he gathered a few thousand coins, forming 2 huge piles in front of Aisha and Xi Jie each, "These are yours. You guys had done quite a lot for the town as well."

To Yue Zhong, the gold was not of much use, after all, he did not plan on settling down here.

Xi Jie immediately grabbed the fortune in front of her, her eyes flashing with delight, as she laughed out in excitement, "Oh my God!!! I'm rich!!! Sis Aisha!!! I'm rich!!! Haha!!!"

Aisha looked at her own pile, her eyes also harboring hope.

However, she controlled her own greed, as she spoke to Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, I hope to make use of the gold to purchase the set of equipment you loaned us earlier."

The equipment was a powerful mech armor, and she was in love with it. If she could have such a suit, then she was invincible within the town.

Visni also swiftly spoke up, "Mr. Yue Zhong, I also hope to purchase a few sets of equipment from you. Please state a price, and Adenia Town will do its best to fulfill your requirements."

The Great God World was truly cruel, with numerous savage beasts and all sorts of monsters. One could only feel safe with a strong backing or capital.

Yue Zhong was able to allow those 2 Type 3 experts kill Type 6 giants. That equipment was extremely alluring to Visni, if he could get his hands on a few, their town would be bolstered by a lot.

Yue Zhong rejected it instantly, "I'm afraid not, I only have about 10 of that equipment."

Hearing those words, Aisha and Visni had a disappointed look.

Visni then spoke, "Since that's the case, forget it. However, I have one more request that I hope Mr. Yue Zhong might be so kind as to agree."

Yue Zhong arched his brows, "What is it?"

This time, Yue Zhong had killed off the giants in the town, and one of the more important reasons was that there were Type 8 giants among the invaders. He could hunt Type 8 giants to power up, and it was not too much of a trouble for him, that was why he was willing to act. If he was requested to stay in the town to guard them over a long period, he was not willing.

There was an expectant look on Visni's face, "Mr. Yue Zhong, since you already defeated the invading giants, we should not be bothering you further. However, these giants are a group that

band together and are incredibly vicious. Since so many of them had died here, there would be even more giants coming to attack us. We hope that you can stay here to help us."

If they had such an expert protecting Adenia Town, then they were sure to be safe.

Yue Zhong frowned, and rejected coldly, "Sorry, I'm just passing by. I will be leaving soon. I can't stay long. You had better evacuate the people towards the capital. They should send men to protect you right?"

Yue Zhong had too much on his hands back on Earth, and he would not stay in this small town to be a bodyguard.

Hearing those cold words, everyone's face fell. Without him, there was no way they could defend against any of the giants.

Visni had a perplexed look, as he asked, "Mr. Yue Zhong, will you reconsider?"

If the inhabitants of the town had to move, then most of them would lose a lot of their assets. Along the way to the capital, it was not as if the route was entirely safe. If there were other man-eating species, then they would be at risk of being wiped out too.

Yue Zhong stood up to walk out, "I've made my decision. Goodbye, Mayor Visni."

Seeing Yue Zhong leave, Aisha and Xi Jie quickly took up their gold and made to leave, chasing after him.

Aisha looked at Yue Zhong, her eyes flashing with a strange look as she asked, "Yue Zhong, are you really not staying?"

Yue Zhong had saved her life and was the hero of Adenia Town. In her heart, she was already starting to have feelings for him.

He replied solemnly, "No, I have things I need to do."

She fell into silent thoughts at that.

"Ah! That's...!"

Just then, Yue Zhong lifted his head abruptly and looked toward the distance, his eyes flashing strangely.

In the skies, there was a fleet of 12 battleships that were flying towards them, each of them strange in shape, and had different sizes.

Among them, 10 of them were more than a thousand meters long and had numerous particle cannons. They were surrounding 2 others which were over tens of thousands of meters long, which had a main cannon each. The main cannon was over 30m large in diameter, carved with strange runes, and exuded a powerful pressure.

The direction of the 12 battleships was Adenia Town. They were flying fairly fast, at over 3 times the speed of sound, and were soon above the town itself.

The battleships then opened their doors, revealing hundreds of human soldiers who were equipped with mech armor and wielding particle cannons.

These soldiers were flanking 2 young men and women, who were being treated in high esteem, as well as guarded by over 30 powerful experts in mech armor. They soared out on a mechanical platform, looking elegant and noble, with a hint of pride in their bearing.

They were both sporting golden hair, their bodies and looks exquisite. The female had an alluring figure, and her skin was fair and smooth, with a beautiful face.

There was a rumbling voice that announced their arrival, "The great Prince Jody and Princess Lina have arrived!"

Once the voice sounded, Visni immediately came out of the mayor's house, staring at the 2 esteemed royalty with a look of idolization and excitement on his face. He fell to his knees and bowed, as he spoke in a clear voice, "Visni greets His Highness and

Her Highness. For the both of you to grace Adenia Town with your presence, it is our eternal pleasure and honor. Long live Sirius Empire!!"

"Long live the great Holy Sirius Empire!!"

"The Emperor did not abandon us!!"

"This is great, the great Emperor did not abandon us!"

"Long live the great Holy Sirius Empire!!"

"..."

Hearing that voice, all the survivors of Adenia Town looked up at the 2 royals that had arrived, their eyes filled with the same fervor and excitement.

At this critical moment, when the danger has yet to pass, the Prince and Princess had actually visited, which gave the inhabitants of the town higher morale, and their favorable impression of the royal family increased.

Yue Zhong took a look at them, his eyes filled with a strange glint, "Are they from the Sirius Empire then? Good timing."

He had originally intended to head to the capital to find the emperor, to enquire about the point where the worlds met. If he could gain the information from the 2 royalty in front of him, then he had no need to head there.

Jody descended from the sky, asking Visni with somewhat an urgent tone, "Visni, where is the hero that dealt with those Man-eating Giants?"

In Adenia Town, there was equipment capable of long distance communication. In fact, every town and city of the Holy Sirius Empire had some form of telecommunication between them. It was just that only the higher-ups could utilize them.

The moment Jody and his entourage had heard of the events in Adenia Town, they had rushed over, in order to meet with the

powerhouse who had killed the giants.

Visni was slightly taken aback, and felt bitter until he turned and saw Yue Zhong walking over. Overjoyed, he pointed to him, "Your Highness, it is him who had killed the invaders and protected us! He is called Yue Zhong!"

His words came out, and everyone swiveled to look at Yue Zhong, their eyes filled with respect.

Even Princess Lina had a curious gaze as she looked at Yue Zhong carefully.

Chapter 939: Holy Heavens!

The Man-eating Giants were one of the most dangerous predators of the human race, and their might was no joke.

The guards of Jody and Lina were the elite troops of the Holy Sirius Empire. As the elite guards, they had undergone countless battles against other species, and not one of them were not aware of the terror of the Man-eating Giants. Each time those giants appeared, at least thousands or even tens of thousands of them would perish.

With every 10 battles against those giants, the elite guards of the Holy Sirius Empire would lose 9 of them. They could barely deal with a group not amounting more than 30,000 of them, and only if there were no Type 8 existences.

Now that Yue Zhong appeared, a single person who could defeat an entire group of giants. Such strength was only seen in the Emperor himself.

When Jody saw Yue Zhong, his eyes brightened, and he went up to him, bowing deeply, "Hello, Yue Zhong, I'm Jody, pleased to meet you. Here, I represent the 300,000 inhabitants of Adenia Town to thank you for your help."

Seeing Jody's demeanor, the elite guards were all appreciative and their respect and respect for this prince of theirs increased.

The Emperor of the Holy Sirius Empire was still living all this while, and his children numbered over 300. Among them, many of them were arrogant and despotic, some stupid and even lecherous.

With a gentlemanly charisma, as well as his attitude in his learning and treatment of others, Jody was considered one of the rare few. Thus, he was widely liked and many protected him.

Yue Zhong saw the warm Jody, his impression of him also favorable as he chuckled, "Hey, I'm Yue Zhong, pleased to meet

you too."

Lina stepped forward, smiling in a charming manner as she stretched out her fair and dainty hand, "I'm Lina. It's nice to meet you, Yue Zhong."

Yue Zhong smiled politely, and shook her hand gently as well, before releasing it, "Beautiful princess, it is an honor of mine."

There was a strange look in Lina's eyes as she smiled coquettishly at him.

Jody extended an invitation warmly, "Yue Zhong, let us head to our battleship to talk more."

Yue Zhong agreed, "Sure!"

A beam of light came down, and landed on the group, instantly bringing them up into the battleship.

Within the lavish living room of the enormous battleship, Yue Zhong, Jody, and Lina were seated on a sofa, while a number of pretty women dressed in military uniform came serving refreshments, and placed them in front of the 3 of them, before leaving the room.

Jody had a strange look as he directly asked, "Yue Zhong, did you come from the Holy Heavens?"

Yue Zhong frowned and asked, "Holy Heavens? What is that place?"

Jody and Lina exchanged glances, obviously taken aback, before he continued curiously, "If you're not from the Holy Heavens, then where are you from? Doresini Empire or Zumton Empire?"

Yue Zhong casually weaved a tall tale, "I have no idea where I came out from. I just know that the place I stay is about 10 times the size of Adenia Town, and there was a border around our area that no one could cross from where I came from. I had activated some statue by accident and was sent here. Adenia Town was the

first human town that I came across."

If this lie was spoken on Earth, few would believe it. However, the Great God World was different. There were too many experts and all sorts of backgrounds. In fact, his tale sounded extremely believable.

Jody nodded, "So that was the case. In our Great God World, there are simply too many hidden lands, you must have come from one of them."

From the surface, it looked as though he had believed Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong continued asking, "Oh yea, what is the Holy Heavens?"

His intuition told him that it was an extremely important place. It seemed as though there were many other experts like him, otherwise, Jody and Lina would not have asked if he was from there right away.

Jody did not hesitate as he revealed the truth, "The Holy Heavens is a holy land of our human race in this Great God World. There, many experts from all corners of the world are gathered. Most of Type 9 experts or half-God characters are a part of the Holy Heavens. They are focused on protecting the human race from the other powerful species that threaten our existence. In truth, our Sirius Empire is a part of them as well."

"In the Holy Heavens, the experts are truly aplenty. Many of those heaven-defying geniuses could easily wipe out a horde of giants. It was because of this, that when I heard that you had dealt with the invasion, I had automatically assumed you were from the Holy Heavens."

Yue Zhong was moved when he heard this, "Holy Heavens? It seems that I need to make a trip there to check it out."

With the experts there, there were sure to be many Type 9 powerhouses. If he could go and exchange some pointers with

those experts, then it would be of great benefits to his growth.

Yue Zhong continued to ask, "Where is the Holy Heavens? Are there any conditions for joining it?"

Jody chuckled lightly, and handed a small chest the size of a palm to him, "There's a map here, and there are markers to the place. The first condition of joining the Holy Heavens is to be a human. The second, a power level of Type 5 and above. Once you fulfill these 2 conditions, as well as going through a round of interviews, you can join the Holy Heavens. Lina and myself, we are also part of the Holy Heavens."

Yue Zhong received the box, and his heart relaxed slightly. He smiled and his impression of Jody improved further, "Many thanks!"

Jody spoke warmly, "Don't mention it, Yue Zhong. In the Holy Heavens, there are 5 main districts, namely the East, West, South, North, and Central Temples. We belong to the Northern Temple. If you do join the Holy Heavens, we hope that you can consider joining us too. That way, we can fight side by side."

Wherever there were people, there were sure to be strife. Within the Holy Heavens, with so many experts, they had likewise, formed their own groups and associations. Jody was treating Yue Zhong warmly in the hopes that he could join them, thus relying on one another.

Yue Zhong chuckled, "Not a problem!"

He was not sure about the life here, and he needed to acclimatize himself as quickly as possible. With Jody's help, he would save the time and trouble.

There was a look of joy in Jody's gaze, "That's great to hear then."

Lina, who had been smiling at the exchange between the 2 men, opened her mouth, "Yue Zhong, the Giants always had the habit of converging as long as one of them was not killed, and manages to

report back to the others. There would be other waves of giants assaulting this area soon. Please assist us in purging them."

Yue Zhong laughed slightly, and shook himself, as a few pieces of jade dropped from his body. He then spoke, with a hint of self-assured confidence, "Not a problem! Let's go kill those giants now. As long as we can find their gathering spot, I can take them all down."

With the passing of time, the jade energy that had been suppressed was finally forced out by his body, and he was already recovering at an astonishing speed. As long as he had a day's time, he would be able to regain his peak strength.

If it were any other Type 8 powerhouse, who had suffered such an attack, most would need a few dozen years, or a hundred even, to deal with a wound that contained laws and principles of any nature. It was only Yue Zhong with his heaven-defying Third Order God-Devil Body that allowed him to purge the foreign oddities from his body.

Jody also laughed out in confidence, "Alright, leave the locating of the enemies to me!"

With that, he pressed a button on the watch he was wearing, before issuing an order as naturally as a ruler, "It's Jody. Convey my orders, immediately search for locations of the enemy, target, the Giants!"

With that, the huge battleship opened up, as a number of satellites were released into the skies, and when they reached an altitude of about 20,000m, they extended swiftly, forming huge radar-like satellites, floating in the sky while conducting surveillance on the grounds below.

At the same time, a number of unmanned drones the size of 2 basketballs flew out from the battleship as well, soaring outward in all direction to search.

Under the 2-pronged surveillance, a detailed and informative report of the terrain and region around was gathered.

Within an hour, Jody laughed out loud, "The tracking is complete, the location of the giants is about a 100km away from here, deep within a forest. Let's head there now."

Yue Zhong looked at the battleship and its capabilities and was shocked. He could not help but ask, "Jody, it seems that the technology of the Sirius Empire is incredibly advanced. How come Adenia Town is so backward?"

The Holy Sirius Empire was obviously not backward in its technology, yet, Adenia Town seemed to be on par with Europe of the Middle Ages. This was something that Yue Zhong could not understand.

Jody sighed, as he laughed bitterly, "My father feels that only by abandoning technology, that the human potential in cultivation can be unearthed. Therefore, other than the capital, most of the cities lack any form of technology."

Chapter 940: Wiping out the Giants!

After hearing Jody's explanation, Yue Zhong finally understood why there was such a huge difference in technology. He also understood why the Emperor would do such a thing.

Earth, before the apocalypse, was also an advanced world, with lack of cultivators and martial artists. It was not because the people of today were less smart, but because the effectiveness of such skills was not as comparable as a technologically-advanced world.

A martial artist could train for an entire 20 years but would be easily taken out by some small-thug with a bare proficiency in firearms wielding a gun. Under such circumstances, few would actually take the time to train. Furthermore, in the past, a person could easily win a small-scale war with their own prowess, that was why there were more cultivators in the past.

It was precisely because of this that the Emperor of the Sirius Empire would ban technology for all the cities and towns. However, the usage of such equipment was important in a war, that was why the central army was equipped with such highly advanced stuff, hence, creating an imbalanced image.

Yue Zhong was an outsider and was in no position to comment on the strategy. He smiled and did not continue harping on the subject.

The 12 battleships flew over a dense and thick forest, which was formed of numerous huge trees that were easily over hundreds of meters tall. There were even some that extended beyond 200m and 300m.

The forest covered a huge portion of the terrain, and one could hear the roars of wild beasts from within.

"It's right here, Yue Zhong. Let me clear the rubbish for you

first."

With a chuckle, Jody gave an order through his watch, "Execute the plan immediately!"

"Begin the plan immediately!"

"..."

Under Jody's orders, the huge cannon on his battleship, that had a 30m-diameter, lit up with its countless runes glowing, as a huge form of energy gathered in the cannon.

After 10 seconds, the mouth of the cannon lit up and a huge, light pillar of over 3km blasted downwards at the huge forest.

Under that assault, everything within the diameter of the light beam was instantly vaporized, revealing a huge, ugly, hole within the dense forest.

Yue Zhong could clearly see that at the edges of the hole, there were many human corpses.

After firing that cannon, over a hundred elites of the Sirius Empire's forces flew out of the battleship, equipped with their mech armor and particle cannons.

The moment they appeared, they began firing their weapons into the forest, hitting the many giants who were currently gathered.

Under those probing shots, the giants were all enraged and charged out towards them.

There was a vicious glint in the eyes of one 60m-tall Wind Giant, as he opened his huge mouth to spit out a powerful wind blade, cleaving towards the soldiers.

With a single swish, the huge wind blade went through one of the Sirius Empire's elite soldiers, slicing him cleanly in two, as blood and organs splattered out.

Another 70m-tall Flame Giant swung out powerfully, sending balls of flames towards the soldiers.

Although the soldiers continued to dodge and evade, one of them was still struck, unfortunately, and he caught on fire while screaming out in agony.

Those giants were not only capable in close-combat, but many of them had abilities of range. It was truly terrifying. Within a matter of seconds, a dozen elite soldiers had already fallen. Had they been any closer, they would have been wiped out.

Jody swiftly gave the order, "Retreat!"

At that, the Sirius Empire elites began to retreat into the forest while firing a few more shots.

They were intelligent and used the terrain to their advantage while dodging the ranged attacks.

With the trees acting as cover, the ranged attacks of the giants lost most of their strength.

As for the giants, they were currently chasing at full speed and in a mad fury.

Almost all the giants with ranged capabilities were throwing everything they had at the battleship in the sky.

The 12 battleships in the skies had opened up their energy shields under Jody's orders earlier and were rising slowly to evade the attacks.

Inside the ship, Jody observed the giants below and had an incredulous look, "Strange! The giants seem weaker for some reason? There doesn't seem to be any Type 8 giant holding the fort. What's going on? Usually, there should be one. How come there isn't one right now?"

Jody's army had clashed with the giants many times, and he knew their circumstances well. Now, seeing that no Type 8 giant was chasing after them, he could not help but feel bewildered.

If there were any Type 8 powerhouses giant in their midst, they

would have stepped into the air to assault their battleship already.

Lina's gaze had a strange glint as she said, "What's strange about it? Since there are no Type 8 giants here, they must have all been killed in the earlier raid on Adenia Town." She then asked curiously, "Yue Zhong, how many Type 8 giants did you kill exactly?"

Yue Zhong replied mildly, "13."

When Jody heard that, he could not help but suck in a breath of cold air, and exclaim somewhat "13?!! Are you sure?! You really killed 13 of them?!"

Even Lina had a shocked look.

Human Type 8 powerhouses were known to be weaker than any other race of the same realm. This was common knowledge. Of course, there were human Type 8 powerhouses that could kill other races easily, but these were the heaven-defying talents, who were rare, or they possessed some form of a treasure.

Even among these geniuses, few could take on 10 on their own, killing so many Type 8 giants by themselves.

Such an expert would have so much potential, a peak expert of the human race, and could possibly become a half-God existence.

Jody and Lina had thought that they already evaluated him strongly, but now, they could sense that they had truly underestimated him.

"That's right!" Yue Zhong laughed, and stood up, before walking out, "Those giants have already left the forest. I'll go clear them."

After Yue Zhong left, Lina suddenly asked Jody, "Jody, do you think he was telling the truth?"

Jody signed, his gaze complicated, "Perhaps. He could take on the entire group of giants on his own, this is proof enough of his strength. He doesn't need to lie to us."

There was a complicated look in her eyes, as she bit her lips, speaking with some jealousy, "Then, isn't his strength already on par with the Holy Children of the Temples?"

Jody and Lina were the esteemed Prince and Princess of the Holy Sirius Empire and had cultivated to reach the Type 6 realm. However, within the Holy Heavens, they were just ordinary people. There were so many people who had a strength that far surpassed them.

The Holy Sons and Daughters of the 5 Great Temples were all at the Type 8 realm, heaven-defying geniuses, and the weakest was still so much stronger than Jody or Lina and could view them with contempt.

The Emperor of the Holy Sirius Empire could not compare to any of the Holy Sons or Daughters. Due to his ordinary talent, he was doomed to stay at the initial Type 8 realm for his entire life, with no hope of entering the Type 9 realm. Therefore, he was not as valuable.

Jody had a wise look as he spoke, "Perhaps. Lina, the stronger Yue Zhong is, the more beneficial it is for us. We have to get in his good books and attract him over to our Northern Temple! If he could even become a Holy Son of the Temple, then we would be rewarded more!!"

Lina nodded, she was just slightly jealous of Yue Zhong's talents, but she was smart, and she knew the crux of the matter, as she turned to look at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong soared out of the battleship and saw the countless giants running towards him. There were even over 40 Type 7 giants manipulating the atmospheric energy to soar towards him.

However, they were not of the air, thus their speed wasn't fast.

"Go to hell!"

Yue Zhong stared at them with a cold look, and with a wave of

his hands, a bright blood light shot towards the skies, turning into a blood cloud, that started pouring on them.

Within seconds, thousands of them were instantly sucked dry and turned into emaciated corpses.

Jody saw the scene and felt a chill down his back, "What terrifying means!! This Yue Zhong is truly terrifying!!"

Chapter 941: Imperial Conflict!

Lina looked at Yue Zhong with a strange gaze, speaking slowly, "His strength has already surpassed the Central Holy Son of the Holy Heavens."

In the Great God World, powerhouses were revered, the stronger that Yue Zhong seemed, the more he would be respected. Lina was ambitious, and seeing that he was able to take out over thousands of giants in a single move, she could not help but feel a stir in her heart.

After all, there were so many experts within the Holy Heavens. All the powerful people were gathered there. Although Lina was one of the Princesses from the Holy Sirius Empire, with her strength, she would not even have the qualifications to be a concubine of any of the Holy Sons. If she could get Yue Zhong within her grasp, her future was sure to be bright.

Under Yue Zhong's control, the huge patch of blood rain managed to consume the giants and wiped most of them out. There were only the dozens of Type 7 giants left, who were pushed to the brink of insanity. Their bodies were wrapped in a layer of energy, blocking the invasion of the rain, as they charged at Yue Zhong madly.

Facing the remaining Type 7 giants, Yue Zhong's gaze was cold. He pointed out, and in an instant, a powerful energy blade congealed towards the group of giants.

With a single sweep, all of them were sliced in two at the waist, as blood splattered, and their corpses fell out of the sky.

"Strong!!!"

"That was too insane!! This human is formidable!!"

"Monster!! He's a freak!!"

"..."

When the soldiers saw how easily Yue Zhong slew the hundreds and thousands of giants, they were all stunned with their mouths agape, their gazes filled with awe and shock.

Such a group of giants was not something Lina and Jody's forces could take on without suffering huge losses.

However, this group of giants was actually taken out by Yue Zhong in a second, causing them to feel a sense of fear.

When Yue Zhong was done, he flashed and reappeared in the battleship.

Jody came up to him, smiling, "Yue Zhong, you're truly strong. With your strength, it would be easy for you to become the Holy Son of our Northern Temple. When that time comes, please take good care of us."

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, "Sure. Since the Giants have been dealt with, let's head to the Holy Heavens then."

"Sure! Jody nodded, and gave the order, "Move out! Coordinates: Holy Heavens!"

With that, the entire fleet set off into the distance.

Inside the dense forest, one green giant who looked no different from the trees around him, stared at the leaving battleships with a deep hatred, "Damn humans, you dare hunt our Giant Clan. I will not let you off."

The Great God World was truly vast. The 2 main battleships of Jody's fleet were B-Grade Battleships, and their maximum speed could reach up to Mach-20.

The group sat on the battleship for an entire day, before arriving at the capital of the Holy Sirius Empire.

Yue Zhong looked at the capital, and could not help but praise, "Not bad, is this your capital? It's beautiful!"

The Holy Sirius Empire was very different from Adenia Town. In

the skies, there were 156 satellites. Surrounding the city were 8 mechanical fortresses floating in the air. There were also 3 airship fleets that patrolled the space constantly, conducting surveillance and maintaining security.

Other than that, there was also a huge wall of over 200m tall, its entirety bright and resplendent like jade. On top of the wall, there were many soldiers equipped with mech armors and particle cannons. At the same time, one could see countless advanced technology at various hidden corners.

The defense of this Holy Sirius empire was tighter and more advanced than anything Yue Zhong had obtained for Earth from all his travels.

When Aisha saw the futuristic city of the capital, even she was awestruck.

Adenia Town was as backward as the Middle Ages, and the Holy Sirius Empire seemed as though it was far more advanced than Earth by a large margin. Such a vast difference made Aisha feel like a bumpkin.

Of the 2 youthful ladies, Xi Jie had family in the town, thus Aisha, who was on her own, chose to follow by Yue Zhong's side, hoping to broaden her horizons.

Jody turned to Yue Zhong and explained, "That's right, this is the capital of the Holy Sirius Empire, Guha City. The Great God World is huge, in order to reach the Holy Heavens, one would have to make use of the transport gate here in the capital. Otherwise, you would have to go through 435 different kingdoms to reach it, and it would take at least half a year's time."

Yue Zhong was slightly taken aback, as he narrowed his eyes, "435 kingdoms? How are these kingdoms compared to the Holy Sirius Empire?"

Jody chuckled, "Of the 435, the weakest is about half of our

strength. Most of them are stronger than us. The strongest has a Type 9, half-God powerhouse holding the fort, and the kingdom is definitely more than a 100 times stronger than ours."

Yue Zhong was shocked by now, "This world is truly something. Even the Radiant Battleship cannot transcend this area. The number of people here in the Sirius Empire alone numbers over 10 billion, with over 435 kingdoms added together, there has to be at least 5 trillion. With so many people, no wonder there are more Type 9s here."

Jody then invited warmly, "Yue Zhong, opening the spatial gate is no small matter. I need to report to our Father first. The shortest might still be a day. Why not come to my palace and let me host you properly?"

He knew that his position within the Holy Heavens was not high. Even the entire Holy Sirius Empire was not particularly highly regarded in the Holy Heavens. They were just a sort of passage for talents to get there.

Any envoy from the Holy Heavens could easily surpass Jody and the rest of his siblings. That was why he wanted to win Yue Zhong over, if there were any troubles in the future, he would at least have some backing.

Yue Zhong agreed, "Sure!"

The huge battleship came to a stop at the port of Guha City, and the party came out and headed for the inner city.

Aisha walked excitedly, as she saw the automated cleaning robots on the streets, her eyes brightening as she pulled on Yue Zhong's hands, "Yue Zhong, look, what is that?"

Yue Zhong took a glance and replied mildly, "They should be automated cleaning robots."

Compared to Aisha, who had never even seen a television before, Yue Zhong's concept of technology back on Earth was much more

advanced, and could roughly guess what those were.

Jody chuckled, "That's right, these are automated cleaning robots. They even have the function of maintaining security. Anytime there's a minor issue with security, they would handle it. They can also give directions, answer basic questions about laws, and considered somewhat robot police enforcers."

Yue Zhong had an idea then, "These robots are pretty decent, seems like when I head back to Earth, I need to produce some cleaning and policing robots."

With the amount of technology and resources he obtained from the Mech Kingdom, he was truly poised to produce enough robots to last a lifetime. However, most of them were geared for war use, and not much had been developed in the civil sense.

On Earth, the human race was fragile, thus, the military was the most important. Yue Zhong was not an invincible entity yet, thus he needed to focus on the military, while the civilian side suffered less priority.

Right at this moment, there was an arrogant voice that sounded, "Brother Jody, your taste is quite poor, to actually mix with such riff-raff. You've thrown the face of our Holy Sirius Empire Royal Clan."

Yue Zhong frowned and looked towards the sound.

Only to see 8 lavishly dressed young men and women, with an air of nobility and elegance, and behind them, were 20 powerful experts, decked in mech armor, their faces solemn, and their killing intent palpable.

Among them, the leader was one who wore a black suit, had short, golden hair, and he looked about 30-40% similar to Jody. However, his look of arrogance was off-putting, and he stared at Yue Zhong coldly, and with disdain, barking, "Lowly citizen, what are you looking at!! Damn trash, this seat is irked by the sight of

you. Men!! Go dig out his eyeballs for me! Then grab that woman beside him, I'll have a good time with her."

"Yes, your Highness!"

One burly guard behind the young man responded and waved his hands, as 2 guards stepped forwards towards Yue Zhong and Aisha.

Yue Zhong was filled with a killing intent when he heard this, and he coldly swept a glance at Jody.

Feeling that gaze, Jody felt his entire body doused in a freezing aura, as he stepped forwards and barked out, "Stop!"

Under that enraged shout, the 2 guards halted, not daring to step forward. Jody was, after all, a prince as well, and these small characters were unwilling to act against him.

Chapter 942: Killing Everyone Present!

Jody had a cold look as he barked at the other prince, "Georgie, Yue Zhong is my guest. If you dare touch him, I will not let you off."

Georgie had a look of disgust on his face as he roared out in a domineering manner, "Brother Jody! These are just some lowly commoners! Who the hell are they?! By the time I'm done with them, I will return them to you! The 2 of you, what are you waiting for? You want me to throw you into the leopard cage?!"

Since the Emperor of the Holy Sirius Empire had lived for so many years, his children were too many to count. It was even enough to form a regiment of soldiers on their own. There were all sorts of characters among them.

Compared to Jody, Georgie was a talented cultivator, reaching the peak-Type 6 stage by the age of 65. Among the numerous children of the Emperor, he was considered the top in talent and received love from Emperor George.

Due to his age, plus having spent most of his time training, coupled with the doting of Emperor George, he was extremely despotic and arrogant. He had lustful tendencies and was violent, treating commoners like trash. His demeanor was vastly different from Jody. Each time they met, he would try to humiliate Jody. Yue Zhong and Aisha had thus become the target for his intended humiliation.

As the energy in the Great God World was abundant, most of the cultivators led long lives. A normal Type 6 powerhouse would usually be above 600 years old. 65 was considered a youth by Earth's standards.

"Pardon our offense, your Highness!!" Hearing Georgie's threat, the 2 soldiers felt a chill and quickly pounced towards Yue Zhong and Aisha.

Within Guha City, Georgie truly did as he liked, and had toyed many people to death. The 2 guards did not wish to be added on to the death count.

"Scram for me!!"

Jody had a furious gaze as he roared out, turning into 2 shadows and charged right at the 2 guards. Both silhouettes shot out punches at them.

The 2 guards were at the peak-Type 5 realm, and had the most advanced of mech armors, possessing abundant experience in combat. Although they were suppressed by Jody, they were not defeated instantly.

Georgie laughed out loud in arrogance, waving his hands, "Hahaha!! Brother Jody, you're truly useless! To think you can't even beat my guards! All of you, go! Get those 2 for me. Don't harm my brother Jody! Just teach him a lesson, HAHAHA!"

"Yes! Your Highness!"

The guards behind Georgie all responded loudly and pounced towards Yue Zhong.

Lina stepped forward, her own face also frosty as she barked, "Georgie, stopped. Yue Zhong is my guest too. You want to bring harm to my guest?!"

One mature lady among Georgie's entourage, who had heavy makeup and a sexy figure, laughed out, as she spoke sarcastically, "Lina, it's just 2 wretched commoners. Are they worth your anger? I recently purchased a pair of twins. They're fun to play with. Give Georgie those 2 and I can gift you those 2. How about it? They're from a noble clan if you must know."

Georgie loved to play with women, not letting those he set his sights on off. Those who followed him were of the same feather, indulging in their pleasures.

To these rich playboys, only those of noble and royal birth were

people. Commoners were lower existences and could be killed without any remorse.

It was easy to recognize Aisha as a country bumpkin from the first look, without a single air of nobility. Yue Zhong was also dressed in casual clothes and had an ordinary look, that was why they assumed these were easy targets.

One young man, who was thin, his face sallow and there was even an air of gloom between his eyebrows, chuckled, "Your Highness Georgie, that woman seems decent, after you're done, can you give her to me? I want to train her into a proper bitch."

Georgie laughed out wantonly, "Haha, no problem at all! Once I'm done, I will give her to you! Haha!"

There was a look of joy and lust on that man's face as he thanked Georgie, "Thank you, your Highness!!"

Another beauty within their group who wore a revealing leather suit, with most her flesh exposed, sneered and suggested, "The man is also not too bad. Once I train him to be a good dog and put him in the dog farm, let him watch the female being fucked by the other dogs, wouldn't that be interesting?"

"That's right!!"

"Lynna, good idea!!"

"That is an interesting preposition."

"..."

When the rest of the group heard this, they laughed out in an unbridled manner. Having been from prestigious families, they had toyed with others to the point of boredom. The more they pushed boundaries and finding new thrills, they more they enjoyed themselves.

Inside Guha City, other than Emperor George, no one could control these bunch of upstarts. This was why they were able to be

so unbridled and run around uncontrolled, acting so viciously.

Lina's face turned even colder, as she felt her heart clench in anger. Her body started to tremble with rage, as she barked out angrily, "Idiots, are you looking to die?!"

She knew the terror of the 2 behind her. Aisha might be an ordinary country bumpkin, but Yue Zhong's might was unimaginable and was someone who could easily wipe out an entire horde of giants in a second. Such an expert was no pushover.

As expected, a chilly voice sounded from behind her, causing her to freeze in fear, "Since you're all looking for death, you can die then."

Behind Lina, Yue Zhong pointed out with a finger, and in an instant, the surrounding energy congealed into multiple powerful blades, that slashed across the numerous soldiers behind, who were equipped with mech armor and had been through countless battles.

At that moment, those soldiers who were all at least at the Type 5 realm, were sliced apart by the numerous blades, their body parts and broken armor scattering across the ground.

Witnessing this gory scene, the entire group which had been talking loudly fell silent, their faces ashen as they began to tremble.

Among them, one of the young men trembled and shouted out hoarsely, "You...you...dare...to kill...the elite guards!!! This is a capital offense!!! You're still not kneeling to surrender?! When our Holy Sirius Empire forces reach, your entire family would be wiped out!!"

"My family? What a joke, before that, you can go to hell first!"

Yue Zhong laughed coldly, and waved his hands, as another energy blade formed, and directly separated the man's head from his body.

After killing the man, Yue Zhong's gaze fell upon the one called Lynna, his killing intent apparent for all to see.

Lynna's face was pale as she trembled, screaming out in fear, "You can't kill me!! You can't kill me!! My father Max is the right-hand man of the Emperor, if you kill me, he would not let you off!! He will definitely hunt you down and make you die a horrible death!!"

"Your father will join you below. Go first, and wait for him."

Yue Zhong's voice was icy as his energy blade slashed out, directly splitting her in half.

After that, Yue Zhong's gaze swept and fell upon the gloomy man.

The unfortunate guy was so frightened that he pissed himself, his body trembling uncontrollably. He got down on his knees as he kowtowed profusely, "Don't kill me!! Please!! I can give you all my beautiful women!! Spare my dog life!! My father, Hammond, is the Minister of Justice, and he would not let this go too!!"

Yue Zhong swiped his hand carelessly, allowing the energy blade to fall once more, slicing him in two, "Let him find me then. I'll get him to join you."

Seeing Yue Zhong slaughter 3 of their friends consecutively without any mercy, the remaining people were frightened out of their wits.

The sultry woman at the start kneeled on the ground, acting like a female dog as she sobbed and crawled to Yue Zhong, "Don't kill me...please... Sir... spare me!! I can be your bitch, spare my lowly life! I didn't mean what I said earlier, spare me please!!"

Yue Zhong stared at her coldly, her beauty did nothing to hide her venomous heart, and his eyes flashed with an icy glint, before the energy blade slashed down on her head, without the slightest mercy.

Another despotic member of the group had a frenzied look by now, as he shouted out in madness, "Since he wants to kill all of us, let's fight it out with him!! We can't let him live!!"

With another swish, the head of that man was sliced apart.

"Warning, warning! You have flouted the 136th law of the Holy Sirius Empire, murdering others! Immediately cease your resistance, or we will act against you!"

At this point, the countless cleaning robots began to swarm over, having activated their security measures.

The entire Guha City was blaring with alarms by now.

Seeing those robots, the rest of the group had a look of hope. If the robots were able to stop Yue Zhong, they would have the chance to flee.

Seeing the robots, Prince Georgie, who had been watching the entire thing with an ashen expression, spoke slowly, "Mr. Yue Zhong, this was our fault. We didn't recognize your esteemed self and had offended you. Please forgive our mistake."

Chapter 943: Dominance!

Georgie had a fleeting killing intent in his eyes, as he spoke in neither servile nor overbearing tone, "Since you've already killed so many of our people, why don't we both take a step back and let this go. This is after all the imperial city. If things get blown up, it would not be good for you."

He was not stupid, although he went around and lorded over others, he knew when to watch himself. It was obvious that Yue Zhong was above the Type 7 realm. If he was to truly go on a rampage, he would be killed within a second. The only way out was to give in for now and hit back for revenge later down the road.

Georgie had a venomous look in his eyes, as he thought viciously, "Today's matters, I will definitely not let it go. Once I leave, I will activate the troops to tear this bloody Yue Zhong into countless pieces, to give vent to this anger of mine!!"

Jody frowned slightly, as he came up to Yue Zhong and persuaded, "Yue Zhong, why not, we just forget about it? These men and women are all children of important officials of the Holy Sirius Empire, if you were to continue, those old fellows would not let this go."

Yue Zhong ignored him, his face an icy mask, as he swept a disdainful glance at the robots and laughed coldly, "A bunch of trash robots, you want to stop me? Break."

A powerful atmospheric energy then wrapped the robots and in an instant, they all exploded, turning into piles of metal.

After killing those robots, Yue Zhong turned and reached out to grab at thin air, as a number of energy-formed hands wrapped around the remaining despotic members of the group, and crushed them.

There was a unison of cracks, as the few people were turned into meat paste.

Seeing how vicious Yue ZHong was, Georgie's countenance turned even uglier, his eyes finally revealing a hint of fear.

He was used to being the vicious and dominating one, slaughtering whoever he liked. However, he was also a huge coward, that treasured his own life and was fearful of death.

"Stop!!!!"

At the same time, the few members of Georgie's group were crushed, there was an enraged shout that traveled from the skies.

A number of soldiers equipped with powerful mech armor suddenly appeared as they shot through the skies and descended on the scene.

As the entire city was within the surveillance of their integrated network, the moment Yue Zhong had killed the first scion, he was already discovered.

If he had killed someone ordinary, it would not be an issue. However, everyone he killed was all scions of high-ranking officials. Each death would represent a huge uproar in the city.

Because of this, the empire had quickly reacted and despatched their elite soldiers towards the scene.

Seeing the numerous experts, Georgie no longer held his fury in check, as he roared out, "Yue Zhong! Do you see that?! All of Guha City's strength has been activated! Surrender now and you may yet have a chance! I can plead for you in front of my father! Otherwise, there'll only be death!! Even the woman beside you will be implicated!! She would suffer a fate worse than death!! If you dare kill me, the great Emperor George, my father, will not let you off!!!"

Jody frowned, and urged Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, it's enough. If you were to kill him, Father would really not let this matter go."

Yue Zhong glanced at him, his gaze icy, his tone incomparably cold, "Jody, this bastard has to die. If you want to stop me, then you'll be my enemy."

Georgie had a nasty character, viewing commoners as ants, and toyed with them. Such a person could not be any higher on Yue Zhong's hated list. If he did not have the strength, then there was no choice. However, now that he had the might, he would not let such scum off. While there were many such characters under the sun, and he naturally could not deal with all of them, as long as he came across one, he would not mind killing them as a favor to the rest of humanity.

The vile actions of scum like Georgie and his friends had thoroughly crossed Yue Zhong's line. He had thus come to the decision in his fury, even if he had to kill the rest of the experts in order to deal with them, he would do so.

Stared at by Yue Zhong, Jody felt his heart shudder, and he retreated a few steps, keeping silent.

Lina frowned, and stepped up to pull Jody, shaking her head gently. She had witnessed Yue Zhong's might, and it was obvious he had many more trump cards. If he were to go crazy, the whole Guha City might be annihilated.

Their exchange was heard by everybody.

When Georgie heard Yue Zhong's voice, his face fell, and he pulled out a white box the size of a palm and roared out in haste, "Father!! Save me!! Someone wants to kill me!!"

Immediately, a huge Type 8 pressure billowed from the palace within Guha City, as a thunderous voice rang out, "Who?! Who dares kill the son of I, Emperor George!!"

Yue Zhong had a look of ridicule as he grabbed Georgie, "It's useless, even if the Heavens themselves came down, they can't save you. You're destined to die today!"

A huge palm of energy then swiped downwards at Georgie without mercy.

Georgie's face fell and tried to react at the first moment. His body tensed up and his muscles became taut, as he punched out with over a hundred palms in an instant, slamming into Yue Zhong's energy palm.

His reaction was fast and exemplary. However, there was a vast difference in strength between the both of them. All of Georgie's defenses were broken through and he was grabbed.

The moment he was caught, his aggressive demeanor crumbled, as he began to plead, "Don't kill me!! Please!! Please don't kill me!!! I can give you all my wealth!! I can hand my women, as well as 3,000 other virgins!! Please spare me!!"

The scene of how Yue Zhong crushed the rest of his friends resurfaced in his mind, and his fear was heightened once more.

"I'm the commander of the Central Guards, Ereman, put down his Highness!! Everything can be discussed!!"

An enraged roar sounded, as numerous elite guards surrounded the place, and the leader stepped through the air, emitting a Type 7 aura as he barked at Yue Zhong.

Over a thousand of the guards had converged on this location, surrounding Yue Zhong tightly as they eyed him warily. They did not dare to act impertinently, as their prince was in his hands. Furthermore, Georgie was Emperor George's favorite son. If he were to die, their fates would be sealed.

Even when encircled by those elites, Yue Zhong's eyes turned cold as he closed his right hand tightly, "You can atone for those innocents who had died at your hands!!"

"NO!!!"

Screaming out in despair and fear, the human scum was finally crushed.

"NO!!!" Ereman saw Georgie squeezed to death and let out a howl of agony, his eyes scarlet red, as he ordered in fury, "Kill him!!"

Georgie had been killed in front of him, Emperor George would definitely not let him off. At best, he would be reduced to a commoner and had to work his way up again. At worst, he would be killed.

Jody's face fell as he roared out, "Stop!!!"

Jody's words would usually be heeded by Ereman. However, the commander was enraged and had lost his rationality. The thousands of elites were charging at Yue Zhong in rage as well.

At that instant, numerous particle beams fired out at Yue Zhong.

"Bunch of ants, die!!"

Yue Zhong looked to the sky, his eyes flashing with a cold glint. The atmospheric energy then gathered around him and transformed into countless swords and blades.

In that instant, all 1,000 elites were slaughtered, turning into a pile of meat and metal.

At that moment, Emperor George had just arrived at the scene, and he stopped at a distance of about 3km from Yue Zhong, his voice ringing out, "I am Emperor George of the Holy Sirius Empire. May I ask who are you? Why did you start slaughtering the moment you came to Guha City, and even killed me son Georgie?!"

The distance was enough for him to react should anything happen. With his measures, he was certain he could flee even if the opponent was a peak-Type 8 expert.

Yue Zhong stared at Georgie and spoke solemnly, "I'm Yue Zhong, and I was invited by Prince Jody and Princess Lina to visit your Guha City as a guest. Your son Georgie and his bunch of trash friends had offended me and crossed my boundaries. Naturally, they had to pay the price. As for the rest, since they attacked me, I killed them in retaliation."

Lina immediately stepped forward, "Father, Yue Zhong is indeed a guest we invited. He had helped to solve the Giants' issue at Adenia Town, wiping out the 2 groups, and he is a true hero. This time, he is here in preparation to enter the Holy Heavens to join the Northern Temple."

Chapter 944: George!

"What?! He actually slaughtered 2 groups of Man-eating Giants by himself?!" When George heard Lina's words, his heart was filled with shock.

If there was a place with 2 groups of giants, there was sure to be at least 4 Type 8 giants. The Holy Sirius Empire would come to clashes with them once in a while, and most of the time, they would be at the losing end. Their rare victories were against the groups which no Type 8 giants.

George himself did not have the ability to wipe out 2 whole groups of giants by himself, and he understood Yue Zhong's strength in an instant.

With his ability to deal with giants, even if the entire Guha City deployed all its trump cards, the end result would be at best, both sides suffering heavy casualties. If he were not careful, it was possible that Guha City might be annihilated as well.

As the Emperor of the Holy Sirius Empire, George was no simple character. He came to a judgment quickly and immediately smiled warmly at Yue Zhong, directly bowing and apologizing, "So it was like that. I apologize, Mr. Yue Zhong, for my failure to discipline those fellows, causing them to offend you."

Jody and Lina stared at their father, their eyes filled with shock, but immediately after, relief. George was fierce usually, but facing the stronger Yue Zhong, there was nothing in lowering himself. Before he had come to govern the Holy Sirius Empire, he had been through so much more in the past.

Yue Zhong looked at George and spoke without standing on ceremony, "George, those scum that had offended me, did so because of their backing and used it to threaten me. I'm not satisfied, other than Georgie, I want to wipe out those who backed those lowlives."

George chuckled lightly, stepping towards Yue Zhong, as he replied, "Not a problem, I've been busy cultivating these few years, and thus, my management of Guha City has relaxed. That is why there are so many scum. It was a mistake on my part. I will definitely deal with them, and give you a proper answer."

George then gave an order to a Type 7 powerhouse besides him, "Ibi, convey my orders, go get Prime Minister Max, Minister of Law Hammond..., and all of them, are to be thrown into jail. If there's any resistance, kill them without mercy."

Jody and Lina, who stood one side, watched George giving orders with a complicated gaze. They knew that under those orders, most of the bigshots who could affect the Holy Sirius Empire were going to be stripped of their posts. Even Jody and Lina had to view these people with respect and fear in the past. However, a single sentence of Yue Zhong changed things.

Ibi bowed, and swiftly led 20 experts with him, "Yes! Your Majesty!!"

George then invited warmly, "Yue Zhong, in order to open the spatial gate, it would take a day's time. While waiting, why not come over to my palace and have some fun? Let me host you, and build our friendship."

Yue Zhong replied without batting an eyelid, "However, I've already promised Jody and Lina to go to their palaces."

George swept the 2 a stern look and ordered, "Jody, Lina, come to the imperial palace and help me treat Yue Zhong as well."

Jody and Lina could only respond, "Yes! Father!"

George then smiled at Yue Zhong, "This way please!"

Yue Zhong chuckled and brought Aisha as they followed George towards the palace.

George took a look at Aisha and asked, "Yue Zhong, is this your woman?"

Aisha felt flushed, as she replied hastily, "Your Majesty, I'm not..."

To Aisha, George was the mighty Emperor of the Holy Sirius Empire and deserved idolization and reverence. When she was young, she had heard the stories of how he established the empire all by himself. Seeing him in person, she was a little flustered.

Yue Zhong chuckled and did not say much.

Before George established the kingdom, he had been a commoner as well, having been through countless miracles and hardships to reach where he was. He was a man of charms, and once he put down his identity and took the initiative to befriend Yue Zhong, both sides got along well.

He might not be on the level of those Holy Sons and Daughters, but with his Type 8 strength, he was still a decent character within the Holy Heavens and knew many things. Yue Zhong thus benefitted.

The Great God World was incomparably vast, with numerous races and species, as well as countless hidden gateways that could access the 800 worlds.

In this Great God World, where countless races reside, and experts were aplenty, there were still 4 main classifications.

They were the Human Race, the Mutant Beast Race, the Man-eating Race, and the Devils Race.

Of these 4, the Devils were the strongest, while the humans were the weakest. The Mutant Beasts were 2nd and the Man-eating Races were the 3rd.

Each main group was made out of countless other subcategories, and the Man-eating Giants were one of those under the Man-eating Race. The Asura Clan would be something that fell under the Devils Race.

Among the 4 races, there had always been a competition for

resources and treasures, in order to break through and escape from the cage of control. Conflicts and wars were inevitable, and thus, hatred ran deep.

For the sake of the whole of humanity, the Human Race created the Holy Heavens, and with it, all the human experts gathered, establishing a foothold in this cruel world.

The humans had their Holy Heavens, and the Man-eating Race had their own Divine Temple. The Devils had their 10,000-Devil Altar, and the Mutant Beasts had a relaxed Union.

Other than these 4 main groups, there were numerous others as well that did not get involved in the conflict, living their own lives.

At the same time, within the Great God World, there were many forbidden lands, where it was rumored to be formed from the battles between Type 10 Legends. Even Type 9 powerhouses would fall if they entered.

Inside these forbidden lands, there were sure to be countless treasures, and the imprints left behind by those Type 10 powerhouses. Every year, there would be numerous experts who tried their luck within.

Many perished, but at the same time, with risk came reward, and many others earned their way into becoming overlords of their own lands.

George then extended a warm invitation to Yue Zhong, "It's dinner time, come, Yue Zhong, let us have a good meal together."

Having lived for so long, he was still approachable, knowing where the lines were and was good with his words. In front of Yue Zhong, he did not exude the bearing of an Emperor, instead, maintaining the aura of an ordinary person, and through his efforts, Yue Zhong and he were already good friends throughout the journey.

Yue Zhong chuckled, "Sure!"

George then revealed a mysterious smile, "I'll bring you to a fun place in a while, and let you enjoy yourself."

After dinner, George brought Yue Zhong away from the palace and came to a lavish center not far from the palace, and it was beautifully furnished.

George donned a mask, and handed another mask to Yue Zhong, "Here, this is for you!"

2 beautiful ladies with alluring figures then came up to the 2 of them, saying, "Sirs, please take out your member cards."

George laughed lightly and handed a white-gold card to one of the beautiful ladies.

She took one look at the card and her attitude became even more respectful, "So you're an esteemed guest, please come with me."

Under her lead, the two of them entered the building.

George then brought Yue Zhong to a room located on the 2nd floor deep within the center, where one could see below, although the people below could not see above.

Inside the room, there were a number of maidservants who brought rare delicacies into the room for both of them to enjoy.

George casually placed a fruit into his mouth, before pointing below, "Yue Zhong, you must be wondering why I brought you here. Take a look below."

Yue Zhong peered down curiously, and noticed many men and women with masks, holding wine glasses in their hands as they chit-chatted.

At the center of the hall below, there was a huge pool, and a few couples were grooving with one another.

"Yue Zhong, those below are all nobility of the Holy Sirius Empire. This is an entertainment and thrill center. As long as there is a pair who likes one another, they could head to another room to

do their business. With the masks, they feel assured that their identities would not be revealed. In truth, I know clearly who they all are. Look at that particular pair, the woman is the wife of the Marquis of Wharton, and the man with her is her father-in-law, the old Marquis of Wharton. They had already engaged in activities here no less than 10 times. Haha, isn't it interesting? The Marquis of Wharton is actually made a cuckold by his own father. Hahaha, it's really funny!"

George waved his hands, and the masks were revealed only to himself and Yue Zhong, as he pointed excitedly and laughed.

As Yue Zhong listened, he understood that this George had the fetish of voyeurism. He was not interested in the private affairs of others, thus he just listened while helping himself to the food.

George laughed lightly, "Yue Zhong, every woman below is a noble. Some of them are even high in the social class. See if any caught your eye, and just choose. The moment they entered, they have no way of disobeying the orders of the owner of this box. Every one of them is a decent quality good."

Chapter 945: The Fang Clan!

George continued to point out a few top beauties, as he laughed gently, "Those are from powerful backgrounds in Guha City, and are influential madams and wives within the city. Many of the young male ministers are under their skirts, and thus, they're proud and arrogant. They came here purely to seek a thrill and enjoy the atmosphere, and would not engage in illicit affairs that casually. However, if you just say the word, they will be yours."

Yue Zhong looked down below, noticing the few prominent females. As George said, they had an aura about them, their bodies sexy and their features beautiful. They carried themselves with elegance and power, causing one to feel the desire to dominate them.

Many males had the intention to dominate these women of power and press them beneath. It would give them a sense of achievement.

Yue Zhong swept a gaze, before turning to look at the food, "I'm not interested."

George laughed and pressed a button, "That's true. Those women are not worthy. However, there's one that you might be interested in."

At that moment, smoke started to billow on the stage below. Within the fog, a fairy-like maiden stepped out carefully but gracefully, her long black hair accentuating her jade-like features. Coupled with her demeanor and the clothes that she wore, it was a picture of perfection.

"Dong Yu Yao!!"

"It's Dong Yu Yao!!"

That's the top beauty and idol superstar of the 4 Kingdoms!! What is she doing here?"

"That's Dong Yu Yao!! Who would have thought, that I could see her in person!!"

"..."

The fair maiden with perfect looks and charm caused a huge uproar the moment she appeared. Looks of admiration, love, envy, worship, longing, greed, lust, all fell upon the stage.

Yue Zhong was affected by the commotion below and looked towards the stage. When he saw Dong Yu Yao, his heart could not help but be shocked, as a distant memory resurfaced in his mind, and the silhouette of a young girl in his mind merged with the Dong Yu Yao on stage, as he blurted out, "Jing Qi!!"

On stage, the beautiful Dong Yu Yao bore a 30% resemblance to Yue Zhong's first love, it was just that Dong Yu Yao was a lot more attractive and eye-catching.

Dong Yu Yao walked through the smoke, her eyes bright like crystals. Her beautiful lips parted and the next moment, an unearthly melodious voice resounded throughout the hall.

The moment she started singing, the noisy venue quietened down, and everyone became immersed in the singing, their expressions of bliss.

Dong Yu Yao had an incredible quality to her voice, to the point of being almost mysterious, as it was able to calm down one's heart and bring back beautiful memories.

Inside the venue, everyone was reminiscing about their childhood memories, and without knowing, many of them began to tear up slightly.

As for Yue Zhong, even at his Type 8 stage, his immense willpower and fortitude, he could not help but recall his wild and young, passionate days.

The first time he saw the girl. The first time he was moved in his heart. The first time he skipped class. The first kiss he had. The

first time he fought because of her. The first heartbreak he suffered. Without knowing why, 2 clear teardrops appeared out of the corner of his eyes, his stone-like heart that had been a result of so many battles, physically, mentally and emotionally. He had been through so much and had been so taut and tense for so long. His exhausted self finally felt a hint of rest for the longest time.

Although he had a Third Order God-Devil Body, and most Spirit-based attacks were nullified to him, Dong Yu Yao's singing was not considered a Spirit attack. Instead, it was a strange power that could relax one's mind, bringing back the good memories, causing him to understand a little more about himself.

Yue Zhong recovered quickly, wiping the tears with an impassive face as he gazed at the beautiful Dong Yu Yao, asking in a low voice, "Who is she?"

George revealed a crafty, fox-like grin, "She's called Dong Yu Yao, a superstar of the 4 Kingdoms, namely, the Holy Sirius Empire, the Wei Dong Empire, the Frost Mist Empire, and the West Wind Empire. She has countless admirers everywhere, and possesses a rare physique, the Yin-Jade Physique, and came from the rare race of humans known as the Heavenly Song Race. In the entire Great God World, there are barely 200 of them that are pure-blood and she is one of them. Every single one of them is an idol throughout the continent, known to sing well. She's also one of the top few cultivating geniuses of the Race as well."

Yue Zhong spoke resolutely, "I want her!!"

George had a difficult look, "Yue Zhong, it isn't so easy. She's a revered idol of 4 kingdoms, and most of the upper echelons are her fans. If I were to touch her, it would affect the relationship among all of us. Why not, let's do it this way, I'll head back and immediately get someone to gather a 100 virgins of noble birth, how about that?"

As the Emperor of the Holy Sirius Empire, George was in control

over a billion citizens. Within his palace, he had a huge number of beautiful virgins, and choosing a hundred was not a difficult task.

Yue Zhong frowned slightly, staring at George for a long while, before flipping his hands and revealing a precious Type 8 Mutant Beast nucleus, "This Type 8 nucleus in exchange for her."

George stared at the nucleus, his eyes brightening and there was a hint of greed. Such a nucleus was incredibly precious, there was not even one within the Holy Sirius Empire.

A Type 8 Mutant Beast was not long powerful, but also possessed intelligence. It was hard for George to take on one without leaving unscathed. In all likelihood, chances of his death would be 90%

Therefore, a single Type 8 nucleus could easily be used to exchange for a lot of wealth in the Holy Sirius Empire.

George forcefully suppressed the desire for the nucleus, as he grinned at Yue Zhong, "No, I can gift her to you, but, you will owe me a favor."

George had risen from the ranks, starting as a lowly commoner, and continued on the arduous path of cultivation, reaching where he was after hard work. He could tell that Yue Zhong was powerful, and if he continued on his path, it was likely that his future was full of potential. It was not impossible for him to be a Type 9 or even half-God powerhouse. It was worth it to try and get him on his side.

After all, a Type 9 powerhouse was at the peak of the Great God World and the rest of the 800 worlds. If he was willing, he could easily crush the Holy Sirius Empire.

Yue Zhong was silent for a while, after some time of consideration, he replied slowly, "Alright!"

George laughed lightly, "After she finishes her song, she will be yours."

Yue Zhong continued, "George, what will you do to get her to

follow me willingly? If you intend to force her, then forget it. I'd rather do it myself."

George held up his wine and drank it down, laughing confidently, "I brought her up from young. It was because of my support that she could reach where she is today. She would naturally obey my orders."

It was not easy to become a superstar across kingdoms. Without a strong backer, no matter how pretty she was, she could have easily been gobbled up by any of the upper echelons in these empires.

Yue Zhong nodded, as he continued to gaze at Dong Yu Yao quietly.

In another box not far from them, there was a young youth, wearing luxurious clothes. He was gazing at Dong Yu Yao with a look of greed, "Who would have thought that I could come across such an outstanding woman here. Marius, tonight, I must have her!!"

Facing that young man was another handsome man with a deep-set gaze and beautiful blond hair. He spoke against it, "Young Master Fang Ming, this Dong Yu Yao is not an ordinary woman. She is a superstar and well-known across all 4 kingdoms. Her backer is the Emperor of our Holy Sirius Empire, His Majesty George. If I were to take her forcibly, and it was found out, our Helu Family would be in trouble."

Fang Ming stared at Marius and barked out, "George? Who the fuck does he think he is? He's just a trash stuck at the initial-Type 8 realm. A few hundred years till now, there has not been any change. He has no more potential! Within the Holy Heavens, he's a mere commoner. As for me, Fang Ming, my father is the 1st Holy Son of the Western Temple, Fang Xuan! Our Fang Clan is also the royal family of the Da Xing Empire, with a Type 9 ancestor holding the fort. He would not dare to provoke us! Marius, go grab the woman now, or else, don't blame me for being rude!!"

Being scolded by Fang Ming, Marius felt his back drenched in cold sweat as he trembled. The youth in front of him was truly not simple, and not an existence he could afford to antagonize. If the other party wanted to kill him, it would be as easy as squashing an ant. Even Emperor George could not save him.

Marius gritted his teeth and replied, "Yes! Young Master Fang Ming!!"

After that, he quickly waved his hands at 2 soldiers, pointing to Dong Yu Yao and ordered, "Go grab that girl here for the young master."

Chapter 946: Death in One Blow!

The 2 guards swiftly replied, "Yes!"

They had followed Marius for a long time and were Death Warriors groomed by the Helu Clan. They were willing to die for their masters, thus they would obey orders without a single question or word of complaint.

They disappeared, and leaped down from the 2nd story, charging towards the singing Dong Yu Yao.

Yue Zhong glared, his killing intent bursting forth. Reaching out with his hands, he intended to crush them directly.

George stopped him, however, and chuckled, "Yue Zhong, there's no need to act. You will be able to watch a show. Such a thing always happens every year. She naturally knows how to handle it."

Yue Zhong's frown eased, as he placed his hand down and laughed, "That's true."

As the 2 soldiers were about to reach Dong Yu Yao, she lifted her head and frowned slightly. There was a chilly light within her eyes, and she quickly whisked out a soft, silver sword from her waist, charging forth. At the moment she pulled out her weapon, her entire demeanor shifted, and the aura of an idol was transformed into a valiant female swordswoman, exuding an imposing 'One with the Sword' will.

A powerful Type 7 energy was emitted from her alluring figure, as her eyes turned frosty. Her sword then thrust out at the sky, as a powerful Sword Qi shot out, seemingly capable of tearing apart the sky, as it enveloped the 2 elites from the Helu Clan.

In an instant, the 2 of them disappeared within the Sword Qi and was sliced apart till there was nothing left.

If one had been hit by an ordinary blade, there would still at least be a corpse. However, under the merciless attack of Dong Yu Yao,

there was no bone or blood left.

Marius saw the 2 Type 5 experts that had followed him loyally for so long, killed in an instant, and there was a look of envy and fury in his eyes, "Damn bitch!!"

Type 5 powerhouses were not as common as cabbages even among the Holy Sirius Empire. Within the Helu Clan, there were not many of them. With 2 of them dead, it was an aching loss for Marius.

Seeing Dong Yu Yao killing the guards of the Helu Clan, Fang Ming roared out with laughter, his lust for her deepening, "What a fiesty one. I like it. Who would have thought that such a woman existed?! It's truly amazing!! Haha! Fang Sheng, this woman is a Type 7 powerhouse, the rest of the trash here are no match for her. You go and grab her for me!"

"Yes! Master!" A middle-aged man with short hair who had been standing quietly behind Fang Ming all this while, replied curtly, and immediately shot towards Dong Yu Yao, his aura bursting forth.

Fang Sheng stepped through the air and came up in front of Dong Yu Yao, threatening, "Miss Dong Yu Yao, my Young Master requests your presence."

Dong Yu Yao saw Fang Sheng emerging from the Helu Clan's area, and a flash of rage appeared in her eyes. She replied coldly, "What if I refuse?"

Dong Yu Yao had been on the road during her tours and had seen countless scum. She knew that if she were to go up, there would be no end to her humiliation. The other party obviously did not treat her as a person, but a toy to be had.

"That's not up to you!"

Fang Sheng's gaze turned frosty, as he exuded an initial-Type 8 aura, and reached out to grab her.

Star Sword!

Dong Yu Yao's face fell, and she became tense, pushing her strength to the limits, and the soft sword in her hands transformed into many sharp beams, shooting out at Fang Sheng like shooting stars.

This was the strongest technique she possessed. It was able to exhibit a power 30 times of hers, capable of injuring even a Type 8 powerhouse.

"Not bad, your sword skills are excellent, and you have potential! If you were a Type 8 powerhouse, it would truly be difficult for me to deal with you. However, you're not my match right now! Just give up!"

Fang Sheng laughed coldly, his right hand suddenly congealing a powerful and mysterious glass shield, which struck towards the countless sword beams. In an instant, all of Dong Yu Yao's attacks were nullified, and there was not a scratch on Fang Sheng's right arm.

Amidst Dong Yu Yao's despairing gaze, Fang Sheng laughed savagely and reached out to grab her.

Just as his fist was about to close on her, his face changed suddenly, and he retreated explosively.

A powerful sword beam descended upon his original location, splitting the stage in half.

As the terrifying sword qi faded, Yue Zhong's figure appeared.

Fang Sheng swept Yue Zhong a look, his gaze turning serious, as he asked arrogantly, "Who is this? I'm Fang Sheng from the Da Xing Empire's Fang Clan. My Young Master has his sights set on this woman. Please make way, otherwise, you will surely regret."

When George heard this, his countenance turned ugly, "Da Xing Empire Fang Clan!! To think it's them!! This matter is troublesome. No wonder those fellows were so overbearing, they

did not put my country's laws in their eyes at all!!"

The Da Xing Empire and the Holy Sirius Empire were basically like a dragon and an ant. There was a true Type 9, half-God existence guarding the interests of Da Xing Empire. At the same time, there were many half-step Type 9 powerhouses and over hundreds of Type 8 experts. There were 500 kingdoms to their name. Each one of them alone was already much stronger than the Sirius Empire. If they were to offend the Da Xing Empire, the Holy Sirius Empire could be easily wiped out without anyone knowing.

George quickly made a decision, "Thankfully, Yue Zhong is here to take this, looks like I have to take a step back."

He had always been like this, not offending those he could not afford to offend, and made as many friends as possible. This was how he rose to power.

George spoke in a telepathic manner to Dong Yu Yao, "My good daughter, the man in front of you is Yue Zhong. From today on, you are his. Understand?"

When Dong Yu Yao heard that, she was taken aback at first, before she looked at Yue Zhong with a complicated gaze, "Understood, Father."

Dong Yu Yao had undergone a strict upbringing and knew there would be one day where she had to obey George's intended suitor for her. The notion of submitting to her new master had been carved deep into her bones. Even though she was slightly reluctant, she adjusted her emotions quickly.

Yue Zhong swept Fang Sheng a look and laughed coldly, "Da Xing Empire's Fang Clan? Who the fuck is that? You and your Young Master had better crawl out of here like dogs, and I will spare you. Otherwise, the both of you can go to hell."

Hearing how Yue Zhong had insulted the Fang Clan, George was dumbfounded, his scalp numb, "It's over, it's over!! This Yue

Zhong is too arrogant!! That's the Fang Clan!! An empire with a half-God entity!!! There're even a few half-step Type 9 powerhouses. He dared to curse them so, what an overbearing tone!!"

When Fang Sheng heard this, he trembled with rage, as though his eyes were about to burn with flames. The Fang Clan was truly considered a powerful family, and regardless of where they went, the mere mention of them would be sufficient for people to relent. There was almost nobody who dared to curse at the Fang Clan like Yue Zhong.

"Little bastard, you dare insult our Fang Clan, today will be your death day!!"

Fang Sheng immediately executed his strongest technique from the Fang Clan, the Diamond Glass Sutra, and his entire expanded into a 3m-tall giant that seemed to be made of glass.

After transforming, Fang Sheng's physique attributes were raised by more than 10 times. Each punch and kick matched a mid-Type 8 powerhouse. At the same time, his defense had soared, capable of blocking even a C-Grade Cannon.

"Die!!"

He reached out to grab, as the surrounding atmospheric energy swarmed to lock Yue Zhong in place. He stomped forward and disappeared, suddenly reappearing with a blazing temperature of space tearing, punching at Yue Zhong.

George saw how quietly Yue Zhong stood, as though frozen in place, and had a feeling of regret, "Why the hell did he not dodge?!!"

Fang Sheng's strike was enough to send George into a panic. Had it been him who received that blow, he would still be injured gravely while blocking.

Dong Yu Yao could not help but scream out, "Watch out!!"

Fang Sheng stared at Yue Zhong, his gaze filled with disdain, "To think I had thought you were capable of something! Who knew you were such a trash!!"

"Someone who lacks a domain dares throw a punch at me, just die!!"

Yue Zhong did not even lift his head, as his entire hand swung out to strike Fang Sheng in the chest.

With a loud blast, there was a look of shock in Fang Sheng's eyes, as his entire body began to crumble, and broke apart in a shower of blood and diamond pieces.

Seeing that, Fang Ming stood up in a flash, his face pale and his body trembling with shock, "Fang Sheng actually died?! How is that possible?! His Diamond Glass Physique is even able to block a C-Grade Cannon!! Even a Type 8 powerhouse would not be able to break his defenses so easily. How could that fellow just kill him in a single hit?! He did not even execute any technique!!!"

Chapter 947: Fish Taking to Water!

(Direction Translation; actual meaning: Sexual Relations)

George stared at Yue Zhong, his expression frozen as he thought, "What a terrifying fellow! My choice was right! But... he's has gone and offended the Fang Clan thoroughly. If I continue this friendship with him, it might affect me. What should I do?"

Dong Yu Yao was filled with shock as well, "This man's strength is truly domineering! No wonder Father wants me to be with him. If I do this properly, it would be of great help to Father."

Yue Zhong's single slap had caused Fang Shang to disintegrate. He then turned to look at Fang Ming, his eyes exuding a sword-like gaze at him.

Glared at by Yue Zhong, Fang Ming felt a chill in his heart, "Shit, he discovered me!!"

"Come on down!"

Yue Zhong grabbed out at the direction, and a huge energy palm directly caused the entire box to be destroyed, as he grabbed Fang Ming and pulled him towards himself.

Fang Ming felt the overwhelming killing intent and his eyes went wide as he screamed out, "I'm Fang Ming from the Fang Clan, my father is the Holy Son of the Western Temple, Fang Xuan! This time, many people know that I came here to the Holy Sirius Empire! If you were to kill me, the entire Sirius Empire would be buried!!"

When George heard this, he was taken aback and quickly shot out of his box, coming to Yue Zhong, persuading, "Yue Zhong, give me some face, why don't you forget about this. Both sides should take a step back, and treat it as though nothing happened. How about

that, Young Master Fang?"

Fang Ming seemed compliant as he agreed, "Yes, yes, Yue Zhong, as long as you let me go, I will forget about today. I will find some way to cover Fang Sheng's death... let's have it that he died protecting me from some Mutant Beast."

Although he seemed cooperative on the surface, his inner thoughts were entirely different, "Treat it as though nothing happened? Impossible!! Since you guys dare to kill someone from my Fang Clan when I'm home, I will definitely report this, and wipe all of you from the face of this world."

Yue Zhong stared straight at George, speaking solemnly, "George, from the moment I killed Fang Sheng, there's no way of repairing the relationship with Fang Clan. Do you think the Fang Clan would let someone who killed a Type 8 powerhouse from their Clan, off?"

George felt a shudder, and his expression turned dark, as he could not deny that. A Type 8 powerhouse would be a core character within the Fang Clan. Now that he was killed by Yue Zhong, this meant there was no reconciliation between Yue Zhong and the Fang Clan.

Unless a Type 9 powerhouse came out to intervene or mediate, the Fang Clan would not let things go. Furthermore, most Type 9 powerhouses were peak characters, while Yue Zhong and George were just considered small-time characters in front of them. They did not know any Type 9 powerhouses, so it would be a stretch to hope for reconciliation.

George had a cold look, as he ordered out, "Roger, seal the exit. Clean up everything here!!"

"Yes!"

The silent guardian of the location appeared and replied with a low voice, before disappearing.

Fang Ming's face changed as he shrieked, "No!! No, please, don't

kill me!! I will go and plead the ancestor from the Fang Clan!! You guys can take me as hostage!! With that, the Fang Clan would not touch you! An imprint of my consciousness is placed in our Fang Clan's Soul Hall if I were to die, and the imprint goes out, the Fang Clan would definitely send people to investigate, and you guys will have no way of hiding it."

Yue Zhong's heart shook slightly, as he grabbed Fang Ming and knocked him out, "So there's such a thing, I'll spare your life then!!"

At the same time, a Type 7 Puppet Rune was sent into his head, turning Fang Ming into his puppet.

George stared at the unconscious Fang Ming and laughed bitterly, his expression sullen, "This time, we're really in trouble."

He had intended to give Yue Zhong a surprise, by giving Dong Yu Yao to him, in order to pull both sides closer. Who would have thought that someone from the Fang Clan would be here, and caused such trouble? This was a huge headache for him. If not handled properly, the Holy Sirius Empire was in danger of being annihilated.

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, "Don't worry, as long as I join the Northern Temple and become a Holy Son, the Fang Clan would not dare touch me either."

George squeezed out a bitter smile, "In that case, I'll have to trouble you then."

Since things had come to this point, George could only rely on Yue Zhong.

Seeing the broken center, everyone lost interest and began to clear out the place.

Yue Zhong then brought Dong Yu Yao and the puppet Fang Ming and left.

After reaching the palace, Dong Yu Yao followed Yue Zhong

silently, towards where he was supposed to stay.

"Greetings Master!"

When Yue Zhong came to his assigned room, there were 20 beautiful young women kneeling outside the room, greeting him.

These were all incredible beauties, and could easily command attention anywhere in the world, and yet, with a single sentence from Yue Zhong, they would give their all obediently.

Under their welcome, Yue Zhong led Dong Yu Yao into his room.

When Yue Zhong entered the room, the women kneeling outside stood up and gazed at his back with shock in their eyes.

One of them spoke up with uncertainty, "Wasn't that... Dong Yu Yao?!"

"The Dong Yu Yao?! The idol of all 4 empires?! She is actually Master Yue Zhong's lover?! Unbelievable! Isn't she supposed to be a pure maiden?!"

"I was her fan!! Seems like her image is broken now..."

"..."

The few beauties began to engage in small talk. Dong Yu Yao's appearance had shocked them thoroughly. They could not imagine that the top superstar would actually become Yue Zhong's women.

One of them who exuded an elegant demeanor frowned and barked out softly, "All of you, quiet. This is the palace. How could you guys talk behind your master's back? Are you sick of living?"

Hearing that reminder, the rest of them quickly fell silent, not daring to speak further. They knew how strict the rules of the palace was, and if they were not careful, they could be reduced to an ice-cold corpse without them knowing.

Upon entering the room, Yue Zhong saw someone who he did not expect, "Why are you here?"

Lying on the soft bed, with a healthy skin color and an alluring figure that was dressed in a tight suit, accentuating her curves, while her flushed face turned away from Yue Zhong in shyness.

The woman was precisely Aisha, who had followed Yue Zhong all the way from Adenia Town.

Aisha gathered her courage to speak to Yue Zhong, "I want to be with you!"

The moment she said that she felt as though a huge weight had been lifted, and she stood up bravely, burrowing into Yue Zhong's embrace, while she moaned out in a flustered voice, "Take me!!"

Yue Zhong felt the lithe and nimble body in his arms as he took in her scent, and his body burned with desire. He hugged her back and placed her on the bed, getting on top of her.

Not too long after, there was a sharp moan from Aisha, as a small red puddle formed on the pure white bed sheet.

Dong Yu Yao stood at the side, her face scarlet red as she watched the scene of spring, before hesitating a short moment and entering the bathroom to take a bath.

After taking an entire hour to bathe, the fairy-like Dong Yu Yao finally walked out from the bathroom.

Dong Yu Yao had just walked out of the bathroom when a huge hand reached out to grab her into his embrace and his lips locked deeply with hers.

Dong Yu Yao was startled, but soon, she stretched out her tongue to meet Yue Zhong's passion.

The 2 of them embraced and after a while, there's another puddle of blood on the bed sheet.

At the moment when Yue Zhong and Dong Yu Yao were joined as one, a cooling sensation traveled from Dong Yu Yao into his body.

This energy was the Xiantian Primordial Yin from Dong Yu Yao's

Yin-Jade Physique and it was extremely precious. It could transform a person entirely, reaching higher potential through metamorphosis.

The Xiantian Primordial Yin would not be of much use to someone like George, who was already at the limit of his talents and had spent much of his life force. However, to Yue Zhong, who had a bountiful life force within him, it was a powerful nourishment.

As the clear and soothing Yin energy went into Yue Zhong's body, it joined with the life force within him. At that instant, it felt like his entire body was ignited, and the life force transformed, charging into his sea of knowledge. The golden energy that resulted then coursed through his body once more and seeped into his bone, transforming even his marrow into the color of gold.

After the energy was gone, Yue Zhong's bones were transformed into godly bones, and he finally reached the high-Type 8 realm.

Early the next morning, Yue Zhong opened his eyes and felt refreshed. He looked at Dong Yu Yao's fragile expression beside him, as his eyes flashed with warmth, "This lass seems to be a lucky star, to think that she helped me break through to the high-Type 8 realm. I should be able to take on a half-step Type 9 powerhouse like this."

At this moment, Dong Yu Yao stirred awake. She took a look at Yue Zhong beside her, and was frightened as she squealed, "No more, I can't take it!!"

Seeing that lovable expression, Yue Zhong was stirred, and could not help but pounce towards her, and hugged her tightly.

Chapter 948: Starship Port!

After spending an amazing morning together, Yue Zhong brought Aisha, Dong Yu Yao, and Fang Ming to the port.

"Yue Zhong, I still have to manage the affairs of the Holy Sirius Empire, therefore, I can't follow you this time." George extended his apologies, before turning around to his children and ordered, "Jody, Lina & Bisiya, the three of you had better listen to your Uncle Yue Zhong, and be good guides, understood?"

This time, other than Jody and Lina, there was a 15-16-year-old girl who had her long hair tied up in 2 ponytails, looking extremely cute yet possessing a devilish body with a pair of D-cup breasts. She looked at Yue Zhong curiously, while smiling sweetly.

Hearing George's orders, the 3 of them replied respectfully, "Yes, Father!!"

'Goodbye!!'

"Goodbye!"

Soon after, a huge battleship soared out of the port at Guha City.

Within the imperial palace, a huge beam of light shot out and blasted towards the skies, revealing a huge door out of thin air.

The battleship soared straight into it and disappeared.

The huge door also gradually disappeared after the battleship soared through it.

"Was that spatial power? I could sense some fluctuations of space earlier. It was too bad that the fluctuation was a little weak."

Upon entering the door, Yue Zhong shut his eyes and tried to perceive the changes in the tunnel they had appeared in. It was just that he only managed to sense a sliver at the moment the tunnel was opened.

Inside the tunnel, space was turbulent, with random and

powerful waves crashing everywhere. There were powerful principles and laws hidden within the turbulence, but this was a place that not even a Type 9 powerhouse dared to enter with their own fleshy body. The moment Yue Zhong were to try it, his body would be ripped apart.

Currently, amidst the chaotic space, there was a single tunnel that was relatively peaceful, and the group continued to traverse along the path inside their battleship.

Just then, a bright voice rang out, "You're Dong Yu Yao!! I know you!! You're Dong Yu Yao!! Big sis Yu Yao, I'm a huge fan!! Can you sign an autograph?"

Yue Zhong turned around, only to see the huge-breasted Bisiya bouncing towards Dong Yu Yao, practically begging for an autograph with a starstruck expression.

She was at the age where she would chase after idols and idolized the top idol of the 4 kingdoms very much.

Dong Yu Yao looked at her, chuckling slightly, as she signed on the board that Bisiya brought over, "Sure!!"

Jody walked up to Yue Zhong, looking at him with a complicated gaze, "Uncle Yue Zhong, you're truly formidable. To think that you've gotten the most sought-after pearl within a single day in our empire. Congratulations, Yu Yao is the dream woman of many within the 4 kingdoms. I'm guessing that many men would be heartbroken soon."

Dong Yu Yao was truly the dream lover for many men due to her status, and Jody was no exception, having harbored feelings for her secretly. In the end, she had ended up belonging to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong chuckled, but changed the subject, "Haha. Any idea how long it would take to reach the Holy Heavens on this tunnel?"

Jody spoke, "5 minutes, it takes 5 minutes through this passage to reach the Holy Heavens."

Yue Zhong continued to ask, "Can the spatial tunnel of the Sirius Empire reach the other kingdoms?"

Jody replied, "No, the spatial tunnel in every human kingdom only leads to the Holy Heavens, and it's only there where one can find ways to other kingdoms and empires.

Yue Zhong immediately understood the underlying military application of such a system, "IN that case, doesn't it mean that humans could swiftly deploy their forces anywhere from the Holy Heavens?"

Jody spoke, "That's true, by using the tunnels, the numerous human kingdoms would be connected to the Holy Heavens. Which is to say, the tunnels are the core part of a kingdom, if it's destroyed, it's over for that empire. In our fights against some of the other species, those with intelligence would usually choose to target the spatial gates.

Yue Zhong then spoke, "The consumption of energy for the activation of the gates should be pretty steep, right?"

Jody nodded, "That's right. Each time, it would cost a Type 7 Mutant Beast nucleus to be consumed to the point of its destruction. That is why we don't usually activate it."

"We're here!!"

As the 2 were still talking, there was a huge door that suddenly appeared in the midst of the chaotic space, and the huge battleship passed through it, appearing on the other side.

The battleship soared through the gates and appeared over an enormous planet.

There were many spatial gates that opened and closed rapidly, as numerous battleships appeared out of those gates and flew towards the planet.

Yue Zhong stared at the shocking sight below and asked, "A planet!! The Holy Heavens is actually a planet? Or is this the Great

God World?"

Jody explained, "The Holy Heavens truly is a planet. The Great God World is vast, its horizons of unimaginable size. About a million kilometer altitude is space. Beyond space, there are many galaxies and nebula systems that surround the Great God World. Many of the foreign races and species are from those places. Therefore, the fact that the Holy Heavens being a planet is not too surprising."

When Yue Zhong heard this, he reacted quickly. He was taken aback because he had never seen such a case before. Yue Zhong had never even left Earth within his own world, never been to the moon, and that was why he felt slightly lost.

Yue Zhong looked out the battleship and discovered many open spatial gates, taking up an area of over 300km across, with many huge mech fortresses floating around, each of them easily over 3km tall.

Within these fortresses, there were numerous C-Grade Particle Cannons, capable of injuring Type 8 powerhouses. At the same time, there was one single D-Grade Particle Cannon powered by countless Mutant Beast nuclei in each and every fortress.

The might of the D-Grade Cannon was immense. Most Type 9 powerhouses would easily be annihilated by a single hit of that cannon.

There were over 100 mech fortresses, and other than them, there were also over 100,000 other smaller fortresses with only C-Grade Particle Cannons covering about 10km each.

The dense network of fortresses formed a powerful defense grid, and under their coordination, even a peak-Type 9 powerhouse would perish here.

As Yue Zhong took in the surroundings, the battleship they were on slowly arrived at one nearby port.

No battleship was allowed to fly directly into the Holy Heavens. They could only dock at the designated mech fortresses, and after going through strict checks, they could then be transported through transfer gates.

"Hello, I'm the guide 1160, please come with me."

Just as Yue Zhong and his party disembarked, an ordinary-looking lady with decent features appeared, smiling at them.

"Sure!"

The group knew the rules, thus, they followed her.

Along the way, Yue Zhong continued to reach out with his perception, his eyes filled with shock, "What terrifying capital. Everyone's at least at the Type 5 realm here."

Within this particular port, there were easily 3 million inhabitants, each of them over the Type 5 realm. Here, a Type 5 powerhouse was actually considered the weakest.

On Earth, any one of them would be considered a talented individual already. However, here, they were just ordinary folk.

Right at this time, there was a grating voice, "Isn't this Jody and Lina? You guys came back too? I thought that you would stay holed up in that shit hole you call an empire."

Yue Zhong turned around, only to see 8 young men and women walking over, the leader a handsome young man of blue eyes and hair, his demeanor arrogant.

Jody turned to look, and his face sunk, "Arcadia... it's you?"

Arcadia laughed out lightly, and his gaze landed on Dong Yu Yao. He was immediately attracted, as he spoke, out, "That's right, it's me! Hi beautiful! I'm Arcadia, the Divine Envoy of the Western Temple, a glorious Type 7 Divine Warrior. Come, let us date."

Dong Yu Yao laughed out coyly, her mannerism enough to cause time to stop for a moment, as she grabbed Yue Zhong's right hand

lightly, her bountiful chest pressing against him, "I already belong to him."

Seeing this, all the men stared at Yue Zhong with jealousy and envy.

Within these port, with over 3 million people, there was not a single woman who could compare to Dong Yu Yao.

Seeing that smile of hers, Arcadia felt his heart speed up before he tore his gaze reluctantly to look at Yue Zhong. After a moment of careful assessment, he spoke up, "This mister, I don't seem to have seen you before. You're not from our Holy Heavens, are you?"

Chapter 949: Howling Dragons and Roaring Tigers!

Yue Zhong continued impassively, "I'm here to join the Holy Heavens."

Arcadia laughed out, and extended a warm invitation, "Then let me recommend you to join the Western Temple. Within the 5 temples, the Western Temple's strength is on par with the Central Temple, with a sizeable amount of resources. If you join us, I can help you too."

In this Starship Port, Arcadia knew he could not act unbridled. However, if Yue Zhong were to join the Western Temple, he would not even have to resort to any violent means, he could deal with him through various underhanded ways. Using such a method, he had already broken up numerous couples.

Seeing that, the 2 women behind Arcadia had sunken expressions and their eyes flashed with jealousy. However, they did not say anything. They were his lovers and were naturally unwilling to see Dong Yu Yao being roped in by Arcadia too. However, he was the Divine Envoy and had a prestigious status, there was nothing they could do.

"Not interested, let's go!" Yue Zhong did not bother with Arcadia and brought his people along.

One handsome man with graceful looks, comparable to a girl, laughed, "Haha, Dia, this young punk did not place you in his eyes. Pretty arrogant eh, why don't you go teach him a lesson, and teach him the rules of the Holy Heavens."

There was a crafty look in Arcadia's eyes, as he spoke slowly, "Dyman, that fellow is not simple. I can't see his strength level. He should have some form of a technique that masks it. If we were to act without investigating, who knows, we might get humiliated

instead. Let's follow after them. In front of the Initiation Gate, he would definitely have to go through it as a newcomer. Once we know his strength, then we can decide what to do."

His companions agreed, "Yeah!"

In order to be domineering, one needed to have the capital. Within this Holy Heavens, there were numerous talented geniuses. Arcadia did not wish to offend someone he did not know anything about.

Fang Ming dared to throw his weight around because to him, the Holy Sirius Empire was basically a village. He could do anything he liked.

If it were in the Holy Heavens, then it would be different. Fang Ming would be careful, and not casually provoke someone he did not know anything about. Who knows, an ordinary Type 5 powerhouse might be the son, or grandson, or great-grandson, of some Type 9 old freak. If he made a mistake, there would be hell to pay.

The guide brought the party to a tall gate, standing at over a hundred meters tall, covered with numerous strange and mystical runes, as well as embedded with countless Mutant Beast nuclei. It looked ancient and powerful. She spoke, "This is the Initiation Gate. Please step through it to be evaluated."

Yue Zhong glanced at it and walked through it confidently.

When Yue Zhong walked through the gate, a golden beam shone directly on his body.

At that instant, a golden pillar shot out from Yue Zhong, heading for the skies, and congealed into an image of a huge golden dragon and a powerful golden tiger, as both illusions clashed and let out a powerful roar that shook the entire Starship Port.

The moment Arcadia saw that image, he was shocked till his mouth hung agape, his eyes filled with disbelief, "The mingling of

a golden dragon and golden tiger! This is the legendary state of the Howling Dragon and Roaring Tiger! This fellow is actually at the high-Type 8 realm before the age of 50?! A powerful physique and a terrifying innate potential! As long as he is not killed, he's likely to reach the Type 9 half-God stage!! Where the hell did Jody and the rest find this freak?!"

When he thought to earlier, he felt a sense of fear, "Thankfully I was just being sarcastic and did not offend this monster, otherwise, he could have killed me in a single slap!!"

As for Yue Zhong's guide, when she saw the image, her face was filled with shock as well. She had never expected the person she was in charge of to be such a character, a potential Type 9 powerhouse in the future.

After all, even within the Holy Heavens, there were not many Type 9 powerhouses. Every single one of them was a major character, a leader of their own factions. Their combat strength was astonishing, and their actions mysterious. One would not need to pass through the gate to enter the planet.

Jody stared in excitement while thinking, "State of the Howling Dragon and Roaring Tiger!!! It was actually so high!! If he does not meet with any mishap, he will definitely become a Type 9 powerhouse!! Amazing!! We actually managed to befriend such an expert!! This is great news for the Sirius Empire!!"

As for Dong Yu Yao, Lina and Bisiya, they stared on in wonder.

"State of the Howling Dragon and Roaring Tiger!! It's a rare occurrence!! Who is it?! Who is this future peak expert?!"

"Image of the Howling Dragon and Roaring Tiger!! To think there was a monster who could summon such a vision!! I had thought that it was just a myth!!"

"..."

Seeing the powerful image in the sky, many experts within the

port came swarming over.

Within moments, the area in front of the Initiation Gate was packed full of people.

After the image maintained for a short 5 minutes, it disappeared, and from the skies, a golden card fell into Yue Zhong's hands.

When he obtained it, a number of messages came through, allowing him to understand the usage of the card. It was his identity card, and he could make use of it to engage in all sorts of transactions. With this card, he could now walk freely in the Holy Heavens.

If there was someone without an identity card that appeared in the Holy Heavens, he or she would immediately be targeted for annihilation. Under the joint efforts of experts, even a peak-Type 9 half-God powerhouse would be killed.

When he received the identity card, Yue Zhong swept a gaze towards the guide, who finally regained her senses, and quickly explained the usage of the card to Yue Zhong, while bringing them through a spatial transfer gate with respect.

Inside the Holy Heavens, the main currency was contribution points. With those, one could buy anything. One of the ways to earn contribution points was to present items of value in exchange with an official, another was to complete missions given by anyone within the Holy Heavens. There was one more, which was to engage in trade.

As she finished explaining, the group stepped through the transfer gate and disappeared.

Just as they left, a man charged up to the guide and asked, "Who was that man? Tell me and I'll give you 10 contribution points."

In the Holy Heavens, a single Type 4 Beast nucleus was worth 1 point, 10 points would allow a purchase of 10 nuclei. To a guide, it was a sizeable fortune.

Another man charged up and waved his own card, "Give me the exclusive, and I'll pay a 100 contribution points!"

"I'll pay 300 points for the exclusive information on that man!!"

"..."

A flurry of activity then broke out as experts rushed forward, each hoping to obtain information on Yue Zhong. Faced with such enthusiasm, the guide was slightly flustered but excited at the same time.

At this moment, a man in golden robes walked slowly forward, as he exuded a Type 8 pressure and barked out, "Out of my way!"

Under that pressure, the crowd immediately separated into two, "Holy Son Zhuo Nan."

He then smiled slightly, taking out a Type 6 Mutant Beast nucleus and placed it in the hand of the guide, saying, "Miss, I'll have to trouble you to give me the information on the man. This is your reward!"

"Thank you!" The guide was moved, and she quickly spoke of everything she knew about the group.

"So that was the case!"

After gaining the information, his figure flashed, as he brought the guide through the spatial transfer gate along with him.

At the moment as he entered, he waved his hands and caused a blockade to form outside the gate.

After the Holy Son Zhuo Nan went through the gate, many experts surged forwards in a bid to follow after him.

"Damn it, it's sealed!"

"So domineering!!"

"Bastard!!"

"..."

As the powerhouses charged through the spatial gate, they slammed into the huge shield and was sent flying back.

The experts could not help but curse out.

Arcadia took out a communicator and hurriedly reported all that he had witnessed, "Connect me to his Highness, Holy Son Xin Luo now!!"

At various parts of the Holy Heavens, the experts were all taking out their communicators to convey the news of the appearance of a future Type 9-powerhouse.

In the Central Temple, atop a crystal palace built on top of a floating mountain, came a booming voice, "What? The image of a dragon and tiger appeared? Zhuo Nan, are you for real?"

Zhuo Nan spoke respectfully, "Master, it is true. I saw it with my own eyes. He's a young man called Yue Zhong, and when he passed the Initiation Gate, he caused the image of a howling dragon and roaring tiger to appear! It was witnessed by many others over here at Starship Port as well!"

Chapter 950: Contest!

The voice continued with a satisfied tone, "Very good, Zhuo Nan, well done. You're truly my disciple. As your reward, you may enter the Space Pagoda to practice spatial laws for 10 years!"

Zhuo Nan immediately rejoiced, "Many thanks, Master!!"

The Space Pagoda was one of the Gold-Grade Treasures within the Holy Heavens. Inside it, there was an abundant source of atmospheric energy, as well as stable spatial laws for a cultivator to comprehend.

If Zhuo Nan could go in for 10 years, it would be equivalent to practicing hard and bitterly outside for 300 years. He was naturally elated.

"Yue Zhong eh? Let me see, where are you now?" The mysterious voice from within the floating mountain sounded once more, as the owner opened his eyes, a pair of powerful and strange eyes that seemed capable of piercing through the heavens.

The pair of eyes suddenly flashed brightly, locking onto Yue Zhong's position, "Found you!!"

At that moment, the owner of the eyes took a step out and tore through space, entering the rip.

On top a floating mountain within the Western Temple, a young man with short golden hair, eagle eyes and hook nose, as well as handsome features had a change in expression. "What?! The image of a howling dragon and roaring tiger?! Such a young heaven-defying genius in a thousand years! We cannot let him go to the other temples!! He belongs to us!" With that, he disappeared.

"Is this the Holy Heavens? Truly extraordinary!!" Yue Zhong stepped out from the gate, and saw a resplendent sight, causing him to sigh.

The gravity on the planet of the Holy Heavens was a hundred

times stronger than Earth, and the energy was so much thicker and more vibrant.

The streets were clean, without any dust, and the structures were all maintained well and constructed beautifully. If any of these buildings were placed on Earth, they would easily win any architecture award, putting the most prestigious buildings to shame.

The pavements were wide and many automatic vehicles were floating and traversing, sending the passengers to where they wanted to go.

The transport system was not limited to the ground, as there were all sorts of vehicles floating through the air, according to different layers. Yue Zhong observed the area carefully and noticed that there were flying carpets, things with mechanical wings, anti-gravity floating vehicles, flying Mutant Beasts, flying foreign species, clouds, etc.

At the same time, there were a number of floating mountains as well as huge, gigantic mechanical forts, giving the Holy Heavens a sense of wonder.

As Yue Zhong was observing the surroundings, the space beside him suddenly split open, as a young man in a green robe, with short hair and decent looks, stepped out.

Yue Zhong saw the man and his body became tense. He retreated a few steps and stared at the man warily, "Type 9 powerhouse!! This fellow is a Type 9 powerhouse!!"

The man had an appreciative look as he spoke, "Ah, to be able to tell my strength and make the appropriate response. Not bad! Truly a talent that can produce the fabled image of the howling dragon and roaring tiger. Kid, I'm Tian Duo, the Holy Lord of the Central Temple. I can tell that you have a bright future, and am here to invite you to be my disciple. With my pointers, as long as you join us and complete the test to be a Holy Son, you can become

one of ours. Without my guidance, if you were to join other temples, you will have to start from the bottom, and slowly accumulate your contribution. It would take at least 5 years to complete the rest."

Within the Holy Heavens, with the 5 main temples as the bases, the Heavenly Lords were all at least peak Type 9 half-God powerhouses. Below them were the Holy Lords at the Type 9 realm, and below them, the Holy Sons at the Type 8 realms. Underneath the Holy Sons, there were a few Type 8 Elders who worked hard but had no way of breaking through. Below the Elders, there were Holy Sons-in-Training. Below them were the Divine Envoys, followed by the Divine Envoys-in-Training. After that were the Divine Servants, followed by the Divine Servants-in-Training. After that were the Ordinary Members, followed by the Ordinary Members-in-Training.

Yue Zhong's current identity was an Ordinary Member-in-Training. If he were to become a Holy Son, without anyone to recommend him, he would have to start from the bottom, continually completing missions and accumulating points. After reaching a certain level, then he would be able to raise in rank.

With Yue Zhong's current high-Type 8 realm, although he could quickly complete them and rise through the ranks, it would still take up some time.

Yue Zhong quickly made his decision, asking sincerely, "It is an honor to receive your invitation. Dare I ask Master, what are the customs to recognizing one as a Master? I'm not entirely sure about the traditions and customs here."

Yue Zhong had originally intended to join the Northern Temple. However, the fact that this Holy Lord Tian Duo came to invite him personally, it was giving Yue Zhong a lot of face. He was not someone who did not know how to reciprocate, therefore, he made the decision.

Right at this time, another spatial tear happened, as a golden-haired, hooked-nose man stepped out and barked out, "Hold it!!"

The man's gaze was electrifying, as he stared at Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, I'm from the Western Temple, Holy Lord Ursula. I admire you a lot, and I'm here to invite you to join our Western Temple. Accept me as your Master. As long as you join us, I will do my best to propel you to become a Holy Son within the shortest possible time. I can even grant you the authority to cultivate for 100 years within the Space Pagoda."

Inside the Holy Heavens, although all 5 Temples share the same goal in defending against external forces, there was sure to be internal strife and a disparity in strength.

The Heavenly Lords of all 5 Temples were all engrossed in discovering and comprehending the secrets of the world. Unless it came to a situation where the whole of humanity was at risk, they would be spending most of their time cultivating.

Like this, the strength of the 5 Temples depended on the other Type 9 powerhouses.

Among them, the Central Temple had the most Type 9 powerhouses. Their strength was also the strongest, and the resources the most abundant.

Although the number of Type 9 powerhouses within the Holy Heavens was not particularly high, there was still a difference of 3 powerhouses between the Western and Central Temples. If the Western Temple could pull Yue Zhong over, they would decrease the distance in the future.

Holy Lord Tian Dou frowned and asked, "Ursula, I was here first, how can you try to snatch a person in front of me?"

Ursula shot him a disdainful glance, "Tian Dou, there's no first come first serve. Yue Zhong can make the choice. It is his freedom."

Holy Lord Tian Dou's expression sunk as he frowned. He was intending to offer even better conditions. After all, compared to a future Type 9 powerhouse, a few conditions were nothing much.

If it was not for the strict rules of the Holy Heavens, Holy Lord Tian Dou would have promoted Yue Zhong to a Holy Son instantly.

Yue Zhong then bowed to Holy Lord Ursula, his voice apologetic, "Holy Lord Ursula, I'm so sorry, but I've already agreed to Holy Lord Tian Dou to join the Central Temple and accept him as my Master. I appreciate your intentions."

Ursula revealed a look of regret and pity, as he sighed, "What a pity, a pity!! I was late by just that much."

"Since I'm already here, it could be considered to be fate as well. Here's a communication talisman, with this, you can contact me directly." Ursula took out a talisman and threw it to Yue Zhong, before he clapped his hands and tore through space, stepping into the spatial tear.

Ursula was an intelligent man. Although he did not manage to pull Yue Zhong over, he still left with favorable feelings. If Yue Zhong could become a Type 9 powerhouse, who knows, they might become friends.

Yue Zhong, "Thank you, Holy Lord Ursula."

Holy Lord Tian Dou looked at Yue Zhong, his impression of him getting better by the second. His gaze then swept to Aisha beside Yue Zhong, and he could not help but frown, "Who is this woman? How come she's only at the Type 4 realm?"

These few days, Yue Zhong had also made use of some resources to push Aisha to the Type 4 realm.

Yue Zhong quickly explained, "Master, she is my woman, and has yet to reach the Type 5 realm, hence she can only make use of the temporary card to travel with me."

Holy Lord Tian Dou waved his hands, tearing a hole in space,

"Those who are not yet in the Type 5 realm cannot join a Temple. I will arrange for her to be trained in a camp. Come with me."

"Yes!" Yue Zhong replied, before turning to Jody apologetically, "Sorry, Jody, I've joined the Central Temple."

Jody smiled warmly, "No worries. Joining the Central Temple is even more beneficial to you. When you make it big, don't forget this old friend."

"Of course!"

Yue Zhong laughed, and turned, bring Dong Yu Yao and the rest through the spatial hole.

Looking at Yue Zhong's disappearing back, Lina's gaze turned complicated, as she spoke with a lowered voice, "He's gone."

Jody's gaze also turned complicated as he sighed, "In the end, he's not of the same mold as us. It's understandable that he'd leave."

Lina kept quiet.

At this moment, space ripped apart again, as a beautiful woman stepped out, her long golden locks flowing till her waists. She looked at Jody and her brows arched, "Jody, where's the young man who had caused the image of a dragon and tiger?"

Chapter 951: Missions for a Holy Son!

Jody stared at the woman, who possessed an incredible aura and seemed above anyone else, and spoke respectfully, "Holy Lord Yue Hua, the man Yue Zhong who was with us, and had triggered the image of a dragon and tiger during his initiation had already been taken away by the Holy Lord Tian Dou from the Central Temple, and joined them."

The beautiful woman was precisely the Holy Lord Yue Hua, in charge of the floating mountain of the Northern Temple. Her combat strength was astonishing and was the highest authority of 15 different human empires.

Her brows furrowed, as she spoke in a strong tone, that revealed her dissatisfaction, "Jody, since you're on good terms with Yue Zhong, why didn't you invite him to join our Northern Temple?"

To be able to trigger such a phenomenon during the initiation ceremony, it was a rare occurrence, and such an expert was definitely a peak talent. As long as he did not perish, he was sure to have a bright future.

Of the 5 heads within the Holy Heavens, 2 of them had also caused similar phenomena when they had first entered.

If Yue Zhong could be taken in as part of the Northern Temple, then when he reached the Type 9 realm, their strength would increase by leaps and bounds.

Jody chuckled bitterly and explained himself, "Ma'am, I had wanted to bring him. However, the Holy Lord Tian Dou appeared personally to invite him, there was nothing I could do too."

To receive the invitation personally from one of the important figures of the Holy Heavens, it was impossible to reject. It was especially so for those with no background. If they were to offend a Type 9 powerhouse, then it would be difficult to traverse the Holy

Heavens in the future.

Holy Lord Yue Hua sighed deeply, as her jade-like hands waved to tear space apart and she stepped through it, "What a pity! I was late just by a step!"

Lina asked, "Jody, what should we do now?"

Jody fell in silent contemplation, "Let's head back to the Northern Temple."

Having made a decision, the group quickly left.

On the other side, Yue Zhong's party stepped out of the spatial tear and arrived on the floating mountain that belonged to the Holy Lord Tian Dou.

Holy Lord Tian Dou pointed at the crystal palace on the peak of the mountain, saying, "This crystal palace is called the Tian Dou Palace, my living quarters. There are 8 mountain peaks behind it, where 8 of your senior brothers are currently residing in. The 9th peak shall be called Heng Yue Peak, and that is where you will reside."

Yue Zhong took a look and could sense the immense energy emitting from the peak. With joy and excitement in his heart, he replied, "Yes!"

Holy Lord Tian Dou then barked out in a low voice, "Xue Luo!"

A green spirit then materialized in front of Holy Lord Tian Dou, forming a human-like demon, with a green face and long, sharp canines, "Master, Xue Luo is here!"

Holy Lord Tian Dou ordered, "Go take these ladies to Heng Yue Peak, and arrange for their accommodations."

Xue Luo replied swiftly, "Yes! Master! Ladies, please follow me."

Dong Yu Yao and the other 2 followed Xue Luo away towards the Heng Yue Peak.

Holy Lord Tian Dou brought Yue Zhong towards his own crystal

palace.

Under his lead, they came to a beautiful pavilion made out of crystal, surrounded by a lake filled with fragrant wine. The air was thick with an intoxicating scent, and within the lake, there were strange Mutant Beasts, even a few mermaids swimming within.

The 2 of them sat down, and 2 beautiful mermaids shot out from the lake, landing beside the 2 of them, their fish tails transforming into legs. They looked no different from any beautiful ladies, as they each held a jar of wine, as they poured out a cup for the Holy Lord Tian Dou and Yue Zhong.

Holy Lord Tian Dou waved his hands and a number of 1000-year lotuses shot out from the lake, landing on a jade plate as he casually took one and bit into it, offering some to Yue Zhong with a smile, "Eat up, these lotuses taste decent."

The 2 mermaids stared at the 1,000-year lotuses, their eyes filled with expectation. These lotuses were precious, formed from the essence of this wine lake, not only were they delicious, there were the miraculous effects of washing and tempering one's bones and marrows to have a qualitative change. If those 2 Type 6 mermaids could eat one, there was a chance to evolve to the Type 7 realm.

Yue Zhong took one piece and bit into it, and immediately, a powerful taste of wine was released into his mouth, and as it entered him, a clear energy coursed through his body, shaking his mental faculties slightly.

Holy Lord Tian Dou chuckled before a silver card flew out and landed in Yue Zhong's hands, "This is an identity token representing a Divine Envoy. From now on, you are a Divine Envoy of the Central Temple."

He then pointed to thin air, as a number of detailed instructions appeared, "In order to become a Holy Son of our Central Temple, these are the missions you'll have to complete. Here, there are a few mission, you can pick 5 of your choosing."

Although he could also directly transmit the details to Yue Zhong's sea of notification, it was considered an offensive thing to do.

When Yue Zhong glanced through them, he realized they were all extremely detailed, with some requiring a few death-defying tasks like killing 3 groups of Type 8 powerhouses. One of them was especially special, the moment that task was completed, one could become a Holy Son.

It was to charge into the Man-Eating Divine Temples, as well as the 10,000-Devil Altar and kill a half-step Type 9 powerhouse.

Within any of the powers, a half-step Type 9 powerhouse was important, once one was killed, it would be a huge loss to the faction.

If Yue Zhong could take down one from the Man-Eating Divine Temple or the 10,000-Devil Altar, that could prove that he was not a spy from the foreign races.

Yue Zhong's gaze flashed, as he chose 5 missions, one of which was the assassination of a half-step Type 9 powerhouse from those 2 enemy factions, "These are my choices!"

When he first entered the Great God World, he might not have been a match for a half-step Type 9 powerhouse. However, he had since risen by 2 small tiers, and already possessed the confidence of dealing with one.

There was a look of admiration in the gaze of the Holy Lord Tian Dou. He grabbed out and those 5 missions formed into a card, before handing it to Yue Zhong, "Good! These are the information on the missions. Once you've completed them, you will have completed the rites to the Master-disciple relationship. I will then impart all that I know, to you!"

One's mantras could not be passed on so easily, although Holy Lord Tian Dou was appreciative of Yue Zhong, he had to test him

as well, to see if Yue Zhong was sincere about joining the Holy Heavens.

Once Yue Zhong completed those tasks, his hands would be stained with the blood of foreign species, he naturally would belong to the Holy Heavens.

Yue Zhong was not surprised, as he replied respectfully, "Yes!"

Holy Lord Tian Dou was an efficient man, once he handled everything, he let Yue Zhong leave.

When he returned to Heng Yue Peak, Yue Zhong took out his identity card and went into the network, "Let's see what privileges does a Divine Envoy have?"

Inside the Holy Heavens, there was a network that encompassed the entire world, allowing the inhabitants to communicate.

When Yue Zhong logged on, he was instantly swarmed with numerous notifications, "What amazing capital. This virtual network actually covers the entire human race, allowing all 108,765 human kingdoms to be linked up. As long as one has a Holy Heavens identity card, they could use the network to communicate."

The network reached all human cities, and each human kingdom was like a transmitting station.

However, only those of the highest authority could make use of the system. Ordinary folk did not know they were living under the surveillance of such an extensive network.

As a Divine Envoy of the Holy Heavens, Yue Zhong's authority within the network was decently high. He could easily investigate any person below his level of authority, digging up everything from their past. If he wanted to find someone, such a power was incredibly terrifying.

Yue Zhong quickly glanced through the information, before he turned his attention to the exchange system, and soon, a list of

items appeared in front of his eyes.

"Type 9 Mutant Beast Blood, one vial: 100 million contribution points required. (only Divine Envoys and above can exchange.)"

"Type 8 Mutant Beast, Alive: 2 billion contribution points. (only Elders and above can exchange.)"

"Type 8 Mech Armor: 1.5 billion points. (only Elders and above can exchange.)"

" written by Type 9 expert Huo Lin: 10 billion contribution points. (only Holy Sons and above can exchange.)"

"Life Fountain Water, one bottle, allows one to transform their bones and marrows. If a Type 7 powerhouse consumes this, greatly increases chances of breaking through to the Type 8 realm: 500 million contribution points. (only Divine Envoys and above can exchange.)"

"..."

Yue Zhong glanced through it roughly, and could already make out many heavenly treasures. Not only were they expensive, but they also required certain statuses to purchase. With Yue Zhong's current status, there were still many items he could not exchange for.

For example, the written by the Type 9 powerhouse Huo Lin, Yue Zhong wanted that badly, however, he did not even possess that many contribution points and his identity was not high enough to authorize that purchase.

Chapter 952: Cheng Tang Mountain!

Yue Zhong looked at all the items with red eyes, while thinking to himself, "No, I need to complete the missions fast, that way, I can earn contribution points to purchase items suitable for me, and quickly reach the Type 9 realm."

5 days passed by quickly. During these 5 days, Yue Zhong had been cultivating diligently to consolidate his strength, while obtaining as much intelligence as he could from the network.

He had killed Fang Sheng, and turned Fang Ming into his puppet, thus offending the Fang Clan greatly. He had to make preparations for itself.

On this day, Yue Zhong had just exited from the network, when Dong Yu Yao came up to him and said, "Yue Zhong, Jody's here. He's waiting in the living room."

"I got it!"

When Yue Zhong came to the living room, he noticed Jody was sitting alongside a beautiful woman with long, blonde hair, her figure voluptuous, and dressed in red leather.

Jody immediately introduced her to Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, this is Holy Daughter Bianna from our Northern Temple. She has some matters she would like to discuss with you."

Bianna smiled charmingly and said, "How do you do, I'm Bianna, pleased to meet you."

Yue Zhong directly asked, "Hi, I'm Yue Zhong. May I ask, Miss Bianna, what exactly are you looking for me for?"

She adjusted herself, accentuating her figure even more for Yue Zhong's viewing pleasure, before laughing lightly, "Mr. Yue Zhong, I know that you have chosen the mission to explore the Merlot Battlefield. A few of my comrades and myself have chosen that same mission. The Merlot Battlefield is a public area, and not only

will there be spatial tears left behind by those Type 10 legends of the past, there are also spiritual imprints, undying devil spirits, as well as powerhouses from other species. I would like to invite you to join us on the expedition."

Yue Zhong then asked the crucial question, "In that case, how would we distribute any findings or spoils?"

She replied forthrightly, "If the person found the item, it belongs to him or her. If it were obtained as a group, then it would be determined by the efforts contributed."

With a thought, Yue Zhong agreed, "Sure! I'll join you guys!"

On such an expedition, the more people there were the better, Yue Zhong had also intended to head to the Merlot Battlefield for investigation.

Bianna then said, "3 days later, we'll meet at Chen Tang Mountain of the Tang Ce Empire, 10a.m. sharp."

"Sure!"

The Tang Ce Empire was the most remote of empires at the edge of human civilization, around the edge of that empire, there was nothing but a barren wasteland.

The foreign species were rampant in these wastelands, fighting amongst themselves continuously. There were even some Type 9 powerhouses among them. If it was not for the protection of the Holy Heavens, those foreign species would have already ravaged the Tang Ce Empire countless times.

Chen Tang Shan was a mountain that was the closest to the border, about 5,000m in height.

On this day, on top of the remote mountain, there were 4 people waiting.

Of the 4 people, there were 2 men and 2 women, the men handsome and suave, the women beautiful. Each of them looked

like immortals, exuding an indescribable aura that was attractive and extraordinary.

One of the men, who wore a green robe and had a long sword on at his waist frowned slightly, as he asked, "Why isn't Yue Zhong here yet?"

The other man, who had golden hair and blue eyes, his nose slightly red and he wore a white robe, laughed lightly, "Bi Feng, he's someone who could cause the image of dragons and tigers to appear, a rare genius of a thousand years, it's natural that he's some big shot."

Bianna laughed and replied, "Azaman, Bi Feng, it's only 9:56 now, it's still not time yet."

The last woman, who wore spectacles and a white round hat on her head, her entire body decked in white, spoke coldly, "It's already 9:57, to be precise. With only 3 minutes to the appointed time, yet, there's no sign of him. Seems like he would not be here punctually. Such a person, with no time management, lacks bearing. Furthermore, we're all Holy Sons and Holy Daughters of our respective Temples, while he's merely a Divine Envoy. How could he be so arrogant? When he becomes a Holy Son in the future, who's to say he would not be uncontrollable?"

While Yue Zhong's trigger of the tiger and dragon illusion had shocked many, it had left many others with a bitter taste in their mouths due to jealousy and envy.

The 4 on this Chen Tang Peak were the Holy Sons and Daughters of the Holy Heavens, each of them having gone through numerous tests, and were recognized as geniuses and talents. They were all confident of their own strength, and now that Yue Zhong was making them wait, they were naturally unhappy.

Bianna tried to console her friend, "Annie, there's still 2 minutes. I think he should be able to make it within the time."

Annie spoke coldly, "Let's hope so."

"I don't think I'm late!"

Right at this time, a mysterious voice sounded from one side of the peak. Hearing Yue Zhong's voice, the rest all stiffened, as they whirled around towards the direction of the voice, noticing Yue Zhong standing behind them.

Bianna smiled warmly, "Yue Zhong, you're here. How come I did not see you come up?"

The remaining people also looked at him, curious to find out how he had managed to come up noiselessly. After all, their perceptions had been scanning the entire peak this whole time. Even an ant would not be able to escape their notice. However, under their very noses, Yue Zhong had still appeared behind them. It was as creepy as a spirit.

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, "I used some methods, intending to give you all a surprise."

Bianna took the initiative to introduce them, "Yue Zhong, let me introduce you. This is Holy Daughter Annie from the Western Temple. This is Holy Son Azaman from the Eastern Temple, while this is Holy Son Bi Feng from the Southern Temple."

Yue Zhong grinned, "Hi y'all! I'm Yue Zhong, pleased to meet you guys."

Bi Feng spoke coldly, "Since everyone's here, let's go!"

After that, he shot off into the distance.

Annie and Azaman nodded towards Yue Zhong, before following after Bi Feng.

"Let's go!"

Bianna then led Yue Zhong as they soared into the great barren lands.

Chapter 953: Black Devil Clan!

Yue Zhong and the rest flew for a few hundred meters, when suddenly, Bi Feng, who was in the lead, came to a stop, his gaze serious, "Wait!"

The rest came to a halt and gazed ahead. In front of them, at about a dozen kilometers away, there were a number of black battleships, each one of them over 10,000m long. Inside these battleships, there were many humanoid creatures covered with black scales, a pair of horns on their heads, as well as a pair of demonic wings on their backs.

Annie spoke up coldly, "The Black Devil Clan! There are a total of 12 Black Devil Battleships. This is a huge fleet, and it likely possesses an entire regiment of soldiers. Usually, there would be 2 to 4 Type 8 powerhouses helming the fleet. If all goes according to past examples, the one leading such a troop would be a Type 8 expert. Since they've come out to the barren wastelands, it is likely that this is their slave-hunting team."

The Black Devil Clan was one of the 4 min Devil Clans among the Devils Race. They were bloodthirsty and savage, usually focusing on hunting other people to become their slaves while confiscating all their belongings.

Azaman frowned and asked, "Do we evade them?"

If it was just one battleship, he did not mind charging over to deal with the soldiers on board. However, against a huge fleet, the outcome would be unclear.

"Since they're here, we naturally have to deal with them! I'll make my move first!"

Yue Zhong gazed at the fleet, his eye filled with a blazing combat will. He took a single step and sped towards the 12 battleships.

Yue Zhong had risen to the high-Type 8 realm thanks to Dong Yu

Yao's Primordial Yin. However, the energy accumulated within him had been utilized and wiped out. He naturally needed more, and would not let these enemies off.

The physique of these Black Devil Clan warriors was much stronger than humans. If Yue Zhong could kill them, then he would gain a huge amount of life force.

Annie spoke coldly, "He actually rushed out! What do we do, Bi Feng?"

Within this group of 4, Bi Feng's strength was the highest, reaching the peak-Type 8 realm. He was just barely some ways into the half-step Type 9 realm. As the rest were at the high-Type 8 realms only, they could only look to Bi Feng in this situation.

Bi Feng had a dissatisfied look, "The fleet of the Black Devil Clan is not so easy to handle. Let him taste some problems first, when he cannot hold out, we will go and save him."

Azaman laughed lightly, "Fine, let us see what this man capable of triggering the dragon and tiger illusion, can do."

Bianna waved her hands, and a white sash soared out, wrapping the 4 of them as they disappeared from this space.

Yue Zhong was already on his way to one of the ships. In a manner of seconds, he reached the shield and fired a punch onto its frame.

With that, the entire ship was rocked, and with a violent explosion, there was a huge hole that was blasted at the point of impact from Yue Zhong's fist.

The moment Yue Zhong charged through the ship, with a thought, the surrounding atmospheric energy transformed into countless blades that sliced out everywhere.

Under the barrage of attacks, the numerous Black Devil Clan soldiers within the battleship were sliced up into countless pieces, as he absorbed the life force voraciously.

The soldiers of the Black Devil Clan were different from humans. They were naturally powerhouses, each of them at least belonging to the Type 5 realm. Their numbers in the Type 6 realm was even more. The life force from dozens of thousands of these soldiers would be even more abundant than a billion ordinary people.

Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong!

Within the battleship, there were numerous explosions. As that happened, critical parts of the battleship began to explode, as parts descended towards the ground.

A great number of Black Devil Clan soldiers flapped their wings, and flew out of the damaged battleships, heading towards the rest.

As for the remaining 11 battleships, they did not dare to be careless, quickly activating their energy shields, at the same time, aiming their main cannons at the huge battleship that Yue Zhong was still in.

Inside the remaining 11 battleships, one particular Type 8 commander, whose hands were wielding a battle spear engraved with runes, shouted out coldly, "Fire!!"

Immediately, the 11 cannons lit up and fired out, in that instance, a number of light beams burst forth, slamming into the huge battleship.

With a loud blast, the entire battleship, as well as the Black Devil Clan experts that had yet to escape, were all blasted into pieces.

"What a vicious Black Devil Clan!!" Before the cannons had fired, Yue Zhong had already fled out of the battleship, he stood in the air, and looked at the disintegrating battleship, and could not help feeling a sliver of fear. Had he been slightly slower, he would have been heavily injured as well.

After the 11 battleships had destroyed the ship, over a million Black Devil Clan soldiers soared out from the 11 battleships.

"What are they intending to do?"

Yue Zhong stared at the million Black Devil Clan soldiers with a strange glint in his eyes. He then reached out to grab, and a huge dragon claw condensed out of thin air, instantly gathering over a thousand soldiers and squashing them into meat paste.

With a thought, the atmospheric energy continued to roll and churn, forming multiple sharp blades that sliced out at the warriors.

Under that vicious attack, huge patches of the Black Devil Clan warriors were instantly killed.

One Type 8 Black Devil Clan general, whose body was shrouded in a black, devilish energy, wielding a 2m-long Devil Blade, stepped through the air and slashed out at Yue Zhong, "Brazen human!! I will tear you apart!!"

As the blade came slicing down, the surrounding energy was also absorbed into the blade, forming a terrifying blade beam that howled out.

Yue Zhong stared at the general and punched out right at the Devil Blade.

At that moment, the Devil Blade collapsed and was completely destroyed, while the body of the Black Devil Clan general was also obliterated in a mess of blood and flesh.

"General Lei Cha was killed!!"

"General Lei Cha was actually killed by a human, who is that?!"

"..."

Seeing the Black Devil General wiped out by Yue Zhong in a single fist, the soldiers of the Black Devil Clan were all shocked. They had not expected their guardian to be killed off so casually.

Azaman sighed in appreciation, "Powerful!"

Bi Feng spoke mildly, "Truly capable!"

Annie coldly snorted, "He's just so-so, at least he did not let down

the expectations of his potential."

The 4 of them were peak powerhouses of the Holy Heavens, and if they were to use their strength, they would be able to kill that Black Devil General as well. Hence, they were not too surprised by Yue Zhong's might. Instead, they were curious and wanted to see what else he was capable of.

Bianna laughed gently, "The next one is the true test of his skill."

The hundreds and thousands of Black Devil soldiers still alive quickly formed a huge formation. With a unified roar, dense devilish energy surged out from them, pouring into the Type 8 general among them.

After absorbing the energy, the Type 8 general began to execute some secret technique and formed into a giant half-step Type 9 Black Devil figure, formed from all of them combined together.

Bi Feng and the rest stared at this, their gazes turning serious, "It's here!!"

This Black Devil giant that was exuding a half-step Type 9 might, was an entity that could kill a Holy Son from the humans with only a single slap.

Once the Black devil giant was formed, it stepped out and used its huge fist to slap out at Yue Zhong. A powerful energy locked the area around, preventing Yue Zhong from moving away.

"Just nice, I wanted to see what's the difference between me and a half-step Type 9 powerhouse." Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a strange glint, and he sent out a fist at the hand of the Black Devil giant.

A loud explosion occurred.

As the terrifying energy blasted outwards in all directions, the hand of the Black Devil giant disintegrated. In just a strike, over thousands of Black Devil soldiers had been killed.

"Seems like such an imitation still cannot match up to a proper half-step Type 9 powerhouse. You're of no use to me, you can go to hell now."

Yue Zhong's gaze turned frosty after destroying the hand of the giant, and he then turned into a beam of light as he appeared in front of the mid-riff of the giant, sending out a powerful fist at the head of the Type 8 Devil Clan general within the formation.

Chapter 954: Destroying the Black Devil Giant!

At the center of the Black Devil Giant, the strength of the near-million Black Devil soldiers was gathered, forming a huge, black shield. Its defense was incredibly strong, however, under Yue Zhong's attack, it instantly shattered, and the general within was also annihilated, his body breaking apart.

The moment the general was killed, the entire giant that seemed capable of covering the heavens and wreck continents crumbled, and the million Black Devil soldiers were all struck by the backlash, spitting out blood and suffering grievous injuries.

At that moment, Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly and ignited the atmospheric energy to transform into a terrifying tornado of wind blades, sweeping up the Black Devil Clan soldiers.

Under the assault of the violent wind blades, the entire sky started pouring with blood, as pieces of flesh splattered on the ground.

Countless life energy swarmed into Yue Zhong.

Seeing how Yue Zhong wiped out the million-strong group of Black Devil warriors, Azaman, who had been treating it lightly, as though everything was a joke, finally had a serious look, as he muttered, "Strong!!"

Annie and the rest were also filled with shock, as though their hearts and minds were rocked.

The Black Devil giant might not be a true half-step Type 9 powerhouse, but it possessed enough strength to deal with a human Holy Son. Such an entity was dealt with so easily by Yue Zhong, it just showed how powerful Yue Zhong was.

Bianna had a complicated look as she spoke, "A person who could cause the howling dragon and roaring tiger phenomenon is truly

not simple!"

This time, the other 3 did not say anything to refute her, or anything sarcastic, as their eyes were filled with a look of acknowledgment without them knowing.

As for the rest of the Type 8 generals within the fleet saw the situation, their faces fell as they hollered out, "Retreat!! Retreat now!!"

Hearing that order from the Black Devil general, the remaining ships quickly spread out in a bid to flee.

After all, there was no force within this fleet that could take on Yue Zhong. Thus, they had made the right choice in fleeing.

"You want to run? Stay behind for me!"

Yue Zhong eyed the fleeing ships, and a cold look flashed in his eyes. With a grab out at thin air, 2 huge hands made out of energy closed in on the last 2 ships, pulling them back.

With a loud rumble, the 2 battleships were forced to an abrupt halt.

At that moment, Yue Zhong shot towards the huge battleship, his fists pummeling down and shattering the energy shield. He then passed through it easily.

Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong!

After a series of explosions, the battleship began to burst apart from within and descended towards the ground in a huge ball of fire.

Yue Zhong then continued to slam into the other battleship like a meteor, destroying it from within.

By the time Yue Zhong was done with those 2 ships, the other 9 battleships had fled till nothing could be seen of them.

Each battleship represented a huge source of power, if Yue Zhong had tried to spread out his strength, he would not have been able

to retain even a single ship.

Right at this time, Bianna suddenly flew out in front of Yue Zhong and laughed, "Yue Zhong, truly formidable."

Bi Feng came and motioned for them to continue, "Let's go, our target is the Merlot Battlefield."

Azaman revealed a smile, as he followed, "That's right, you're strong!"

Annie also nodded slightly, before flying off.

Having witnessed his strength, the 4 of them had already come to view Yue Zhong as an equivalent existence, and not disdain him just because of his identity.

Before this, they had already known of the commotion he caused with the image triggered. However, as old-timers, they had their own pride and were not able to view Yue Zhong as equal.

However, Yue Zhong had shown them what he was capable of, and they had no choice but to acknowledge it.

With a light laugh, Yue Zhong followed after. However, he was scanning his storage ring, checking out a blue crystal key with some doubt in his mind, "What treasure is this, why would the network not possess any information on this?"

This item had been picked up when he was destroying the 2nd battleship and discovered it within a jade box. In fact, there had been a Type 8 powerhouse guarding it. Unfortunately for the guard, Yue Zhong had killed him in one punch. The moment he obtained this key, he had checked the network for information, only to be met with nothing. This caused him to be even more sure that this crystal key that was emitting some strange aura, was a precious treasure. However, he just did not know what it was.

He then threw it to the back of his mind, "Forget it, let's wait till we're back before I check it out properly."

In the distance, the remaining 9 Battleships had fled a distance of thousands of kilometers, before gathering once more.

At this time, a powerful, mechanical planet of over a hundred kilometers in diameter descended in front of the 9 Battleships.

A terrifying voice filled with pressure traveled out, "Hei Chi, did you get the item?"

One Black Devil general of the Type 8 realm shot out from the battleships, kneeling on the ground as he trembled and reported, "Answering your Highness Holy Son Anchaman, the item was snatched away by a human powerhouse."

The Black Devil general opened his palm, and a green light shot through the skies, forming an image of Yue Zhong clashing with their forces, "This is the image we obtained."

From the mechanical planet, a handsome youth stepped out, his forehead bearing a pair of goat horns, a pair of demonic wings on his back, and his entire body covered in black scales. However, he had a full head of hair and incredibly good looks. This was the one of the Holy Sons of the 10,000-Devil Altar, Holy Son Anchaman.

When he flew out, he was followed by a number of powerhouses also emitting terrifying pressures. There were a total of 6 of them, each of them possessing strength not lesser than that of a Holy Son.

These were the Holy Sons and Holy Daughters of the 10,000-Devil Altar, each of them with extraordinary looks and aura.

Anchaman looked quietly at the image, before his voice turned icy, "Since the item was lost, how did you come back alive?"

General Hei Chi heard that voice filled with killing intent, and his body trembled uncontrollably. He began to kowtow profusely, "Your Highness, I wanted to preserve the lives of our hundreds and thousands of soldiers, hence I brought them back. I plead for your Highness to show me mercy, on account that I had preserved our

forces!"

Within the Devil Race, there were many powerful experts, Hei Chi was just an initial-Type 8 realm expert, and was much weaker than Anchaman. Furthermore, he did not complete his mission, thus, Anchaman had full authority to execute him.

There was a savage look in Anchaman's eyes, as he flickered in front of general Hei Chi, his claws grabbing out at his head, and he took a vicious bite out of his head, "You spoiled my matters, and dare to ask for mercy?! Naive!! Go to hell!!"

The Black Devil Clan was a cruel race, even they looked similar to humans, they were much more vicious and frequently engaged in slaughter and in-fighting.

With a shudder of his body, general Hei Chi's last moments was watching his head being bitten by Anchaman, as he died and crumple to the ground.

Beside Anchaman, there was a beautiful lady with fair skin and a revealing figure, who looked at Hei Chi's corpse with some pity, "Damn it, Anchaman, why didn't you give him to him and let me play around first?"

Anchaman licked the blood off his right hand, while his mouth was still smeared with brain matter, as he grinned deviously, "Yao Ji, if I pass him to you, there would be a stench. Furthermore, you'll just suck him dry, there would be nothing left of him to eat."

One Holy Son, standing at 3 meters, his body muscular, his visage demonic and his tail one that was sharp like a blade, frowned. He was from the Blade Demon Race, the Holy Son Blade Thirteen, and he spoke, "Anchaman, since that item had been stolen, what's our next step?"

Anchaman's eyes flashed with an intelligent look, as he quickly analyzed, "From the movement of that human, he does not know that the item is a secret. Few human experts would come out to the

barren wastelands, thus, the only reason he should be here would be to temper himself in the Merlot Battlefield. We just have to head there and we should come across him. Furthermore, even if we do not see him, we need to train there anyway. Our next step would be the Merlot Battlefield then."

"Fine!" The rest of the Holy Sons and Daughters replied and quickly flew back into the mechanical planet.

The mechanical planet then soared up into the skies, before emitting powerful bursts of air, pushing its speed to Mach-30, tearing apart the air in front of it as it shot towards the Merlot Battlefield.

Chapter 955: Green-faced Ghost!

The Merlot Battleground had been around thousands of years ago when true God-realm powerhouses ruled the Great God World. It was an ancient battlefield that had formed naturally within the Merlot Mountain Range. Within this battlefield, there were many spiritual imprints, weapons, undying spirits, spatial tears, and it was full of danger.

Even a Type 9 powerhouse might perish if he or she was not careful.

However, it was also a place of opportunities, in fact, many Type 9 powerhouses had come here when they were still at the Type 8 realm, going through the baptism of the Merlot Battlefield, and obtained many treasures or benefits from the things left behind here. That was how they broke through to the Type 9 stage.

One of the main reasons why the Great God World was able to churn out so many Type 9 powerhouses, was because that there were many secret realms and ancient battlefields left behind from the experts of past, allowing the current generation to benefit from the spiritual wills and imprints.

Furthermore, inside this Merlot Battlefield, there were frequent appearances of Gold-grade Treasures, which would cause anyone to go crazy over.

In front of the battlefield, Bi Feng stopped once more, and could not help but reiterated himself, "This is the Merlot Battlefield. Once we enter, we have to be careful. Not only are there experts from the other 3 main races, but there are also countless Mutant Beasts, Ferocious Beasts, and even Undying Devil Spirits. Even if we meet another human, they might not necessarily be our allies or friends, especially if we find any treasures."

Yue Zhong looked towards the Merlot Battlefield, his heart feeling a chill, "This is truly a dangerous place. I can vaguely sense

a threatening level of danger. If I'm not careful, I might perish her."

The location of the battlefield was in a vast place where one could not see the end, as though the entire world was shrouded in mist and extended all the way to the clouds.

Currently, the mountain range had been destroyed by some unknown force in the past, turning into multiple peaks, each still larger than the size of China.

There was a chaotic surge of energy within the mountain range. Since Yue Zhong had developed the God-Devil Eye, if there were no obstructions, he could easily see over a 1000 li away. However, when he looked out at the direction of the Merlot Battlefield, he could only see the outskirts, and everything within was foggy.

All of a sudden, Bi Feng's face fell, as he sent out a spiritual wave, transmitting, "Hide!"

Hearing his words, Bianna's sent out a white cloth that wrapped the 4 of them, as they disappeared from their location.

Not long after, 30 individuals soared through the sky. They were 4m-long, each of them possessing a human-like head, but with green features and long canines. They had a pair of wings on their backs and a singular horn on their forehead. Around their necks, they hung necklaces formed from skulls. These were experts from the Green-faced Ghost Clan.

The Green-faced Ghosts were also a race under the Man-Eating Races, they came like the wind, flying freely wherever they liked, and hunt humans everywhere they went. They were even harder to deal with compared to the Man-eating Giants. They were capable of flight, and their speed was just slightly below Mutant Beasts of the same level, but above everyone else. Even if they could not defeat their enemies, they could choose to fly away. The moment their enemies let down their guards, they would quickly swoop in for the kill.

The 30 Green-faced Ghosts emitted a terrifying aura, they were all at the Type 8 realm, of which, 10 of them seemed even stronger than a human Holy Son.

As Yue Zhong stared at them, his eyes brightened up. If he could take down all of them, he could gain a huge increase in his strength.

Type 8 powerhouses were not easy to come across. Within the Holy Sirius Empire, there was only one like George. Furthermore, Yue Zhong was not willing to slaughter other human powerhouses for no reason, otherwise, he would also be ostracized by the Holy Heavens and would have nowhere to go within the Great God World.

Whereas in the various secret realms, there were many Type 8 Mutant Beasts. However, behind these beasts were powerful Type 9 existences guarding them. If he killed one or two, it would not be an issue, but if he were to go on a massacre, then the Type 9 powerhouses would not let him off.

However, there was no hidden danger in dealing with these Green-faced Ghosts. Among the tasks that Yue Zhong had accepted, there was the requirement of hunting enemy forces, Man-eating Races as well as Devils.

Looking at the Ghosts, Yue Zhong opened up his ring noiselessly, causing many dust-sized nanobots to fly out and follow the Green-faced Ghosts.

Among the 4 races, the Mutant Beasts occupied the most territories and were the most numerous. However, it was obvious that these were scattered. They also seldom engaged in a mindless slaughter of the humans they come across.

One of the Green-faced Ghosts faced their most burly member, opening his mouth to ask, "Ye Cha Ghost, is your intelligence accurate?"

Ye Cha Ghost revealed a savage grin, "Of course, not too long ago, there were easily 30 and more human Holy Sons that entered the Merlot Battlefield. Furthermore, there were others that joined in. Right now, the total number of human cultivators within is over 60, and they're there for us to hunt!"

One other Green-faced Ghost stuck out his tongue to lick it, while smiling viciously, "That's great! 60 Holy Sons, I can already smell their flesh! The previous time, when I had crushed the bone of the human Holy Daughter, her despair and expression of pain were so enticing!"

Another Green-faced Ghost frowned, "However, 60 of them is not weak. If they join forces, we might not be a match for them."

One laughed lightly, "Don't worry, humans usually go in groups of 4. Furthermore, within the Merlot Battlefield, it's not easy for them to sense one another. By the time they react, we would have gained the advantage. At that time, we're free to kill or leave, why should we be afraid?"

Ye Cha Ghost laughed, flapping his wings and charged into the battlefield, "Haha! Let's go!"

The rest also quickly flapped the wings and entered.

When all of the Green-faced Ghosts disappeared into the Merlot Battlefield, the white sash came down, revealing Yue Zhong and the rest. Other than Yue Zhong, the rest had ugly expressions.

Bianna frowned, "What do we do? The network does not reach inside, we have no way of informing those fellows within."

The Holy Heavens network was extensive and could reach many places. However, due to the residual power of the True Gods of the past and spiritual imprints, the network could not penetrate the Merlot Battlefield.

Bi Feng declared, "It is not something that we can handle, we have to go back and report this. Let the higher-ups deal with this."

30 Green-faced Ghosts, with 10 among them possessing Holy Son-level strength. With such a group, even Bi Feng would not be able to handle at his peak-Type 8 strength.

The rest also nodded quietly, they might be proud of their strength, but they were clear that sometimes, retreat is the right strategy.

"Why not we do it like this, you guys retreat, I'll go in and check it out." Yue Zhong laughed lightly, and suggested, "I have a method that can hide my aura and presence. As long as I employ that technique, it would be hard for them to discover me."

Bi Feng frowned, "The Green-faced Ghosts have an ability through their horns, that can allow them to break past many illusions and stealth techniques. Knowing this, do you still want to go?"

Yue Zhong was resolute, "Yes!"

They were an important source of evolution for Yue Zhong, he naturally wanted to hunt them down.

Right at this time, Annie also spoke up coldly, "I'll follow you then!"

The rest shot her a bewildered glance. They were clear that among them, her strength was not at the peak, if she got herself entangled with the Green-faced Ghosts, she would likely be in danger.

Under their shocked gazes, Annie spoke coldly, "Within the Holy Heavens, I might not be the strongest, but my abilities in life-preservation and support can be considered in the top 10. I can cover you."

"Fine! In that case, come with me!"

Yue Zhong laughed, and in a flash, he had charged through into the Merlot Battlefield.

Annie's figure also turned hazy and disappeared mysteriously, entering the Battlefield.

Bi Feng stared at them, his fists clenched tight and there was a strange glint in his eyes. He wanted to enter as well and fight it out with the Green-faced Ghosts. However, his rationale told him that there was a 90% chance of death.

Azaman looked at the Merlot Battlefield with a complicated gaze, "Let's go!"

Bi Feng fell silent, before turning around and soared away.

Not long after they left, a huge meteor descended from the skies, landing right outside the Merlot Battlefield, revealing a huge mechanical planet. A number of peak experts from the Black Devil Clan flew out and shot into the Battlefield as well.

When they had all entered, the planet soared up and disappeared, coming and going like the wind.

It was too dangerous inside the Merlot Battlefield for the mechanical planet to enter. It would likely be torn apart by the countless undying spirits within.

Chapter 956: Hunt!

Inside the Merlot Battlefield, there were all sorts of strange energies clashing and mixing with one another. The moment Yue Zhong entered the place, he could sense as though he had emerged in a different world, with different rules and law. He turned around, and could no longer see the path he came from, nor Annie who had entered with him.

All of a sudden, a strange piece of white jade engraved with runes landed on his hands. As he grabbed it, he could sense Annie's aura, as a message transmitted directly through it, "This is a jade token. With it, you can sense my location, and can even use it to communicate. It would not cause any spiritual fluctuations or energy reverberations. If there's nothing, try not to contact me."

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, and kept the token. The next moment, he waved his hands and donned on the Stealth Armor.

At the moment he put it on, he disappeared entirely, without a single trace of his presence, causing the invisible Annie beside him to be shocked as well, "He truly has extraordinary methods. Without the jade token, I would not be able to tell where he was. No wonder he has such confidence to hunt them down! However, even if he has the stealth, can he cope with the combat?"

"I wonder if the Merlot Battlefield would affect those nanobugs of mine. Those are precious tracking devices from the Mech Kingdom, if they're destroyed, it would be problematic!"

Yue Zhong glanced at his watch, and noticed that there was still an update on the location of the bugs.

"Got it!"

Yue Zhong then zeroed in on their location, the corners of his mouth lifting into a smile, and he quickly shot towards them.

Within the Merlot Battlefield, under the terrifying strength of

the True Gods of the past, regions had been carved out, but their energies were relatively stable. Within each area, a unique biological system had emerged and thrived, housing numerous life forms.

Inside a mountain range, 3 men and 1 women were standing at the precipice, looking within, their eyes filled with wild joy.

One of them, a young man with golden hair and blue eyes, decked in white-silver armor and a huge broadsword on his back, spoke up in excitement, "This is the fluctuation of a True God's will!! This is great, it will be a perfect cultivation ground for our wills. As long as we can withstand the pressure and comprehend the lingering will left behind, we could forge our wills and when we break through to the Type 9 realm in the future, it would be beneficial to our foundations!"

Another small and scrawny man who stood only at 1.42m, looking like a small kid, chuckled, "Our luc is pretty good, to be able to come across this stable True God's will. If it was too wild, we would be unable to utilize it, in fact, we might die under the might. Such a stable area is truly getting rare."

The only woman of the group, who had 2 ponytails and an ordinary figure, wielding a huge sword on her back as well, looked towards the lead male with a hint of fervor, "This is all due to Maruf. If he did not insist on checking this area, we would not have discovered this location."

At this moment, the last male, who had been keeping silent all this time while surveying the environment warily shouted out with a crestfallen expression, "Watch out!!"

Right after he shouted, he had already waved his hands and caused a number of energy shields to appear. At the same time, he had pulled out a round mechanical plate, tossing it to form a huge mechanical wall to protect them.

At that moment, the 30 Green-faced Ghosts appeared in a flash,

and slammed into the mechanical barrier viciously.

With a loud bang, the mechanical barrier collapsed, not even slowing them down in the slightest.

The defense of the barrier was supposed to be shocking, capable of withstanding even the strikes of a peak-Type 8 powerhouse. However, with the joint efforts of the 30 Green-faced Ghosts, their combined might was terrifying enough to destroy the barrier.

"Haha, go to hell!"

The leader, Ye Cha Ghost, had laughed out savagely the moment the barrier was crushed, and reached out to grab the Holy Son who had thrown out the plate, and squeezed viciously.

"Ah!!!"

The Holy Son screamed out in agony, as blood poured out of all his orifices, every single bone and organ within him crushed. There was an intense look of pain, suffering, and despair at the moment of his death.

"Good, good! This is the expression, it's just too savoury!!" Ye Cha Ghost cackled, and tossed the corpse into his mouth, his sharp teeth closing down and gibbled up the Holy Son.

The short and scrawny Holy Son screamed out in fear, as he was grabbed by 2 of the Green-faced Ghosts, "No!!!"

The 2 Ghosts grinned evilly and grabbed him at one end each, before tugging with all their might, directly tearing the Holy Son in two.

At the moment the small Holy Son was killed, another 2 Green-faced Ghosts flew out, and gobbled up his spine.

Maruf was the only peak-Type 8 powerhouse within this group, and due to the blockade of the other 2, he had gained some time to react, as he waved his hands and 36 golden pearls appeared.

The moment the 36 pearls materialized, and released a powerful

radiance that enveloped Maruf.

This particular treasure was called the 36-Scorpio Golden Protection. Among the Human Race, it was the strongest defensive treasure. Once activated, even a half-step Type 9 powerhouse would not be able to break it in a short time.

As the Green-faced Ghosts continued to slam into the shield, it only served to create temporary dents, and there did not seem to be any way they could break through in the short future.

Water Domain!

The eyes of the lady narrowed, as she activated her trump card, causing powerful water bodies to gush out from her, wrapping the surroundings.

"Domain? Do you think that only you humans know Domains? Break for me!"

One of the Holy Son-grade Green-faced Ghosts had a vicious look, as he roared out with mad laughter and emitted a powerful Ruthless Domain, that was shrouded in red, which slammed into the Holy Daughter's Water Domain.

At that moment, 5 others also laughed, and revealed another 5 Ruthless Domains, slamming the Water Domain viciously.

With 6 powerful domains assaulting the Water Domain of an equal level, it did not take long for the Water Domain to be obliterated completely.

Just as the domain collapsed, one Green-faced Ghost shot forward to the chance and seize the Holy Daughter when she was defenseless, and gripped her tightly.

She revealed a look of despair as she screamed, the majority of her bones already broken, "AH!!!! Save me!!! Maruf!! Save me!!"

Maruf took a look at the Holy Daughter who had always held him in high regard, Xiangma Hui, and his eyes turned red, releasing a

roar that sounded like a wounded beast, "Damn bastards!!! Xiao Hui!!! Bastards!!!"

However, while the 36-Scorpio Golden Protection had an amazing defense, the person within was also considered trapped, unable to move to save or attack anyone. This was a sort of last-resort, if Maruf had not been forced to the edge, he would not have used this. Once utilized, he could not save his friends or comrades.

The Green-faced Ghost grabbing Xiangma Hui looked at the struggling Holy Daughter, and he revealed a cruel smile, opening his jaws and was about to bite down.

The lower half of Xiangma Hui's body had been crushed, her domain broken, and her strength already 90% sapped. There was no way she could defend herself, and as she stared at the incoming jaws, her eyes were filled with despair, her tears and snot flowing as she sobbed, "No!! No!!! Save me!! Somebody!!"

Peng!

As the Green-faced Ghost was about to swallow Xiangma Hui, his head suddenly exploded as though he was struck by a huge hammer of over a billion tonnes. Red and white matter, as well as its ugly countenance was blasted to the side.

The death of that Green-faced Ghost seemed to be trigger a chain-effect, as the Green-faced Ghosts beside him also had their heads blasted apart. In just a few breaths, 4 of them had died mysteriously.

With their deaths, the strongest among them, Ye Cha Ghost, had a fearful countenance as he roared, "Enemy attack!! There's an enemy here!!! He's in stealth, and is very strong!! Watch out!!"

Chapter 957: Wiping out the Green-faced Ghosts!

As Ye Cha Ghost screamed out the warning, an incredibly vast domain suddenly shrouded the entire area, as the Devil Domain appeared and suppressed the remaining 26 Green-faced Ghosts.

Within the domain, numerous devils pounced onto the 26 Ghosts, devouring their body, as the thick Devil Qi also began invading their bodies, preventing them from moving.

Yue Zhong himself was like a fish in water within the domain, flickering and teleporting on top of each of the Ghosts, bursting their heads with a single punch.

Yue Zhong had locked down on these weak Green-faced Ghosts, in front of him, they were helpless, and could only be killed. Within a breath's time, 10 of them had their heads exploded, their life force absorbed cleanly by Yue Zhong.

6 others were also torn apart by the Devils within the Devil Domain.

As Yue Zhong continued to grow stronger, the God-Devil Domain of his also continued increase in strength.

The remaining 10 Green-faced Ghosts were all shocked and furious, each of them channeling their Domains, as the powerful Ruthless Domains appeared, smashing within the Devil Domain in a bid to break out.

The powerful and violent energy surged, clashing against Yue Zhong's Devil Domain as both sides continued to wear each other down.

"It's useless!! Accept your deaths obediently!"

At that moment, Yue Zhong charged up to one of the Ruthless Domains, his fist obliterating everything in his path, slamming

into the body of that Green-faced Ghost.

A powerful might exploded forth, tearing the Green-faced Ghost apart, and the flesh and blood were directly consumed by the devilish manifestations, becoming their nourishment.

Ye Cha Ghost roared out in rage, slamming the Devil Domain with all his might, "Gather!! Only when we combine, we can kill this freak!!"

Inside the Devil Domain, sound, spirit, and wills could not be transmitted. They could only rely on their utmost strength to scatter some of their devil-energy, to communicate with their allies.

It was because this God-Devil Domain was so heaven-defying, that Yue Zhong had the confidence to deal with all 30 of them.

"Combine? No chance!! Die!!" Yue Zhong walked out of thin air and sent a fist towards Ye Cha Ghost.

"You're still far off from being able to kill me!! Green Ghost Transformation!!"

There was a fierce glint in Ye Cha Ghost's eyes, as his body began to convulse, and his muscles and bones began to transform at a visible pace, becoming stronger and thicker. At the same time, there was a metallic luster coursing through his arms. He sent out a punch, meeting Yue Zhong's.

The Green Ghost Transformation was a secret art of the Green-faced Ghost Clan, after executing this art, Ye Cha Ghost's physique could become 5 times as powerful. His fist would be no less than 30 times as powerful.

"Impossible!!! How could a human's physique be so strong?! You're just a Type 8 powerhouse, how could you be so strong?!" With a loud explosion, Ye Cha Ghost's right fist was obliterated by Yue Zhong's and he spat out a mouthful of blood as he was sent flying, while his eyes were filled with shock.

Yue Zhong was also knocked back. However, he had just flown a few meters, when he disappeared and reappeared behind Ye Cha Ghost, sending another fist at his back.

Inside this Devil Domain, Yue Zhong could will it and teleport anywhere. It was almost an invincible area for him.

At that moment, Ye Cha Ghost's body glowed brightly, and a green shield appeared over his body. In his right hands, he even held a C3-Grade protection.

Yue Zhong's fist slammed into the shield, and a terrifying force exploded out, destroying the shield completely.

When the C3-Grade shield was destroyed, there was a hint of madness in Ye Cha Ghost's eyes, "Human! Don't kill me!! I know the position of a treasury in this Merlot Battlefield!! Let me and my people off, I'll tell you where it is!!"

"As long as you become my puppet, everything of yours will become mine!"

Yue Zhong did not waste time on any bullshit, as he stepped out and appeared in front of Ye Cha Ghost, grabbing his head in a claw-like grip. With a cold laugh, he knocked him out, the terrifying strength surging through Ye Cha Ghost's head.

At the same time that the Ye Cha Ghost was knocked out, a Type 8 Puppet Rune was sent into his head, turning Ye Cha Ghost into a puppet.

With his death, although the remaining Green-faced Ghosts were still trying to escape, Yue Zhong took them out one by one.

Not long after, the Devil Domain was retracted into Yue Zhong's body, leaving only Ye Cha Ghost kneeling in front of Yue Zhong to express his loyalty.

Annie was hidden in a corner, and she witnessed how Yue Zhong had dealt with 30 Green-faced Ghosts, her heart full of shock, "Strong!! How could he be this formidable?! To actually clear 30

Green-faced Ghosts?! Even if it was a sneak attack, isn't such strength too shocking?! Only those Holy Sons at the half-step Type 9 stage would be a match for him!!"

In a battle, a sneak attack would give a preemptive advantage. Yue Zhong relied on it to launch the Devil Domain on them, that was how he kept them apart and took them out one by one.

Had they been prepared and stuck together, then even a half-step Type 9 powerhouse might not be able to take them out so quickly.

Even so, it proved Yue Zhong's overbearing might.

Yue Zhong could sense the atmospheric energy within him coursing through his body, and he grinned, with a hint of excitement, "Not bad. The life force from those 29 Type 8 Green-faced Ghosts helped increase the energy within me. However, I still need much more to reach the peak of the Type 8 realm."

Currently, the half-crippled Xiangma Hui looked at Yue Zhong, pleading bitterly, "Save me!! Save me!"

With her whole body crushed, had it been anyone else, they would have died. However, a Type 8 powerhouse could be said to be near the peak of the power chain, their life force strong, hence, even if she was crippled, she would not die so fast."

Maruf stared at Yue Zhong and said, "Brother, please save me. I'm Holy Son Maruf from the Southern Temple, and she is Xiangma Hui of the Eastern Temple. As long as you save her, we will repay you in the future."

"I'm Divine Envoy Yue Zhong from the Central Temple. As humans, I will definitely help her." Yue Zhong sent a yellow vial of liquid into her mouth.

She quickly opened her mouth and swallowed it. The moment the liquid coursed through her body, there were loud cracking sounds, as her broken bones and organs were recovering at a visible rate.

Soon, she leaped to her feet and thanked Yue Zhong with gratitude. "Thank you!!"

The technology of the Great God World was incredibly advanced, even more so than the Mech Kingdom. No matter the injury, with the right medicine, one could recover quickly. Only those attacks with wills imbued or laws within them would be tough to deal with. Many powerhouses had to carry such injuries throughout their lives once struck with such afflictions. Their strength cut down over time, and in the end, perishing.

Xiangma Hui pointed to the chasm and spoke, "Yue Zhong, there's a will imprint of a True God within, you can go down and try cultivating."

When Maruf heard this, his brows furrowed, but he soon regained his composure and did not say anything.

"Sure!"

Without standing on ceremony, his figure disappeared into the chasm.

Xiangma Hui looked at Maruf within the 36-Scorpio Golden Protection, her gaze complicated.

She knew the function of the 36-Scorpio Golden Protection, once used, it meant that Maruf had already treated his life as important and had abandoned her. Her love and awe for him had been doused in a bucket of cold water, and it was no longer the same.

Xiangma Hui did not say much, as she just turned around and chased after Yue Zhong.

Seeing her leaving back, Maruf's face changed multiple times, as he eyed the 36-Scorpio Golden Protection, not knowing what to think.

When Yue Zhong arrived on the mountain, he could feel an overbearing pressure, seemingly capable of suppressing the entire world, lingering in the atmosphere. Before this lingering will, he

was like a small ant.

Compared to this powerful will, the Type 9 9-headed Dragonhawk that Yue Zhong came across the other time was not even worth mentioning.

Chapter 958: True God Expert's Will!

Yue Zhong sensed the will capable of covering the entire world, and his eyes lit up in a pleasant surprise, "What a powerful will!!"

Currently, after Yue Zhong had experienced that battle, he had already comprehended the usage of will. He was hoping to temper his own will as well since it would benefit him when he was stepping into the half-Type 9 realm.

Feeling the powerful will, Yue Zhong steeled himself and walked steadily into the inner mountain, and with each step, the pressure increased.

Not too long after, Xiangma Hui also flew into the chasm, resisting the effects of the will as she walked further into temper her own will.

In the Great God World, it was a constant battle to reach the top. That was the cruel reality of the world. Even a female cultivator would constantly train herself given the chance, to become a true expert.

Yue Zhong's evolved God-Devil Body was the most perfect physique and strongest of the God-level physiques. It represented the peak of the 800 worlds and empowered the owner to have high comprehension talent. Not only could Yue Zhong sense the will, but he was also able to feel a hidden, unyielding aura, as well as other strange powers.

As he sensed it and absorbed the will in order to temper his understanding towards the laws and principles, Yue Zhong's speed became even slower.

Not long after, Maruf also chased up, and he did not say anything, before charging right into the narrow tunnel containing the terrifying will.

Resisting the will, Maruf continued to soar forward, surpassing

Yue Zhong's speed.

When he passed by Yue Zhong, he shot him a look, revealing a self-confident smile, "Seems like your will isn't strong. Although your combat power is strong, a person with a weak will would never be able to become a Type 9 powerhouse. I will surpass you in the future."

Following the passage of time, the 3 of them traversed further and further down the path.

When Xiangma Hui reached the 200m-mark, her face turned pale, and she crumpled to the floor, gasping for air while her eyes were filled with shock.

Maruf also started turning pale the moment he crossed the 200m mark. It was no longer as easy to continue, each step as heavy as though a mountain was pressing down on him. He struggled for another 30m before his body buckled and he stuck to the floor, with no way to move.

While gasping for air, he braved a throbbing headache and retreated step by step, "So terrifying, this is a will of a True God expert. And to think that this is a relatively calm and stable one. If it had been filled with any killing intent, it would have done me in the first instance. A True God expert is too terrifying."

As he was crawling back, the sounds of steady footsteps sounded from behind.

Maruf turned to look and noticed Yue Zhong progressing slowly but steadily over.

He continued to walk casually, soon passing Xiangma Hui and did not look like he was going to stop. Under Maruf's envious gaze, he continued forward, surpassing Maruf in a relaxed manner.

Maruf saw how easily Yue Zhong went past him and was filled with jealousy. At the same time, what he hated more was that Yue Zhong did not even look at him from the start till the end, as

though he had never placed him in his eyes, not treating him as competition, "Damn it!! How is his will so strong as well?"

Annie, who had been hiding all this while, eyed Yue Zhong's back with shock in her eyes, "Strong! His will is really terrifying as well. Truly a talent that is capable of triggering the tiger and dragon image."

Annie could only walk up to a location about 170m in and had no choice but to stay back. She could sense that her strength was enough to get her to the 180m-mark, but still far from comparable to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong maintained his rhythm, and when he passed the 300m mark, he finally felt some form of pressure. When he reached the 360m, an overbearing pressure weighed down on him, slamming into his will like a storm.

Under the torrential assault, Yue Zhong's face turned pale, his back breaking out in sweat, and it looked as though he had just come out from the sea.

Yue Zhong shut his eyes and focused on his avatar within his sea of consciousness.

The attacking will appeared within Yue Zhong's sea of consciousness, forming into a humanoid character decked in golden armor, his features sharp and saintly, emitting the aura of a ruler of life and death.

He stared at Yue Zhong in disdain, declaring contemptuously, "Despicable ant!! Kneel, and submit, and I shall grant you eternal life and endless glory!!"

With those words, there was a feeling that rose up in Yue Zhong's mind, as though he was an ordinary beggar, looking up at a majestic emperor, and he was filled with fear and awe. It was as though that the True God expert was a natural ruler, and he did not need to consider further about expressing his fealty.

"NO! I CANNOT KNEEL!"

Just as he was about to get to his knees, his inner-self roared out in fury and shook him back to clarity.

Before the apocalypse, he had been an ordinary person, his biggest dream was to open a medium-sized enterprise with his close buddies, living a comfortable and secure life. Even if he had to bow to authority or bigger powers, he could only accept it helplessly.

However, throughout the apocalypse, he had been through so many battles, and slowly reached this stage. He had already transformed, from a nobody, into a ruler and an expert. He could sense that the moment he bowed to this True God expert, then from this moment on, even if he reached the True God stage with his God-Devil Body, he would be doomed never to advance further in his cultivation.

"You're already a dead man, the dead should go back to their graves. Let me send you back there!!"

Inside Yue Zhong's sea of consciousness, the small avatar of Yue Zhong suddenly grew larger, and let out a powerful roar, filled with strength and he emitted a powerful combat intent while charging at the True God expert.

The True God expert saw Yue Zhong charging over, and his face fell while roaring out, "Audacious! You dare to antagonize the might of a True God?! Break for me!!"

Under that ordinary finger, all things in the universe seemed to be sucked into him and began to press down upon Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's body was immediately crushed and destroyed by that pressure.

However, just as that avatar disintegrated, another one of him appeared within the sea of consciousness. As it appeared, he charged towards the True God expert once more, utilizing his

strongest technique in his arsenal, the Yin-Yang palm, "This is my consciousness, as long as my will is not eradicated, I will keep reviving in here! Whereas you're just a lingering will!! Your strength will diminish over time, and you will be ground away by me!! Just accept your death obediently and be a part of me!"

"Wishful thinking! Lowly existence, even if I'm just a will, I'm enough to wipe you out. You might be undying in here, but each time your avatar gets crushed, the pain should be intense and wrecks you!! When you aren't able to hold out, it will be when your will is crushed and you will die!!"

The True God expert laughed coldly, and fired another finger, causing the pressure of the universe to weigh down and meet Yue Zhong's Yin-Yang Palm, destroying it as well as the avatar in the process.

The Yin-Yang Palm might be extremely powerful, it was still a technique derived by a Type 7 powerhouse. While it was useful against others, it was definitely not as effective against a True God expert. It felt like the entire universe was suppressing him.

Inside the sea of consciousness, Yue Zhong's avatar appeared, again and again, charging at the True God expert with his Yin-Yang Palm once more.

The expert just continued to point out with his Cosmic Finger, crushing Yue Zhong each time.

The fight in Yue Zhong's sea of consciousness affected his true body, as he laid crumpled on the ground, rolling around in agony, while his face was contorted with pain.

Each time he gets annihilated, it felt like he had just been through a car crash. If it was not for his resolute will, and the intense desire to live, he would have died long ago.

However, at the same time, while his avatar kept being crushed, in the process of reforming, his will became stronger.

At the same time, the lingering will became weaker as time passed, after all, he was not a True God expert, but just a residual intent.

"Break for me!"

As Yue Zhong was destroyed for the hundredth time, he directly condensed a Cosmic Finger, pointing it at the True God expert as the power of the universe surged into this attack of his.

Chapter 959: Absorbing the Will!

The gaze of the True God expert was as cold and pointed out with his own Cosmic Finger.

The 2 powerful universes clashed, and the resulting force caused the avatar of Yue Zhong to crumble once more.

The True God expert's avatar was also rocked until he lost an arm, which transformed into countless motes of light, spreading within Yue Zhong's sea of consciousness.

Inside the sea of consciousness, Yue Zhong's avatar had gained the advantage, absorbing the bits and pieces of the True God expert's will, reforming swiftly once more.

This time, the reformed avatar of Yue Zhong possessed a sliver of saintly and majestic aura, exuding a powerful bearing.

As for the True God expert's avatar, while it still seemed as imposing as ever, its aura was weaker, and within Yue Zhong's sea of consciousness, as long as Yue Zhong's will was indomitable, and kept reforming, the True God expert was at a disadvantage, since he could not reform. How much he expended was how much he lost.

"This time, break for me!!"

There was a look of confidence in Yue Zhong's eyes, as he fired out the Cosmic Finger once more, pressuring the True God expert.

Even after losing the right arm, the True God expert continued to fire out another cosmic finger with his remaining arm.

The 2 forces clashed once more, but this time, the universe of the True God expert crumbled, while his body also broke down, and was absorbed by Yue Zhong's sea of consciousness.

After the avatar of the True God expert was obliterated, Yue Zhong's will and spirit underwent another round of baptism. With

the tempering earlier, he had become stronger once more.

Making use of the God-Devil Imprint, he could absorb life force like nobody's business, evolving quickly. However, in terms of the will, he had to temper himself through the countless fights and battles. Before ascending to the Type 9 realm, there was no issue with this method.

In order to break through the Type 9 bottleneck, however, and to reach the legendary Type 10 realm, he had to possess an incredible amount of will. It did not matter if it was good or evil, there was only absolute strength. Only then could one break out of the cage to control his own destiny.

After obliterating the True God expert's will from his consciousness, Yue Zhong opened his eyes, revealing a sharper glint within them. With a thought, the fresh blood on his face disappeared. He stood up, and braving the pressure once more, he continued forward.

Since the avatar had been dealt with, the remaining will had no source, and while the pressure was still huge, it was unable to hold Yue Zhong back.

As he braved the pressure, Yue Zhong went further and deeper into the chasm, finally arriving at the deepest part of the mountain.

At the deepest part of the chasm, there was a stone with a remnant dark red color. From time to time, a strong will would diffuse out from it, adding on to the surrounding will.

Yue Zhong eyed the stone, sighing in his heart, "This should be the fresh blood of the True God expert. They cannot grow old and die, and have eternal youth, but they can still be killed by others. Seems like a True God expert is not the peak of evolution.

Yue Zhong had read up on the topic of will while in the Holy Heavens, and he reached out to grab the red stone.

When his hand came in contact with the red stone, a powerful will swarmed into his body and assaulted his sea of consciousness, forming the avatar of the True God expert once more.

The same scene appeared once again, as the armored True God expert shot Yue Zhong a disdainful look and ordered, "Despicable ant!! Kneel, and submit, and I shall grant you eternal life and endless glory!!"

This was just a lingering will of the True God expert, and could only react mechanically.

With a cold look in Yue Zhong's eyes, his avatar formed, and fired out a Cosmic Finger at the True God expert, "I've killed you once, I'll kill you again!"

The lingering will had no expression, as he immediately channeled the same Cosmic Finger at Yue Zhong.

Not long after, the lingering will was destroyed by a punch of Yue Zhong.

When the True God expert was destroyed by Yue Zhong, the dark red stone in his hands also crumbled and turned to dust.

When the stone crumbled, the pressure in the tunnel disappeared without a trace.

When Maruf felt the pressure disappear, he was filled with even more envy towards Yue Zhong, "He absorbed the will?! Damn it!! It would take at least 60 years for even a half-step Type 9 powerhouse to fully absorb the core of a True God expert! How could he do it so fast?! What a freak!!"

Annie eyed Yue Zhong from afar, with shock in her eyes, "Every single fellow who could trigger the phenomenon were truly heaven-defying talents. In just a day's time, he had actually finished consuming the will of the True God expert. His future potential is limitless. The legends are indeed true, with his capabilities, it is just a matter of time before he hits the Type 9

realm. With enough opportunities, it is not impossible for him to become a True God expert as well."

Originally, Annie was quite bitter about the fact that Yue Zhong had triggered that image, and thought that he was not necessarily her match. However, she could not help but acknowledge that the gulf between their strength was huge, and it would only grow bigger.

Ye Cha Ghost, who had been waiting at one side kneeled down, "Congratulations Master, for absorbing the will of this True God expert, from now on, your cultivation will be smooth. As long as you have gathered enough strength, you will be able to reach the half-step Type 9 realm. With additional space laws, you will become a true Type 9 powerhouse."

Yue Zhong opened his eyes, as 2 sharp gleams shot out from them, and his gaze was filled with power, causing Ye Cha Ghost to be slightly fearful of looking, "Ye Cha Ghost, was the treasury you spoke of real or fake? Where's the location?"

Ye Cha Ghost lowered his head and spoke respectfully, "Master, the treasury is real. Based on the information on hand, it is around this area. As for its exact location, I'm not too sure. However, based on the intel, there should be many entrances. There might even be one in this area."

Yue Zhong's heart shook, as he assessed the location, "Is it here?"

The location that the True God expert's will had been located was a flat land, and at a glance, there did not seem to be anything out of the ordinary.

"It's right here!" With a thought, his powerful perception stretched out and scanned the area, discovering a small corner where there was a ripple of space.

With a flash, Yue Zhong appeared in front of the corner, with a powerful tug, he tore a hole out of the space.

Yue Zhong looked at the space and frowned, giving an order to Ye Cha Ghost, "You go and test it out!"

In the Merlot Battlefield, the danger was everywhere, and Yue Zhong did not dare to walk around, thus he needed a guinea pig.

"Yes! Master!"

Ye Cha Ghost replied, and charged into the spatial tears.

In a few breaths, Ye Cha Ghost came back out, and reported, "Master, everything is normal over there, there's a lot of resources. It is definitely a treasure ground. From my intel, it should be the treasury."

When Yue Zhong heard this, his body flickered and he flew through the spatial tear.

Xiangma Hui, Maruf and Annie shot through after Yue Zhong.

Ye Cha Ghost was left at the entrance, acting as a protector.

The moment Yue Zhong stepped through, he went through the spatial tear and appeared on the other side.

The other side was a vast place, with no end in sight, and numerous mountains forming a mountain range.

All across the land, there were many precious herbs and grasses that were filled with spiritual energy, capable of transforming a person.

Xiangma Hui looked at a particular patch of red grasses, her eyes filled with heated passion as she charged up there. She grabbed it carefully and placed it in her storage bag, "This is the Divine Blood Grass, and legend has it that it is formed after absorbing a huge amount of blood from half-God powerhouses. It can help an expert of the Type 7 realm and above go through a metamorphosis. To Type 8 experts, it definitely is effective to a certain extent, each stalk is worth at least 10,000 contribution points. How could there be so many?"

Within the Holy Heavens, experts were numerous, and most of them had some spatial treasures. Many Holy Sons and Holy Daughters had their own spatial treasures.

Maruf looked at a particular tree in the distance, his eyes flashing with a strange glint as he charged over, "That's the Lightning Pearl Jade Fruit! It is particularly helpful for cultivators who trained in lighting-attribute arts! It only bears fruit every 3,000 years, and it's incredibly rare, to think that would be so many here?!"

Chapter 960: Undying Devil Spirit!

Yue Zhong looked at Maruf dashing towards the Lightning Pearl Jade Fruit Tree, and he suddenly felt a bad premonition. He shouted, "Watch out!! Maruf!! Come back!!"

"Damn, after I obtain those fruits, I will have earned a fortune. Who would give a damn about you?"

Maruf did not stop when he heard Yue Zhong's warning, instead, he pushed his speed faster towards the Tree.

At that moment, the earth split open, and a huge hand covered with huge spikes burst out, grabbing Maruf with lightning speed.

"Bastard, break for me! Great Vanquishing Sword Finger!"

Maruf was also a powerhouse at the peak-Type 8 realm, facing such a situation, he roared out in rage and executed his secret technique. His entire being seemed to transform into an incredibly sharp sword. It seemed as though there was nothing he could not pierce, and he slashed out at the huge hand.

The Great Vanquishing Sword Finger was a top-tier technique, excelling in offense, and if a Type 9 powerhouse were to be struck by Maruf, he or she would also be greatly injured. With this technique, he had killed numerous experts.

At the moment that Maruf executed the skill, Yue Zhong did not even bother any further, as he flickered and fled towards the distance.

When Annie saw Yue Zhong's strange actions, her heart turned cold and she quickly followed, fleeing towards the distance.

Xiangma Hui was stunned, not knowing what to do.

At that moment, Maruf's huge sword slashed down on the huge hand covered in spikes and caused an earthshaking roar. A terrifying shockwave blasted outwards.

A terrifying scene full of despair then unfolded, as the sword that was capable of damaging even a Type 9 powerhouse could not slice into the hand, instead, it had cracked and was on the verge of breaking apart.

Maruf stared at the unharmed hand, his eyes filled with shock and fear, "Impossible!! How could there be such a monster in this world?!"

Inside the Great God World, the strongest existences were the Type 9 powerhouses. However, even they could not withstand Maruf's Great Vanquishing Sword Finger. Now, some mysterious hand that popped out from the ground was unaffected by it, causing him to feel shocked and fearful.

"Right... this is...!!"

A terrifying thought that flashed past his mind. At that moment, the huge hand grabbed out at him viciously, squeezing hard, and the sharp spikes drove deep into his body, while the immense strength squashed Maruf into minced meat.

"Maruf is dead!! This is an Undying Devil Spirit!! An Undying Devil Spirit!! I need to flee!! I need to flee!!"

Xiangma Hui watched Maruf being squashed to death and her heart was filled with fear, turning around to flee in panic.

At the moment she turned, the earth split apart, and a towering figure of over 20m, with countless spikes covering its body and a dense indomitable aura shrouding it. Its face was savage, and it exuded a terrifying bloodlust and killing intent as it emerged from the ground. This was the strongest, and most dangerous existence within the Merlot Battlefield, the Undying Devil Spirit.

These spirits were existences that had resulted in the battles of True God experts. They were condensed from the battle lust, killing intent and powerful laws. Having absorbed the constant anger, and hatred, and dark feelings, they only knew to eliminate

all living things around them, absorbing their death energy as well as negative emotions at the point of death.

These Undying Devil Spirits had a hint of those True God experts' soul, thus, even half-step True God-level powerhouses without any Gold-grade weapons would not be able to deal with them. As for low-level Type 9 powerhouses, they simply posed no threat to these powerful existences. There were also different strengths to them, with the strongest being capable of eliminating a half-step True God powerhouse. Due to this, the Merlot Battlefield ground was largely a forbidden ground, where even half-step True-God experts would not dare be careless.

As the Undying Devil Spirit climbed out of the ground, it eyed the fleeing Xiangma Hui, and its eyes flashed with a vicious glint. It immediately leaped forward, closing the distance between them, and grabbed out at her.

Xiangma Hui was so frightened that her face turned ashen, and activated her Water Domain at the first moment, causing a large torrential water body to envelop her, while she disappeared from where she was.

Within the domain, she could transform into a drop of water, hiding among the body of water to escape.

The eyes of the Undying Devil Spirit turned cold, as 2 saintly beams shot out from its eyes, shining upon the Water Domain. It immediately caused anything of transformation to be revealed. Its right hand then shot out and tore through the domain, grabbing Xiangma Hui.

She began screaming while her strength was sealed by the Spirit, as her body trembled from the fear and despair, "No!!! Don't kill me!! I don't want to die!!"

The Undying Devil Spirit took a look at the pleading Xiangma Hui, and with a cruel flash of its eyes, its hands closed tightly.

With a loud 'pa', she was instantly squashed flat, turning into a pile of minced meat.

After killing her, the Spirit turned towards the direction where Yue Zhong fled, and its perception sweeping out towards him.

However, since Yue Zhong put on the Stealth Armor, capable of retracting all signs and presence of him, no matter how the Spirit tried, it was unable to detect Yue Zhong.

After sweeping around for a few minutes, the Undying Devil Spirit then took in a deep breath, and let out a powerful roar.

The howl spread outwards like a shockwave in all directions.

The powerful roar could do nothing to Yue Zhong. Unfortunately, when it struck Annie, it caused her body to shudder, disrupting her energy and blood flow, as she spat out a mouthful of blood and her body flickered into view, as she tumbled out of the sky.

"Not good!!"

Yue Zhong saw Annie appear and his heart skipped a beat. Annie's stealth technique was powerful, which the Undying Devil Spirit was unable to see through as well, however, once her true body was discovered, she would only face death.

Yue Zhong pointed at her, executing his Blood Manipulation ability, causing her thrown-up blood to transform into 6 beams that shot out in different directions.

Yue Zhong then grabbed out at her, before soaring and heading for a valley.

The moment the Spirit caught the scent of Annie's blood, it whirled around and chased after one of them, flying towards it.

In that instant, the Undying Devil Spirit had caught up to one of it, immediately devouring it before turning around to give chase to another.

While this Undying Devil Spirit was strong, its intelligence was not high, thus, it could chase after targets to kill, giving Yue Zhong and Annie a chance.

Inside the valley, Annie thanked Yue Zhong, "Thanks."

Yue Zhong chuckled, "Not a problem."

Annie then asked, "Who would have thought there to be an Undying Spirit here? What do we do now, go back?"

Unknowingly, Annie had already treated Yue Zhong as a pillar of support. If it were at the initial point of their meeting, she would not have asked for his opinion.

Yue Zhong sighed deeply, "No, I think we need to continue forward."

In order to evolve further, Yue Zhong needed more resources, or to kill more powerhouses. However, with the numerous experts in the Great God World, in order to become strong, he needed more equipment or obtain some other strength. Otherwise, if he were to take his time to slowly evolve, who knew when he would become a Type 9 powerhouse.

Hearing his words, Annie replied mildly, "En!"

After resting a short while, she stood up, and disappeared, "I'm alright now! Let's continue!"

Yue Zhong also stood up.

All of a sudden, there was a warmth from Yue Zhong and Annie's identity cards. A powerful will transmitted through their card, "This is First Holy Son Qian Chang Qing from the Eastern Temple. Right now, we're confronting enemies from the Man-Eating Temples, and 10,000-Devil Altar. Any other human brothers and sisters, please rush over to this location and join us to wipe out these damned foreign races."

The identity card of the Holy Heavens had a special function,

which was to provide information only of certain duties. As the 1st Holy Son of the Eastern Temple, and was far above Yue Zhong or Annie, thus he could deliver the message.

Following a powerful intent, a map then appeared in their identity cards, showcasing the location where Qian Chang Qing was supposedly at.

Yue Zhong sighed, before asking, "What's this Qian Chang Qing like?"

Annie thought for a while before replying, "Qian Chang Qing is the 1st among those from the Eastern Temple, a half-step Type 9 powerhouse. He has the Radiant Domain. He possesses countless secret techniques, and is recognized to be one of the foremost experts of the Holy Heavens, top 10 among those at the Type 8 realm, also the one deemed to have the most potential to rise to the Type 9 Holy Lord-in-Waiting position."

Chapter 961: Spatial Devil Ghost!

Annie explained calmly, "Furthermore, he's extremely warm in his treatment of others, and is exceptionally kind. In our Holy Heavens, many have received his grace and favor."

Yue Zhong came to a decision, "In that case, let's go meet up with him now."

Inside this strange world, other than the Undying Devil Spirit, and a few other undying existences, there were many foreign species. Among those foreign races, experts were aplenty, and there were even half-step Type 9 powerhouses among them.

If there was one, Yue Zhong had confidence in taking on. However, if it was 2 of them, he could only choose to flee. The chances of obtaining the treasury in this place were infinitely small. Only by gathering people would there be a chance to take on the foreign races.

Annie agreed, "Sure!"

After they agreed, Yue Zhong also put on his Stealth Armor and followed the instructions on the identity card, heading towards where Qian Chang Qing and the rest were.

In this mysterious realm, where there were countless treasures, resources, rare fruits, and other items, if an ordinary person were to take one, he or she could immediately become a 6-attribute perfect Evolver. Some of them were even able to propel one to the Type 4 realm instantly.

However, with Maruf as an example, Yue Zhong and Annie did not retrieve any items they saw along the way. Those fruits might be precious, but if they were to trigger the defenders or guardian spirits, they might not be able to live. The Undying Devil Spirit was too terrifying. Only a Type 9 powerhouse would be capable of meeting its attack.

There were also other huge Mutant Beast hordes within the realm, of which countless Type 8 and half-step Type 9 existences were among as well.

Each time there was a strong Mutant Beast horde, Yue Zhong and Annie would carefully route around them, before moving along quickly.

After passing through a number of mountains, they finally arrived at the location specified by Qian Chang Qing.

It was a vast and desolate valley, and at the edge of it, there was a huge palace constructed out of red glass crystals, emitting an archaic and saintly aura, looking powerful and grand.

3 forces were facing off in front of the palace, namely the Human Race, the Man-Eating Race, and the Devils Race. On the human side, there were 40-odd, while the Man-Eaters had 8. The Devils had even lesser, a total of 4.

However, among the Man-Eaters, there were 3 half-step Type 9 powerhouses, while the other 5 were freaks at the peak-Type 8 realm. The Devils had 4 half-step Type 9 powerhouses.

Even though the humans had the advantage in numbers, they merely had 2 half-step Type 9 powerhouses. 6 were at the peak-Type 8 realm, hence, their total combat prowess could be considered the weakest.

However, even though the humans' combined strength was the weakest, when using an array or formation, they were able to channel a terrifying strength. These formations were researched by humans and was one of the strongest killing trump cards against foreign races.

One of the half-step Type 9 Devils, who had a single horn on his forehead, his body ripped and exuding a metallic luster, looked towards the Man-Eaters, asking with a savage expression, "Ghost Tun, why don't we join forces and wipe out these cockroaches,

before splitting the treasures of this temple?"

The Man-Eater expert Ghost Tun, had a chilly light in his gaze, "Fine! Your Devil Race can go first!"

Ghost Tun was not stupid, though the human race was weaker after they completed their array, even a half-step Type 9 powerhouse would have to pay a huge price to take them on.

Among these 3 factions, the Devils had the least numbers, but their strength was highest. Once the Man-Eaters and the humans both suffered from the clash, the Devil Race could definitely wipe them all out.

The Devils loved to battle and were cruel and violent by nature. Even among themselves, there were common cases of infighting and slaughter. They were the worst allies to have. In the past, the Man-Eaters had tried allying with them, but each time, they would end up fighting among themselves, driving a wedge further between both factions.

The single-horn Devil Race member laughed, and spoke, "Since you're unwilling, then forget it."

A blue-eyed human powerhouse with a huge sword on his back and his body clad in golden armor frowned, his gaze wary, "Qian Chang Qing, these fellows are not easy to deal with. If they join hands, we will definitely lose."

This was the First Holy Son of the Western Temple, Hai Yin.

This time, it was Hai Yin and Qian Chang Qing who had organized a huge party to come search for treasures in the Merlot Battlefield. However, they had never expected there to be so many foreign races gathered in front of the temple as well.

Qian Chang Qing gazed at the 2 enemy groups, laughing lightly, "Hai Yin, don't worry, if we had met either one of them, it would have been a tough battle with heavy losses on our side, maybe even death. However, since they are both here at the same time, it is

advantageous to us. As long as we maintain our stance, they would not attack us casually. After all, whoever attacks us first would suffer, and once there're any weaknesses or injuries, the other party would pounce on them, tearing them apart."

Hai Yin nodded his head silently. Suddenly, he turned around towards the direction of Yue Zhong and Annie who had flown over, his eyes narrowing, "Someone's here."

Qian Chang Qing was slightly taken aback, as he looked towards the direction as well, his mouth curling upwards, "To think there are 2 other outstanding fellows, I did not even detect their arrival, their stealth abilities are truly top-notch."

At the same time, Yue Zhong felt shocked, "I was discovered. The human race truly has hidden experts. Heaven-defying talents are everywhere. I cannot get complacent and be careless."

Just as Hai Yin was looking towards Yue Zhong, a powerful energy was hidden over at the human's side, staring at Yue Zhong coldly, preparing to deal a direct hit towards Yue Zhong and Annie.

Space contorted and Annie revealed herself, retrieving her identity card as she announced, "Holy Daughter Annie from the Western Temple, and Divine Envoy Yue Zhong from the Central Temple, have arrived. "

Qian Chang Qing's eyes flashed with an intelligent look, as he analyzed, "It is indeed Annie, and the one beside her should be the new Divine Envoy of the Central Temple. Among our reports, there's nothing on this new Divine Envoy among those Divine Envoys-in-Waiting, and he's obviously someone who had reached that position after we came to the Merlot Battlefield. To reach this position at such a short time, he must be capable. Let them in."

The human camp quickly opened up.

"Hahaha!!! New humans? Don't go in, stay here and become my food!"

At that moment, there was a distortion of space behind Yue Zhong, as a half-step Type 9 Spatial Devil Ghost appeared, with a strange rune carved on his forehead, his four limbs engraved with spatial runes as well. His right hand was currently enveloped in devil qi, as he slashed towards Yue Zhong's heart with a savage laughter.

"Watch out!!"

"..."

Seeing that, the human powerhouses all had horrified expressions, shouting to warn him.

Hai Yin pulled out his large sword at the first moment with a crestfallen expression, "Damn it!! It's the Spatial Devil Ghost!! Seems like it's over for Yue Zhong!! Fuck!!"

There was a look of regret in Qian Chang Qing's eyes as well, "Damn it, this human talent is about to fall here!!"

The Spatial Ghost Devil was one of the strongest and terrifying races of the Devils Race, and while they did not possess much strength, they were naturally attuned to spatial laws and could move around space freely, making them one of the toughest enemies to deal with.

If the humans did not have a formation sealing their location, just that single Spatial Devil Ghost was enough to wipe most of them out.

"Just with you? I've already discovered you earlier! This was a trap meant to lure you out! Please become a stepping stone for my evolution!"

Yue Zhong laughed coldly, his Devil Domain bursting forth, enveloping the half-step Type 9 Spatial Devil Ghost within his domain.

Inside the Devil Domain, an endless amount of Devil qi was surging, and space was secure. Even the half-step Type 9 Spatial

Devil Ghost had no way of tearing apart the space to flee.

After releasing the Devil Domain, Yue Zhong was certain of the strength of this enemy, and could not let him react. With a thought, he whirled around to face the Devil Ghost, instantly utilizing the Cosmic Finger that he had comprehended from the True God expert.

At that moment, it seemed that the countless things and galaxies converged on Yue Zhong, forming the powerful Cosmic Finger as it slammed towards the half-step Type 9 Spatial Devil Ghost.

"Shit!!! How is this human so strong?! I can't take this move head-on!! Spatial Domain, appear!!"

Facing the True God-skill, there was a deep fear that sprouted in the Spatial Devil Ghost. He gritted his teeth to execute his Spatial Domain, and at that moment, a powerful region of spatial laws appeared, slamming into the Yue Zhong's Devil Domain, both sides clashing and wearing each other down.

Chapter 962: Cosmic Finger!

The Spatial Devil Ghost took the chance when his domain clashed against Yue Zhong's to tear another spatial hole, trying its best to escape.

With the ability to manipulate space freely, especially at its half-step Type 9 realm, even Yue Zhong's Devil Domain was unable to fully seal its movements.

Relying on the spatial advantage, this Spatial Devil Ghost would be to escape even from a Type 9 powerhouse.

Yue Zhong stared at the Devil Ghost with a chilly glint in his eyes. With a thought, he made use of the Radiant Battleship hidden within the void, and let out a powerful roar, "Break!!"

The Radiant Battleship released a powerful radiance, containing the laws and principles of space that struck the area, directly collapsing any spatial holes that the Devil Ghost had created. The hole he had just opened was instantly sealed shut.

Fear and despair were written all over the face of the Spatial Devil Ghost as he screamed out, "Impossible!! Impossible!! How could the spatial hole I tear open be closed?! Even a Type 9 powerhouse would not be able to do it!"

The Radiant Battleship was a Gold-Grade treasure worthy of challenging God and was a spatial treasure as well. It could transcend worlds, and travel freely, hence, sealing a spatial rip was incredibly easy for it.

As the Spatial Devil Ghost continued to scream and shout, the Cosmic Finger conjured by Yue Zhong finally struck the body of the enemy, causing it to break apart.

In order to vanquish this foe in the shortest possible time, Yue Zhong had thoroughly employed his trump cards. If he were to go easy, he would not be able to kill this Spatial Devil Ghost.

With the death of the Devil Ghost, a powerful source of life force flowed into Yue Zhong. At the same time, as he absorbed it, he gained a stronger sense of spatial laws, and the inner energy within him had reached the peak of the high-Type 8 level.

By the time he was done, his spirit rumbled, and there was joy in his eyes, "This Spatial Devil Ghost is a huge nourishment to me!! If I can hunt a dozen more of such half-step Type 9 powerhouses, I would be able to break into the Type 9 realm directly!"

"What?! Space Ren was killed!!"

"Who the hell is that fellow? How could he take down Space Ren?! That was unbelievable!! He's merely at the high-Type 8 realm, how did he do it?"

"..."

Seeing the half-step Type 9 Spatial Devil Ghost taken down by Yue Zhong, the 3 remaining Devils had eyes of shock and disbelief, their gaze towards Yue Zhong more wary and alarmed.

The Spatial Devil Ghosts were one of the toughest races to kill, even the 3 experts of the Devil Race would not be able to kill one in a frontal clash. At most, it would just be an impasse.

"Strong!!"

"That was formidable, who is this Yue Zhong? He was actually able to kill that half-step Type 9 Spatial Devil Ghost."

"Divine Envoy, are you certain he's just a Divine Envoy? If only those at the Divine Envoy level could kill that half-step Type 9 monster, then what the hell are we Holy Sons for?!"

"..."

A hubbly of discussion began to break out within the human camp, as respect, admiration, envy, all sorts of gazes were thrown on Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's slaughter of that Devil Ghost had caused everyone to

be filled with complicated feelings towards him.

Under their gazes, Yue Zhong and Annie entered the formation and came up to Qian Chang Qing.

Qian Chang Qing wore an amiable smile, as he greeted Yue Zhong warmly, "Yue Zhong, within our information network, we have never heard of you before! In all of Holy Heavens, any expert above the Type 7 realm had all been researched on and I've studied them all and remember them clearly. Are you able to share your background with me?"

Yue Zhong's strength had been displayed clearly for him to see, thus, Qian Chang Qing did not mind treating him as an equal.

Yue Zhong replied with a short but direct answer, "I'm the new disciple of the Central Temple's Holy Lord Tian Dou, and I'd just been raised to the Divine Envoy position a few days back."

Annie suddenly added in, "When he passed through the Initiation Gate, he triggered the Howling Dragon and Roaring Tiger image."

Hearing that, the rest all had changes in their expressions, their gazes towards Yue Zhong becoming even deeper. Someone who could trigger that image was definitely a heaven-defying genius. As long as he did not die, there was no question about his or her ascension to the Type 9 realm.

Qian Chang Qing and Hai Yin were considered talented powerhouses and were at the half-step Type 9 realm. However, to make that leap and cross into the Type 9 realm, it was incredibly difficult. Many experts have been stuck at that bottleneck for so long. Even the two of them had no confidence that they could break that barrier.

The rest of the Holy Sons and Daughters stared at Yue Zhong. They had not taken the legend of the dragon-tiger illusion, only after seeing Yue Zhong in action, did they realize how terrifying such a talent was.

Yue Zhong's gaze narrowed, "Qian Chang Qing, since the situation is at a stalemate, it's not good for us. Along the way, we sensed a number of Undying Devil Spirits, as well as powerful Mutant Beasts. If this continues, just a few of those Undying Devil Spirits would be enough to wipe us out."

Qian Chang Qing laughed bitterly, "I know this as well, however, if we were to move casually, the Man-Eaters and Devil Clan would launch an assault. If they were to join hands, we would be in trouble."

Yue Zhong glanced towards the direction of the opposite factions, and he frowned. He did not have a solution as well.

If the 2 groups joined hands, they would be enough to deal with the human faction. Even with Yue Zhong and Annie, it would be hard to deal with them.

Right at this time, the blue crystal key that was hidden in Yue Zhong's ring suddenly shot out of his ring, transcending space and directly inserted into the doors of the majestic temple.

The archaic and ancient gates of the temple that was engraved in runes then swung open slowly.

At the same time, there were many loud horn sounds.

Under the enveloping horn sounds, the entire region started to crack open, as numerous skeletons of different sizes started climbing out of the ground.

They were of different sizes and shapes, but share one common trait, which was that their bones were all golden in color. Even after goodness knows how long, they had maintained that resplendent gold color. Their eyes were all shining with intelligent flames, and their bodies radiated an insidious but powerful aura.

These skeletons were not Undying Devil Spirits, but another variant of the undead called Specter Skeletons. In the past, these had all been half-step Type 10 powerhouses. They had developed

indestructible physiques and were just left with the transformation of their souls to reach the Type 10 stage, a True God. After their deaths, they had left their physiques behind, that merged with the gathered Yin qi and resentment to form these Specter Skeletons.

Each one of them was at the Type 8 realm, some of the strongest even being at the Type 9 realm. Within the Merlot Battlefield, they were also considered one of the most terrifying forces.

These tens of thousands of Specter Skeletons gathered together, even a half-step True God powerhouse would feel his scalp turn numb and retreat. Otherwise, there was a danger of perishing here.

Within the area of over a 10,000 li, countless skeletons continued to emerge from the grounds, and the beautiful region rich in cultivation energy was suddenly overflowing with resentment, deathly qi, insidious Yin energy.

The skeletons gathered immediately when they emerged, moving slowly but steadily towards the temple.

At this point, a land near the temple also began to split open as large, golden skeleton hands burst out, pulling the rest of their skeletons up.

"The doors of the treasury is open! Let's head in first!" The 3 Devils laughed out loud, and transformed into beams of light that shot towards the temple.

Earlier, when all 3 factions had waited outside the palace, it was because the gates were shut. If any were to try and open the gate, the other 2 would pounce on them. Hence, a strange equilibrium was achieved. Now that the gate was opened, the Devil Race could not be bothered with the humans. The treasures within the palace were of even greater importance.

At the entrance, 8 Specter Skeletons leaped out, wielding bone-

formed weapons, pouncing towards the 3 Devils.

"Hahaha, a bunch of bones, break for me!!"

One of the Devils charged forward with a vicious smile, punching out over a thousand times on the bodies of the 8 Specter Skeletons.

With a single blast, all of the skeletons broke apart in multiple directions, the souls in their heads also dissipated by the Devil Race member.

After that, the 3 of them immediately charged into the temple.

"Go!!"

Following Qian Chang Qing's signal, the rest of the humans also charged right into the temple.

The 8 Man-Eaters also quickly moved, heading into the temple.

Chapter 963: Type 9 Specter Skeleton!

All of a sudden, a golden mighty hand came bursting forth from the ground, grabbing the 8 Man-Eaters.

Ghost Tun roared out, sending out his own fist that caused the atmospheric energy to congeal into a green fist that slammed into the descending palm, "Get lost!"

The huge golden hand waved casually, and scattered the energy punch of Ghost Tun, before slapping out once more, turning one of the Man-Eating Ghosts into meat paste.

"It's a Type 9 Specter Skeleton!! Everyone flee!!" Ghost Tun had a horrified expression as he roared out and quickly shot towards the temple.

A Type 9 powerhouse and a half-step Type 9 powerhouse were 2 vastly different entities. Ghost Tun, who was at the half-step Type 9 stage, would only fall at the hands of a Type 9 powerhouse.

Hearing that, the rest of the Man-Eaters had changes in their countenance as they quickly made for the huge temple.

In that instant, a humanoid Specter Skeleton with a pair of golden wings and a single golden horn on its forehead shot out from the side, the blade in its hands slicing down at one of the Man-Eaters, carving him in half.

Another Specter Skeleton formed from only 10 bones leaped out from the ground, grabbing one of the Man-Eaters and dragged him towards the deep recess of the abyss in the ground.

Not long after, there was a miserable shriek from the ground, before it fell silent.

In just a moment, the Man-Eaters had suffered a huge loss. The humans did not have an easy time either.

A huge golden palm burst out from the ground, exuding a mighty

aura that slapped towards the formation of the human group.

That palm carried a boundless strength formed from resentment and Yin Qi, as well as thick Death laws, slapping down towards them.

The leader, Qian Chang Qing, had a steely expression as he roared, "Evacuate!!"

Even if they were to combine all 40 of them, it would not be enough to take on that single palm. The only thing they could do was to quickly leave the location.

The 40 human experts were all alert, and reacted at the same time, dodging to the sides. However, since the golden palm had burst forth, in a single grab, it managed to grab one Holy Son.

"Save me!! Save me!!"

The face of the Holy Son contorted as he let out screams of despair and fear. However, a terrifying pressure enveloped him, and in an instant, he was crushed and reduced to a pile of bones without any sign of life left.

Yue Zhong stared at the Holy Son, his scalp turning numb, "What a domineering Type 9 Specter Skeleton!!"

There were Specter Skeletons everywhere, and under the terrifying pressure, 2 Holy Sons immediately executed their techniques in a bid to flee. They had already abandoned all thoughts of fighting for treasures and wanted to get out alive.

Seeing that, the rest also began to react, a few of them wanting to leave as well. Treasures were good, but their lives were more important.

Right at that moment, 2 golden bone arrows tore through the skies, piercing the 2 fleeing Holy Sons. In a breath, they turned into skeletons and fell from the skies, not a breath left in them.

Yue Zhong swept a look and discovered many of the Specter

Skeletons were just standing guard outside of the Temple, not daring to go near it. He had the epiphany right then, "The inner sanctum!! Enter the inner sanctum and we'll have a chance!! These Specter Skeletons do not dare enter the Divine Temple."

After that, his figure flashed and he charged in the direction of the Temple.

At that moment, a Specter Skeleton with gold bone wings shot in front of him, slashing out towards Yue Zhong's heart with its claws.

"Go to hell!" Yue Zhong punched out with his fist, slamming into the Specter Skeleton and his immense strength burst forth, directly breaking the skeleton apart.

After destroying the Specter Skeleton, Yue Zhong took the opportunity to enter the Temple Gates, as he stood there and turned around, his eyes flashing with a strange glint, "There's no life force. These are all undead, there are no benefits for me in killing them."

The God-Devil Imprint could absorb the life force of the entities that Yue Zhong killed, but with regards to those that did not have any flesh or blood, even if they were killed, there was no life force to be absorbed. After all, they were constructed from strength and resentment.

The various Holy Sons and Daughters of the human factions were experts in their own right, making use of all their abilities to weave through the line of Specter Skeletons, arriving at the temple gate. However, 3 of them were lost to the Specter Skeletons.

However, with more humans entering the temple, the attention of the Specter Skeletons shifted to those still outside, increasing the difficulty.

One particular Holy Son opened his palms, and fired out vines, grabbing 2 of the Specter Skeletons in front of him and flung them

violently behind, "Get the hell out of my way!"

After throwing those 2 skeletons, the Holy Son continued to soar towards the gates. As long as he reached, he would be safe.

At that moment, there was a flash of gold, as a blade sliced through the head of the Holy Son, directly splitting his head in half and his corpse fell out of the sky. He was barely 50m away from the Temple gates.

Seeing this, all the human experts felt a chill in their hearts, as they watched the 5 remaining human powerhouses and their struggles.

Even a half-step Type 9 powerhouse would fall when surrounded by such numbers. The remaining 5 powerhouses were considered the weakest among the human faction, without any external help, they would surely die.

Yue Zhong took a look, and frowned, before tapping his foot and charging straight into their midst.

Annie was surrounded by numerous transparent silk while in the midst of the Specter Skeletons, continually fending them off. If the skeletons had flesh, they would have been ripped apart by those wires. However, as their bones were from half-step Type 10 experts, they were incredibly tough, and unless an actual Type 9 powerhouse acted, it was impossible to break their bones.

Annie then controlled the silk to bounce the skeletons away. Soon, she was covered in perspiration, and her strength was beginning to ebb away. She was utilizing all her concentration and strength to resist their attacks. As long as she became weaker by half, the Specter Skeletons would be able to barge through her defenses and tear her apart. Under that sort of pressure, she continued maintaining her focus.

All of a sudden, a huge Skeleton appeared, over a dozen meters tall, sending a powerful punch towards her.

With a loud blast, the silky webs were almost torn apart, while the Specter Skeleton was also sent flying back by the rebound.

At the moment Annie's defenses crumbled, 4 Specter Skeletons charged forth, slashing out at her from 4 different directions.

As danger befell her, Annie continued to maintain an icy look, however, there was a sliver of despair in her heart, "Who would have thought that I'd perish here!!"

Just then, a figure shot past one of the Skeletons, sending a powerful punch out, and the atmospheric energy gathered together before exploding out, and the Specter Skeletons were all blasted backward in a shower of gold bones.

Annie focused her eyes, noticing that it was Yue Zhong, and there was a strange feeling that welled up in her, "It's Yue Zhong! He saved me!!"

"Gather on me!!" Yue Zhong roared out in rage, as he sent out another punch full of strength, blasting another dozen Specters away.

The 4 other Holy Sons quickly gathered around him, forming a small formation.

"Charge!!"

He waved his fists, and punched out at space, causing a huge atmospheric pressure to weigh down on the scattered bones, preventing them from reforming, and forcefully carved a path out.

The 5 other Holy Sons and Daughters quickly executed their secret techniques as well, triggering the atmospheric energy to fend off the Skeletons at the side.

In terms of strength, these human powerhouses were stronger than those ordinary Specter Skeletons, after all, they were talented cultivators.

Just as they were about to break out of the deadlock, the earth

suddenly split apart, and a huge giant Specter Skeleton appeared. It was the one who had squashed the peak-Type 8 Man-Eater.

Chapter 964: Golden Treasure Armor!

The Type 9 Golden Giant Specter Skeleton opened its eyes, as 2 beams that could tear through the heavens itself, imbued with terrifying suffocating pressure as they weighed down on Yue Zhong.

"Shit!" When he was swept by those beams, Yue Zhong felt his body turn cold as an incredible feeling of danger arose.

Right at that moment, the Type 9 Specter Skeleton stretched out its huge palms and brought along a terrifying strike imbued with death laws, aiming for Yue Zhong.

This was a true Type 9 powerhouse, that single palm contained spatial laws, and directly sealed Yue Zhong's movement. Even the Wings of Hope could not be utilized.

Against that attack that could easily level an entire planet, Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed and he activated his Devil Domain, channeling a surge of Devil qi towards the Type 9 Specter Skeleton.

The palm of the Type 9 giant came crashing down, directly destroying the Domain that Yue Zhong was so proud of and relied so much upon.

A Type 9 powerhouse was extremely close to God, possessing utmost strength, and unless it was a domain from a similar-level opponent, it was impossible even for the perfect God-Devil Physique and the nigh-invincible God-Devil Domain to withstand.

As the Devil Domain collapsed, Yue Zhong immediately fired out the Cosmic Finger he had comprehended, and a powerful force that contained the strength of a small-universe congealed at his fingertips, firing out into the sky.

With a loud blast, the Cosmic Finger struck the Skeleton and dispersed. The powerful recoil caused Yue Zhong to spit out a

mouthful of golden blood.

However, there was also a huge hole within the Type 9 Specter Skeleton.

Seeing Yue Zhong execute that Cosmic Finger, causing a huge hole in the Type 9 Specter Skeleton, Qian Chang Qing was filled with shock, "He actually blocked it?! He blocked a Type 9 powerhouse?! That's unbelievable! Is he still human?! How come there's such a monster?!"

The distance between a Type 8 and Type 9 powerhouse, was that of a spirit and a half-god, the difference of an ant and a heavenly dragon. It would already be considered incredible for a half-step Type 9 powerhouse to be able to flee from a Type 9 powerhouse. To actually face on an attack, it was incredibly rare.

Hai Yin stared at Yue Zhong, his eyes filled with envy, "That's so formidable! Damn it!! How is it the gap between humans can be that wide also?!"

The rest of the Holy Sons and Daughters were also shocked. They had seen and experienced a lot along with their own journeys, and they were naturally clear on the strength of a Type 9 powerhouse.

Yue Zhong's Cosmic Finger tore through the Specter Skeleton, and he gritted his teeth to suppress the backlash, grabbing the 5 other humans, and charged through the large hole, flying directly for into the Temple gates.

The Type 9 Specter Skeleton watched blankly at the huge hold in its right arm, and its resentful gaze then turned to Yue Zhong who was standing at the Temple Gates.

There was a sudden strange glint in the gaze of the Type 9 Specter Skeleton, and it grabbed towards the Temple viciously.

"What?! Is the Type 9 Giant actually not afraid of the Temple?"

A terrifying thought appeared for everyone, and their faces turned pale, as they quickly dashed further inside the Temple.

If the Type 9 Specter Skeleton was truly not afraid of the Temple, it would be able to kill everyone present.

When the claws of the Specter Skeleton came to a distance of about 10m from the Temple, they suddenly broke apart and scattered over the ground.

It quickly retracted its claws, or what was left of it. The seemingly indestructible hand had actually lost everything from the wrist.

Yue Zhong had stayed behind to observe, and upon noticing its situation, his eyes brightened, "Everyone, no need for panic! It cannot enter the temple!"

"Ah! Help!!"

Right at this time, one of the walls of the Temple began to split open, as a huge, thorny vine shot out, wrapping around one of the Holy Sons, and instantly ground him into pieces.

Hai Yin let out a roar of rage, retrieving his huge sword on his back, as he charged at the vine and swung out a thousand blade beams at one go, "Damn bastard!! Die!!"

Qian Chang Qing's face was steely as he came up to the vine, "This is a well-known Devil Race trap, the Bloodsucking Vine. Once caught, even a Type 8 powerhouse would be helpless. Everyone, be careful. There is definitely more around here. Those damn Devils want to slow us down."

Inside the Great God World, there were many strange things, capable of devouring even Type 8 powerhouses. Only by reaching the Type 9 realm would one be able to ignore such things.

Annie stepped up and spoke coldly, "Let me handle these traps. My ability is the best counter to these trifling things."

With that, she waved her hands, and countless silk shot out towards everywhere, and everywhere they touched, the traps folded and disappeared mysteriously.

She then retracted her lines, "It's done. Those traps are already destroyed. However, I'm not sure if there are other traps within the Temple."

Qian Chang Qing nodded silently, "Let's move on!"

The group then proceeded further into the Temple.

The insides of the temple were resplendent, gold shining everywhere, and engraved with many beautiful murals.

However, within those crystal walls, there were also fluctuations of True Gods' wills and everyone did not dare approach them carelessly. If they were to accidentally activate some restriction, it would spell the end of them.

If a True God expert wanted to kill a Type 8 powerhouse, all it took was just a thought. Even someone like Qian Chang Qing, a half-step Type 9 powerhouse would not be able to escape. Only a Type 9 powerhouse would cause a True God to take another look.

The group continued forward, following the long and narrow tunnels, before finally arriving at a large field.

Inside the central field, there was a round altar, exuding a saintly and ancient aura, carved with countless mysterious runes.

Right in the center of the altar was a single suit of armor that was gold in color, giving off a powerful and oppressive aura.

Qian Chang Qing stared at it, his heart skipping a beat as a heated and excited look appeared on his face, "That's the Gold-Grade Treasure Battle Armor!! Oh my goodness, to think there's such a treasure!! With it, I can take on a Type 9 powerhouse!!"

Hai Yin stared at the armor and his heart trembled too, his eyes filled with greed, "Gold-Grade Battle Armor!! If I can obtain it, I can instantly become a Holy Lord-level powerhouse!!"

A Gold-Grade Treasure was extremely rare even in the Holy Heavens. Furthermore, an armor-based Gold-Grade Treasure was

increasingly rare. These were items that had existed in history eons past, where even True Gods had worn them before. A Type 9 powerhouse could not hope to damage it in the slightest.

Every piece was extremely precious, and if a Type 8 powerhouse were to put it on, it would allow his or her combat strength to reach the Type 9 stage. Furthermore, while the item was lacking in offensive power, its defense was definitely much stronger, and the user would be hard to kill.

The rest of the Holy Sons also stared at it with heightened desire.

"That is mine!!"

3 Holy Sons finally could not suppress their greed, as they shot towards the altar.

When they saw people making their moves, the rest also could not help themselves, as they pounced towards the armor.

There was only one such armor, and yet there were so many of them. It would naturally belong to whoever reached it first. Once any of these Holy Sons or Daughters obtain it, they would become the strongest powerhouse among those present here.

Even Qian Chang Qing and Hai Yin could not help themselves, as they shot towards the altar.

Only Yue Zhong was the only who kept his guard up, as well as Annie, who stood quietly behind him, not moving.

Annie had a rare hint of anxiety as she asked, "Yue Zhong, why aren't you going over? If you gain it, you can instantly become a Holy Lord-level powerhouse."

Yue Zhong's perception swept up, as he replied warily, "It's not so simple. The 3 Devil members and those Man-Eaters had entered earlier than us. If that treasure was so easy to obtain, they would have taken it long ago. It's likely that this is a trap!"

"What a cautious fellow! However, no matter how guarded you

are, it's useless! Ghost Tun, do it!"

Following a light laugh, 3 black blurs shot out from the void, each of those half-step Type 9 Devil Race members striking at their designated targets.

Chapter 965: Killing the Devil Witch!

The 3 half-step Type 9 experts from the Devil Clan threw all their might into their attacks. At that instant, one of the Holy Sons had his head dug out, another was sliced in two, and the last had his head decapitated.

The 5 remaining Man-Eaters who had been hiding suddenly launched an attack at the other human Holy Sons, and in an instant, 5 of them had been torn apart, and their corpses consumed.

Within a short moment, over 8 Holy Sons had been annihilated.

Inside this temple, the number of human experts was the most, but in terms of collective strength, they were the weakest. With 8 of their members gone, their overall strength had dipped considerably.

Annie looked at the 8 Holy Sons who had been decimated and felt her heart turn cold. Had she joined in the rush for that armor, she would have been torn apart by those foreign species.

Qian Chang Qing's eyes turned bloodshot as he roared out, "Formation!! Get into formation!!"

Only by being in a formation, could the humans take on the terrifying foreign species!

However, they were now surrounded and encircled, each of them being taken out by the enemies, and there was no way to respond quickly enough.

Qian Chang Qing and Hai Yin were also being held back by one of the half-step Type 9 Devil Race members, as well as a half-step Type 9 Man-Eater.

The physiques of humans were weaker than those foreign races, and even if Qian Chang Qing and Hai Yin were both heaven-defying talents, against the top experts of the Devil Race and Man-

Eater Race, they were at a disadvantage, with no way of extracting themselves, and there was even the danger of them falling.

"Damn it! Follow me!" Yue Zhong looked at the foreign races engaging in wanton slaughter of his fellow humans and frowned. With a tap of his foot, he shot towards one 8m-tall Cyclops Werewolf, a being with a single eye, wolf head, human body, and his entire body covered in black scales.

"Hehe, this handsome little brother, come and play with this sister ok? This sister will give you the best experience of this world you'll ever enjoy."

One Devil woman came up to Yue Zhong, her hair purple and long, her figure voluptuous and alluring, with only 2 pieces of black armor covering her private parts, revealing most of her fair skin. Her features were exceptionally charming, and she revealed a coy, yet insidious smile.

Seeing that smile, 2 Holy Sons became infatuated and had the sudden urge to become her servants. The moment that thought came to mind, their strength dipped. The single-horn Cyclops Werewolf laughed savagely and took the opportunity to slam into them, his claws digging out their hearts and swallowing them.

"Ugly freak, you're too old!!"

Yue Zhong swept the beautiful Devil Witch a look, and laughed coldly, immediately casting his Devil Domain, enveloping the Devil With with a surging amount of Devil Qi.

"Stinking brat, you dare say I'm old? When I capture you, I will suck you dry of your essence and tear you limb from limb!"

Hearing Yue Zhong's curse, the mouth of the Devil Witch twitched, as she reached out and sent out a powerful yet kinky Lust Domain that was pink in color. The pinkish aura surged forth and tried to resist the invading Devil Qi from Yue Zhong's Devil Domain.

This Devil Witch was one of the peak experts of the 10,000-Devil Altar, her Lust Domain could ignite all passion and desires of any living creatures. Even a Type 9 powerhouse would turn into a lustful wolf when enveloped by this Domain.

The Lust Domain was considered one of the top domains of the 10,000-Devil Altar and the moment she executed that move, Yue Zhong's Devil Domain was held at bay.

"Keke, handsome, do you think I'm beautiful?"

The beautiful Devil Witch wore an alluring smile, shaking her body in an erotic manner while exuding an intoxicating charm, flying towards Yue Zhong.

Within that Domain, every single move of hers seemed capable of capturing the attention of all male living things. 6 Holy Sons were actually distracted by her, smitten by her sensual movements, and lost their will to fight, before they were torn apart by the Devil Race member as well.

Other than a few other half-step Type 9 powerhouses, even the Man-Eaters could not help but stir at the sight of that Devil Witch, their movements and strength sapped, giving some of their human opponents a moment of breath. Her charms were potent enough to distract even half-step Type 9 powerhouses.

When Annie saw the unfolding scene, her eyes were filled with astonishment, "What a beautiful woman, if I were a man, it would be impossible to resist her charms!!"

"Ugly bitch, just go to hell!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, as he channeled the God-Devil Domain with all his might, and both sides of the Domain surged. The angelic side began to envelop him, as he took in a deep breath, and absorbed the blessings and holy nature of the God-Domain, pushing his strength to the peak, reaching the terrifying half-step Type 9 realm.

Yue Zhong stared at the incoming Devil Witch with an icy look and shot out his Cosmic Finger. In that instant, a terrifying might surged from the sky, pressing towards the Devil Witch viciously.

Instantly, her face turned pale, as she screamed out pitifully, "No!! Don't kill me!! I'm willing to be your slave and warm your bed!!!"

Her begging and plea could easily shake anybody's heart, but the Cosmic Finger continued to press down on her without any mercy.

"Damn it!! Break for me!!" The beautiful Devil Witch's expression turned many times before she breathed deeply, and her lithe body suddenly burst forth with strength, turning metallic black as her half-step Type 9 strength burst forth. She sent a fist out explosively.

Although this Devil Witch seemed helpless and relied on her charms, she was a true half-step Type 9 expert and could hold her own even in dangerous battles. She did not need to rely solely on her charms, as her strength was decent enough.

A black light that seemed capable of tearing the sky slammed into the Cosmic Finger and with a loud boom, a powerful shockwave blasted outwards, causing many to shudder.

The image of the cosmos from Yue Zhong's attack shuddered slightly but managed to disperse the fist of the Devil Witch, as it slammed into her, directly obliterating her.

The moment she was killed, a pure and abundant life force surged into Yue Zhong's body.

"Marlin died!!"

"That human's domain is so strong!! What is it?! How come it's so terrifying?!"

"..."

Seeing how the beautiful Devil Witch had been killed, everyone

was filled with shock as they stared at Yue Zhong in trepidation.

As for Yue Zhong himself, he had already leaped out at one 6m-tall Man-Eater who had a long horse-face, yet his teeth as sharp as a tiger, and sent out a fist.

There was a loud blast as the head of the Man-Eater expert burst apart like a watermelon.

Annie, who had been standing quietly behind as though she did not exist, waved her hands and caused countless transparent silk to shoot out, instantly binding a 13m-tall Type 8 Mutant Giant, stopping his movements for a while.

The Type 8 Mutant Bronze Giant had immense strength, his physique surpassing many others. With a powerful shrug, he caused the strings to break.

As the strings floated away, Yue Zhong appeared in front of the Type 8 Mutant Bronze Giant mysteriously, sending a powerful fist at his head and bursting it.

The Devil Qi continued to surge, and within the Devil Domain, there was a weak Man-Eater warrior within, with a crow head and dragon wings. Yue Zhong then teleported in front of that warrior and punched out at the head as well, blasting it to smithereens.

In just a few breaths, 4 foreign species members had fallen at Yue Zhong's hands, their immense life force absorbed by him, causing him to become even stronger.

The deaths of these 4 experts were also a huge loss to these foreign species.

"Join hands to deal with him! Otherwise, we'll all die here!"

The single-horn Cyclops Werewolf let out a loud howl, activating his Domain, as his own Devil Domain surged forth and clashed against Yue Zhong's.

Hearing that war cry, the 3 remaining half-step Type 9

powerhouses abandoned their opponents, as though they were all connected in mind, and launched their domains, attacking Yue Zhong with all their might.

At that moment, 2 Devil Domains, 1 Ruthless Domain, and 1 Devil Blade Domain assailed Yue Zhong.

Chapter 966: Tear in Space!

Qian Chang Qing and Hai Yin eyed Yue Zhong who was being surrounded and hesitated for a bare moment, before turning around to soar towards the Gold Grade Battle Armor. Evidently, the treasure was more important than Yue Zhong.

"Joining hands? It's a pity, you're too late. Had you guys been earlier, I might have been unable to take on you guys. Now, all that awaits you is death!"

With a cold laugh, Yue Zhong shot to the skies, his Devil Domain suddenly shrinking around his right fist. With another step, he then traversed through the air like a god, his fist slamming into the Devil Domain released by one of the Horned Devils.

After absorbing so much life force of the many Type 8 powerhouses, Yue Zhong's base strength was already in the peak Type 8 realm, and his power had increased qualitatively. The God-Devil Domain was increasingly stronger and could be maintained over a longer period of time, not dispersing so easily now.

Under the merciless assault of Yue Zhong, the Horned Devil's Domain was instantly obliterated, the Devil Qi within absorbed by the Devil Domain around Yue Zhong's right fist.

The God-Devil Domain of Yue Zhong was the strongest and purest form of energy, placed atop the rest of the Devil-related Domains, and had the most comprehensive of laws within. All other Devil Domains within the Great God World would be suppressed by Yue Zhong's Domain, thus, it was no surprise the Horned Devil lost.

Furthermore, Yue Zhong had enhanced his strength through the God Domain, reaching the half-step Type 9 realm. He could naturally crush the enemies' Devil Domain with a single punch.

There was an utter look of disbelief and shock in the eyes of the

Horned Devil, "HOW?! How could my domain be broken by a mere Type 8 human?!"

"Go to hell!" Yue Zhong roared, as he sent a punch at the head of the Horned Devil after breaking through the Domain, bursting it and absorbing the remnant life force.

At the same time, the remaining 3 domains also surrounded him, sealing his movements.

Facing the attack of those 3 half-step Type 9 powerhouses, Yue Zhong laughed coldly, as he barked out, "Open!"

The Radiant Battleship that was hidden in the void immediately shot out a beam of light, as it tore a spatial rend right in front of Yue Zhong.

The attacks of the 3 half-step Type 9 powerhouses were all absorbed into the spatial tear, without harming Yue Zhong in the slightest.

One of the Devil had a pair of goat horns, his visage savage and he had a pair of devil wings, looked horrified as he muttered, "Impossible! How can he control space?! That's a power only Type 9 experts have!! He's just a Type 8 powerhouse, how can he control space?! HOW?!"

Ghost Tun was also shocked when he saw the spatial tear in front of Yue Zhong, "Space control?! He can control space?! Is he a Type 9 powerhouse that is pretending to be a Type 8 expert?"

Control of space and spatial laws was something only a Type 9 powerhouse could do, and one of the most important abilities that set a Type 9 apart from a Type 8.

Within the Great God World, many Mutant Beasts had strength already exceeding some Type 9 powerhouses even at the half-step Type 9 stage. However, against the true Type 9 powerhouses, these beasts would still be slain, purely because Type 9 experts could control space and tear spatial holes, playing around with even the

strongest and toughest of Type 8 powerhouses.

After the spatial tear absorbed the 3 Domains, Yue Zhong flickered and appeared in front of the Cyclops Werewolf, his fist punching towards the head.

Among the 3 of them, this Cyclops Werewolf was the weakest, and nearest to Yue Zhong in terms of strength.

The eye of the Cyclops Werewolf flashed dangerously, as he locked onto Yue Zhong, and his body went taut before he retreated explosively.

Yue Zhong swept him a glance, and laughed mysteriously, barking out in a low voice, "Break!"

There was a sense of danger that welled up in the werewolf's heart.

At that moment, a number of transparent silk wrapped around the Cyclops Werewolf, and in a flash, his body was torn and scratched by that silk, causing fresh blood to flow, while his retreat was suddenly cut off.

Yue Zhong's brilliance had completely overshadowed Annie, causing everyone to forget that there was this Holy Daughter who was an expert as well. She was a powerhouse with countless experience, her eye for opportunities not losing out to Yue Zhong, just that her strength was slightly weaker.

"Not good, I was careless!!"

A look of shock flashed in his eye, and ignoring the injuries he already had, he burst forth with his strength to struggle out. At that moment, his flesh was sliced in multiple areas, revealing the light-gold bones beneath, however, he continued to break apart the strings and silk in a bid to escape.

Yue Zhong's gaze was cold as he appeared on top of the Cyclops Werewolf, his fist punching down, "Too late, die!!"

With a loud bang, the head of the Cyclops Werewolf burst open, as life force was absorbed into Yue Zhong's body.

Seeing how vicious Yue Zhong was, the remaining Devil Race member quickly turned tail in a bid to flee.

Now, all that left of the 4 half-step Type 9 powerhouses that had surrounded Yue Zhong was Ghost Tun himself.

"Human, you're really strong. I respect that. However, the stronger you are, the more I must kill you. Let's die together!!" Ghost Tun revealed a savage expression as he tossed a black pill into his mouth.

The moment the pill entered his stomach, Ghost Tun suddenly became rigid, as countless golden bone blades burst out of his body. Veins started popping dangerously in his face, forming an ugly and hideous visage. Suddenly, the aura of a Type 9 expert exuded from his body.

Annie saw Ghost Tun's transformation and her face fell, as she barked, "Sky Devouring Pill!! It's the Sky Devouring Pill!! Everyone, attack him!! Otherwise, we will all die!!"

The Sky Devouring Pill was a secret pill developed by the Man-Eaters, once consumed, it could ignite the latent potential of a cultivator, allowing his or her prowess to increase exponentially. However, due to the potent effects, once consumed, the user will battle until he died. There was no cure, and unless one was pushed to the extreme brink, no one would utilize such a pill.

Currently, all the human powerhouses were attracted by the Gold Grade Battle Armor at the center of the altar, fighting to reach it first, and no one responded to Annie's call.

The allure of the treasure was too great. Once it was obtained, it could help the user become a mighty figure throughout the Great God World. Few could resist such temptations.

"Go and die!"

Ghost Tun eyed the human experts near the altar and with his fingers outstretched, numerous bone blades shot out, forming a Blade Domain, blasting towards the human cultivators.

Save me!!"

"Help!!"

"..."

These human Holy Sons and Daughters all activated their own Domains, but when clashing against Ghost Tun's domain, they were all crushed, their bodies riddled with grievous injuries, as they screamed out in agony before they died.

In a single instant, Ghost Tun had already killed 3 human powerhouses.

The rest of the powerhouses continued to struggle in agony, even Qian Chang Qing and Hai Yin were executing their own domains, struggling madly within the Bone Blade Domain.

Annie gritted her teeth, waving her jade-like hands and caused more transparent silk to appear beside Ghost Tun, wrapping around him.

Ghost Tun did not even bother about the silk, as he charged at Yue Zhong, and when he brushed past that transparent silk, the sharp bone blades on his body just sliced them all up. In an instant, he already appeared in front of Yue Zhong, slashing towards him, while channeling the Bone Blade Domain as well.

"You want to die with me? Not a chance!!"

There was a strong battle intent in Yue Zhong's eyes, as he immediately cast the Cosmic Finger, pressuring the Bone Blade Domain.

With a loud blast, Yue Zhong's Cosmic Finger was actually destroyed by the Bone Blade Domain, while the Bone Blade Domain also collapsed under the Cosmic Finger.

In the midst of the resulting shockwave, Yue Zhong stepped through the air, transcending space and sent out a punch atop Ghost Tun's head.

The terrifying strength burst forth and caused a huge hole within Ghost Tun's head.

At that instant, numerous bone blades shot out from Ghost Tun's body, slicing upwards at Yue Zhong.

The Bone Blades had laws and principles imbued in them, even when Yue Zhong tried his best to dodge, he was still sliced up, causing fresh blood to splatter onto the ground.

Chapter 967: Destroying Ghost Tun!

The torn muscles and flesh on Ghost Tun's head quickly regenerated, as the injury that Yue Zhong caused recovered in a blink of an eye.

Yue Zhong's body flickered through the endless Bone Blades, while his fists punched out rapidly, covered in golden saint-like radiance, destroying the Bone Blades that appeared in front of him.

After passing through the bone blades, Yue Zhong came up to Ghost Tun's head once more, his fist punching downwards in a thousand fist shadows.

Under that merciless assault, Ghost Tun's head was ravaged and healed, over and over again. Even when Yue Zhong managed to destroy it fully, it was able to regenerate within seconds. The brain could be destroyed, but Ghost Tun was not yet dead. It was truly horrific.

As Yue Zhong was continuously pummeling Ghost Tun, Ghost Tun's body also fired out a number of bone blades, using strange angles to attack Yue Zhong, forcing him back.

At the moment Yue Zhong retreated, Ghost Tun's body recovered completely, as though he had not been injured at all. He was basically an undying freak right now.

Yue Zhong stared at it and frowned, "Damn it!! I can't kill him!! If this goes on, the person to die will be me!! Seems like I can only do that!"

With the support of the God Domain, Yue Zhong had temporarily risen to the half-step Type 9 realm. However, each second sapped him of a lot of energy. He could not maintain it for too long.

His gaze narrowed, and he quickly smashed the Bone Blades apart. He then appeared behind Ghost Tun, and ignited his Flame Domain, before congealing it to a layer that covered his right fist,

burning with the God-Devil Flames. He then punched out at Ghost Tun.

At that moment, the golden God-Devil Flames ignited and began burning Ghost Tun's body, burning up large chunks of its flesh and blood.

"Ah!!"

Burned by that God-Devil Flames, Ghost Tun screamed out in agony, as countless bone blades burst out from him again, trying to slice at Yue Zhong.

"Break for me!!"

Yue Zhong's body started to radiate like a god, as his left fist channeled a Sky Covering Shadow Fist, breaking through all the bone blades, while his right fist smashed into Ghost Tun's body mercilessly and continuously while wrapped in the God-Devil Flames. The intense assault caused Ghost Tun to roar out in agony, his body ablaze in flames.

Ghost Tun's vitality was incredibly tenacious, even when his flesh was being burnt away, it was regenerating at an insane speed. However, ultimately, the regeneration speed could not compare to the God-Devil Flame's incineration, and amidst his miserable cries, he was finally burnt to a pile of ashes.

With his death, a pure amount of life force shot into Yue Zhong, nourishing him.

After killing Ghost Tun, Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief, and immediately released the God-Devil Domain and Flame Domain. Maintaining both at the same time was a huge expenditure of his energy. Under such circumstances, he would be totally sapped after a mere 3 minutes of combat.

At this time, Yue Zhong glanced towards the altar, noticing a number of the Holy Sons reaching it.

One of them managed to get to it, with greed in his eyes, as he

stretched out to grab the Gold Grade Battle Armor.

Behind him, another Holy Son had a chilly glint in his eyes, as he roared out and sent a vicious slap, causing a dragon formed out of energy to blast the Holy Son in front, sending him flying with heavy injuries, "Get lost!! It's mine!!"

Among the humans, there was strife too. Against the foreign species, they would work together and fight alongside. However, once those external threats were not present, and faced with an incredible treasure, their inner greed and demons would rear their ugly heads, causing them to slaughter each other in greed.

Another beautiful Holy Daughter waved her hands, causing a rainbow to shoot out and slam into 3 Holy Sons in front of her, breaking down their attacks and sent them flying to one side. She then grabbed out at thin air, forming a grasp at the Gold Grade Battle Armor.

Just as her energy hand shot out, another Holy Son fired out a black radiance, slamming into the energy hand, dissipating it forcefully.

If anyone present were to obtain the Gold Grade Battle Armor, they would become an existence capable of dealing with Type 9 powerhouses. Under such an allure, no one could maintain their rationale. The only thing holding them back from killing one another was because they were still fellow humans. Hence, no one died. However, as the battles raged on, they became even more furious with one another.

Yue Zhong stared at them quietly, without any intention to join in, just frowning at their mad behavior. At the same time, he took out a vial of Type 9 Mutant Beast blood to drink and recover his energy.

Annie also stood quietly by Yue Zhong's side, like his shadow, watching the scene in front of her, and a hint of greed in her eyes.

She was someone who fought in the shadows, acting as support. Her silk strands enabled her to control someone else like a puppet and could split apart armors and tie her enemies. However, in a frontal clash, she was no match for the rest of the Holy Sons and Daughters. Hence, when fighting for treasures, she knew she did not have an upper hand. She was always one who kept her calm, and since she knew there was no chance for her to obtain the treasure, she did not step forward to fight for it.

Qian Chang Qing let out a loud roar towards the sky, "Everyone, stop!!! Listen to me!! There's a problem with this treasure!! If it was so easy to obtain, then the Devil Race and Man-Eaters would have taken it before us!! Stop!! Stop fighting!!"

Every one of the Holy Sons and Daughters was smart, and they quickly sobered up at that, realizing that they had missed that point. It was unfortunate that greed had blinded their eyes earlier.

Qian Chang Qing had used a psychological attack in his roar, shaking them out from the greed that overtaken them, forcefully bringing the infighting to a stop.

At the moment they stopped, one handsome Holy Son dressed in white appeared like a specter atop the altar, his lips revealing a smug smile as he reached out to grab Gold Grade Battle Armor.

Just as he touched the armor, the altar suddenly radiated brightly, forming a huge golden shield that enveloped him and the armor.

The runes around the altar shone, and a number of sharp gold spikes burst out from the altar, piercing that Holy Son.

A mysterious force then traveled through the spikes, immediately sucking the Holy Son dry, turning him into dust.

A wind blew past, scattering the ashes to one side.

Seeing this, everyone's heart turned cold. They had finally cooled down enough to stop fighting and come up to the altar together.

Yue Zhong also came up to observe carefully.

The temple was harboring too many mysteries, if one was not careful, a Type 8 existence could be snuffed out just like an ant.

All around the altar, there were many runes engraved, each of them emitting a strange aura. The Gold Grade Battle Armor was placed right in the middle, and right at the spot where the treasure met the altar, was a silver keyhole.

Seeing that, Yue Zhong's brows furrowed and turned to leave. Such a treasure needed a key to open, with his current strength, he could not break through it. Only a Type 9 or even Type 10 True-God expert would be able to deal with the methods of another True-God expert.

Right as he was about to leave, the crystal silver key within his storage ring began to shudder as though it was alive.

Immediately, he decided to stay, watching them quietly.

Qian Chang Qing swept the entire place a glance, before sighing, "There's no way about it, this treasure needs a key to retrieve. Let's go search for other treasures!"

After that, he turned around without any delay and headed further into the temple.

This palace was a treasury, and there was sure to be other treasures other than this armor. Plenty of Mutant Beast nuclei, leather, scales were placed everywhere. Type 5 Mutant Beast nuclei were piled up as high as mountains. Weapons of all sorts were placed everywhere casually. There was even a treasure on the same level of the Heaven-Piercing Bow.

The remaining Holy Sons and Daughters began to leave, dispersing in other directions, retrieving the various treasures.

Chapter 968: Crumbling of the Temple!

Yue Zhong told Annie, "Take a step back!"

Annie retreated silently.

Yue Zhong sighed a while, thinking deeply, before inserting the key warily.

As the crystal key went into the hole, there was a bright, resplendent gold radiance that shone out of the altar, as the Gold Grade Battle Armor began to exude a terrifying aura, before shooting and latching onto Yue Zhong.

Amidst the radiance, Yue Zhong's body was covered with that Gold Grade Battle Armor, at the same time, a powerful aura began to emit from him. His eyes closed and he did not move.

A powerful will imprint then went into his mind, forming into the True God-expert with golden eyes.

After the True God-expert formed, Yue Zhong's sea of consciousness trembled. He could only quickly summon his avatar within his consciousness.

The True God-expert gazed at Yue Zhong with a look of disdain, as though he was viewing an ant, and barked out, "Pathetic lifeform, I'm the great True God Wade! Stop resisting and surrender your body to me! I will grant you eternal life and endless glory!"

Inside his consciousness, Yue Zhong looked at the True God Wade's avatar, and his eyes were filled with battle intent, "Another lingering will? I've already destroyed you once before, this time, it's not going to be any different!"

"Lingering will? No, within this Gold Battle Armor, it is not just a lingering will, it is an undying strand of my soul! You think that you could obtain the Temple key so easily, enter my Temple, and obtain my treasure, just because of your luck? No, it was all within

my calculations. Throughout the ages, among those who had obtained the key and entered this Temple, only your body can handle my soul imprint, and allow me to revive!"

"This avatar of mine is an undying soul strand, and even a True God-expert would find it hard to remove. Just based on you, a mere Type 8 powerhouse, and you want to defeat me? Just hand your body over and be a good slave. Once I stand at the peak once more, I will help you reform another body, and give you eternal life and endless glory. I'm invincible and undefeatable!" Wade glared at Yue Zhong coolly, as though he was an ant, trying to beat down Yue Zhong's sense of self-confidence.

Inside this consciousness, where strength depended on the will and confidence of the expert, if Yue Zhong was to lose hope, Wade would gain an advantage. He might look arrogant and unbridled, but it was all part of his ploy.

"What a joke, if you were really invincible, how come there's only a strand of soul left? Just scram back to your grave!!"

Yue Zhong's mental fortitude was too strong, and he shot forward and fired out a Cosmic Finger, pressing down on Wade.

Wade laughed coldly when he saw that, directly obliterating it, "The Cosmic Finger is my secret technique, you've barely gotten a grasp on it. Break for me!"

After destroying the image of the universe, Wade's palm slapped out, causing an encompassing figure that blotted out the sky to slap down viciously, destroying Yue Zhong's avatar, as pain coursed throughout his body.

In just a second, Yue Zhong's avatar had reformed, and he looked at Wade with a hint of trepidation, "Strong. This soul strand is definitely more than 10 times stronger than the previous lingering will."

After reforming, Yue Zhong continued to launch attacks upon

Wade. He had to destroy this soul strand, otherwise, death was all that awaited him.

At the same time, in the temple, the moment Yue Zhong donned on the Gold Battle Armor, there was a surge of strength that emitted out.

"The aura of a Type 9 powerhouse!!"

"That's a Type 9 strength!!"

"..."

The other experts who were searching for treasures turned around, noticing Yue Zhong who had the armor, and their eyes were full of shock and envy.

Qian Chang Qing stared at Yue Zhong, his eyes filled with undisguised jealousy, "How did he do it?"

Hai Yin also stomped his foot, his eyes filled with envy, "Damn it!!! Why isn't it me!!! Why didn't the armor choose me?!"

Hong! Hong! Hong!

When the Gold Battle Armor landed on Yue Zhong's body, the entire Temple began to tremble, as it started to fall apart.

At the areas where the Temple started to disintegrate, spatial tears appear in those places, looking extremely threatening.

One particular Holy Son stood at the edge of the Temple, and when the Temple started falling apart, he was caught in the sudden spatial tear. He only had time to scream out, "Save me!! Save me!!"

Qian Chang Qing swept a glance at the still Yue Zhong, before shouting out, "Run!!"

At that instant, he threw down everything and took the opportunity of the momentarily calm to flee outside.

The rest of the Holy Sons and Daughters also fought to follow

after.

Yue Zhong was still immobile, standing near the altar.

Within the human faction, only Annie rushed up to Yue Zhong, grabbing him while he was still exuding a Type 9 aura.

Annie's right hand had just touched the gold radiance, when many golden lights suddenly shot out and sliced her hands, causing blood to flow.

She bore the pain, as she roared out, "Yue Zhong!!! Run!!! The place is going to collapse!!"

However, no matter how she screamed and shouted, Yue Zhong was immobile, as though he was already dead.

"Damn it, Heaven Silk Domain!!"

She had a resolute look as she waved her hands, as countless silk shot out and formed a domain, wrapping around them. With a wave of her hands, the Heaven Silk Domain shrunk and formed 10 main beams, wrapping around Yue Zhong.

As the silk touched the Gold Battle Armor, they were pierced by the golden beams, constantly being worn down. However, with the support of the domain, the silk continued to repair while securing Yue Zhong's figure.

The moment she secured Yue Zhong with the Heaven Silk Domain, she tapped her foot and shot outside.

However, right at that moment, the path ahead collapsed, as a huge spatial tear appeared, swallowing both Annie and Yue Zhong.

As they were being swallowed up by the spatial tear, Annie's face turned pale, and her heart was filled with despair, "Oh no!!"

Even a Type 9 powerhouse with spatial laws would not dare to spend too long in a spatial tear.

Without any protection, a half-step Type 9 powerhouse would be torn apart in an instant, wiped out from this world. Only a person

with good enough fortune would be able to pass through the spatial tear and reappear somewhere else.

As Annie was despairing, Yue Zhong, who had been immobile and his eyes shut suddenly opened his eyes, his hand reaching out to pull Annie into the area of defense provided by the Gold Battle Armor, and the both of them fell deeper into the abyss, disappearing within the chaotic space.

Falling into space, Yue Zhong was still engaged in battle with the soul strand of Wade within his consciousness. Both parties continued to slaughter each other, or rather, Yue Zhong was being obliterated over and over again.

Wade's soul strand was incredibly powerful, even after fighting within Yue Zhong's consciousness for so many days, his energy had only been depleted by a mere fraction, and yet, Yue Zhong's avatar had already crumbled tens of thousands of times.

In the process, Yue Zhong's will became weaker, but at the same time, it was being ground and tempered.

Wade stared at the reformed avatar of Yue Zhong, each time his face pale, as he frowned and barked, "Give up, human. You can never best me!! Before I finish expending my energy, your will would have collapsed. No one would be able to help you resurrect then!"

Yue Zhong then retorted, "No!! I might not be able to defeat you now, but it doesn't mean I don't have a way to deal with you! Seal!!"

Immediately, the Radiant Battleship hidden within the void glowed, and the Type 9 Mutant Beast nuclei within began to ignite, allowing the numerous cannons to light up and blast out a hole in the chaotic space, before shooting Yue Zhong and sending his spiraling body out of the space.

At the same time, a powerful sealing power was shot out of the

Radiant Battleship, entering Yue Zhong's consciousness, forming a cage that sealed Wade's soul strand within.

Chapter 969: Sealing Wade!

True God Wade began roaring madly within the cage, blasting out his numerous techniques, causing the cage to tremble continuously, "Damn it!! Break!!"

The soul strand of a True God expert was incredibly powerful, however, the Radiant Battleship was a treasure capable of tackling God, and even if Yue Zhong could not exhibit the fullest potential of the battleship, utilizing a Type 9 Mutant Beast nuclei was able to form a seal to trap Wade's soul strand.

The Radiant Battleship was Yue Zhong's strongest trump card, as long as he had enough Type 9 Mutant Beast nuclei, he could display a terrifying might. This was why he dared to enter the temple in the first place.

As True God Wade continued to roar, he was forced to a corner within Yue Zhong's consciousness.

Once that was done, he heaved a sigh of relief. The terror of a True God expert was beyond his imagination, and he had originally assumed that since he could surpass a Type 9 powerhouse's will, he would be able to deal with a soul strand from a True God. However, he had to rely on the Radiant Battleship in the end to seal Wade.

"These True Gods powerhouses are truly frightening, even a soul strand is so hard to deal with. If I have to deal with them next time, I had better be prepared. However, this time, I've gained some insights on a soul strand, allowing my own willpower and soul to be refined and tempered further. It would prove beneficial in my breakthrough next time."

After going through the countless battles against a True God expert within his mind, although he had been defeated each time, in the process, he had gained some insights to the usage of a soul strand and his will. It would bring about benefits in the future.

Yue Zhong could obtain such comprehension mainly because he had taken on the lingering will before, and his spirit and willpower had been tempered before. The will was only accessible when one reached the Type 9 realm. Without any tempering, Yue Zhong would only be able to use the Radiant Battleship to seal the True God Wade, and not obtain any understandings.

Suddenly, Yue Zhong felt like his head cooled with water. He mustered his strength to open his eyes, discovering that he had appeared within a cave. Annie was currently using a white towel that was soaked to help him wipe his forehead, her eyes full of concern.

While he was unconscious and protected by the Gold Battle Armor, Annie had been unable to pry his mouth open to feed him any medicine, thus, she could only rely on such an old-fashioned method to care for him.

The moment she saw him open his eyes, she took her hand away quietly, sitting beside him with a cool expression, not saying of concern. From young, she had been aloof, even when she cared for someone, she did not know how to express herself.

Yue Zhong twisted his body, and he suddenly realized he could not control his body, even moving a single finger was extremely difficult.

"Damn it, I can't move!! Shit!!" He frowned, apparently, while his willpower and soul had been tempered, it had suffered greatly. Thus, he was currently extremely weak, and could not coordinate with his physical body.

Had he not utilized the Radiant Battleship at the critical moment, it was likely that his soul would have been ground away by Wade, and his body possessed by him.

Yue Zhong asked, "Where is this place?"

Annie replied, "I'm not too sure myself. It should be another

world. There isn't a trace of the strong energy from the Great God World here."

Yue Zhong asked without batting an eyelid, "Other than the Great God World, are there other worlds?"

Annie continued, "Yes, other than the Great God World, there are 800 other worlds. Our Great God World is at the apex, a world where True God warriors lived in ancient times. Although those True Gods had disappeared for some unknown reason, our Great God World still remains as the strongest in the universe, till this date. I don't know much about the other worlds, however, one thing's for sure, the human race is constantly being oppressed everywhere else."

Yue Zhong spoke softly, "These few days, I might be unable to move. I'll have to trouble you."

Although Yue Zhong had suffered greatly from the constant destruction and resurrection of his avatar, he had gained insights into the willpower of a True God. Furthermore, with his powerful God-Devil Physique, as long as he rested, he would recover fully.

"En!"

Suddenly, Annie felt her heart race as she stood up, looking out with a sharp gaze, as she muttered coldly, "There are 3 people, from their aura, it seems they're just ordinary folk at the Type 2 realm."

Yue Zhong sighed, "No, it's alright. Let them come over."

If it were an enemy, Yue Zhong would not hesitate to kill without mercy. However, if it was not an enemy, then he would not go on a rampage as well.

Annie's countenance flashed with a look of bewilderment, as she sat quietly beside Yue Zhong.

"Plucking the Blacksnow Grass here is the best!"

"If we can hand in this amount, our lives would be better!"

"..."

Following some sounds of discussion, 3 young girls wearing clothes made out of leaves came across this cave.

The moment they entered the cave, the 3 of them immediately saw Yue Zhong and Annie and were taken aback.

The one in lead, whose skin was tanned and barefoot, her eyes gleaming with an intelligent light, asked curiously, "Big sister, who are you guys?"

Annie took a look at Yue Zhong, not knowing what to say, she had not been one to tell fibs.

Yue Zhong felt helpless, as he mustered his energy to reply, "I'm Yue Zhong, she's Annie. We're world travelers, and after coming to this world, there was some accident, thus I can only stay here."

The lead girl, who had blue hair, chuckled, "I'm Lan Lan. This is Qing Qing, and the one over there is San Ya. You're injured, why not come to our village to recuperate? My father is a renowned doctor, he can definitely treat you.

"Ok!" Yue Zhong chuckled, he did not think that a small village could produce a doctor capable of helping him. However, he did not reject the kind-hearted actions of others.

Annie then reached out to carry Yue Zhong as though he was a princess as she walked out.

Yue Zhong felt a little helpless and embarrassed in her arms. However, he quickly closed his eyes and took in her scent at such close proximity. At the same time, he could feel the soft yet tender peaks of hers.

"Hehe, they're so close!"

"Sister Annie is so beautiful if only I can grow up to be like her."

"Sister Annie is so pretty, but her man is slightly lacking. Yue

Zhong is not fit or strong, nor handsome, why would Sister Annie be with him?"

"..."

The 3 lasses had never seen many outsiders before, thus they just let their guards down, and continued to talk about them in full sight and hearing.

Annie was a Holy Daughter from the Holy Heavens after all. Although she did not speak well, her looks were exceptional, and her charms apparent. As for Yue Zhong, he was heavily injured and looked weak, plus, his ordinary looks really did put him at a disparity when compared with her.

Hearing their words, even the cool expression of Annie broke a little, revealing a beautiful, amused look.

The place where the 3 of them stayed was a small village at the bottom of a valley, where about 50 households lived.

In this village, there had never been a woman as pretty as Annie before, thus, as she carried Yue Zhong in, there was a bustling of discussion as many people gathered round to gawk.

Even so, they were mindful enough not to get too close, just discussing among themselves. Many men stared at Yue Zhong, their gazes filled with envy, wishing that it was them instead,

Lan Lan rushed into a wooden hut, speaking to a middle-aged man whose upper torso was naked, and his pants made of fox fur, saying, "Father, I'm back, there's a man who's injured! Come and take a look!"

The middle-aged man, whose hair was bright blue just like Lan Lan, turned around and was momentarily stunned. Evidently, he was also enraptured by Annie, however, he quickly adjusted his gaze towards Yue Zhong, and smiled while pointing to the bed, "I'm called Yi Da, the doctor of this village. Friend, are you injured? Please lay down here and let me take a look."

Annie quickly placed Yue Zhong down, before standing by his side quietly.

Yi Da walked up to him, reaching out to measure his pulse like a Chinese doctor utilizing traditional Chinese Medicine. He then pressed a little on Yue Zhong's bones, before frowning, "Yue Zhong, from your physique, you seem extremely healthy and full of vitality, without any signs of problems. It seems like your injury is spirit-related?"

Yue Zhong replied, "That's right, I came across a strange beast with 3 eyes, and when the eye of the forehead shone on me, I became like this."

Chapter 970: Annie's Charms!

Yi Da had an apologetic expression, "Medicine for spirit-related injuries are incredibly precious, and I don't have any here. It might only be available in the Jiao Beast City. However, us humans cannot enter there. I'm truly sorry, there's nothing I can do for you."

Yue Zhong's perception was strong, he could sense when Yi Da talked about the Jiao Beast City, Lan Lan's body went taut for a second, and her eyes flashed with fear.

He did not pursue the matter, instead, he closed his eyes and began focusing on the Star Luo technique he had learned, and fell asleep.

The Star Luo Truths had been written by a Type 9 powerhouse, and one of the chapters was about training and cultivating the soul. However, it was not useful to powerhouses below the peak-Type 8 realm. Other than that, only a few special cases could actually cultivate it. To Yue Zhong, it was the thing he needed right now.

The atmosphere of the village was relaxing, and the villagers were warm and nice, accepting Yue Zhong and Annie.

The both of them thus stayed in the village.

As Type 8 powerhouses, their physiques were incredible, even if they did not eat or drink for 30 years, they could survive on absorbing the atmospheric energy. However, their bodies would still be weak.

In order to make herself useful, Annie joined the hunting team, employing a few skills and easily convinced the rest of the hunters, becoming their leader.

With her terrifying strength, the Mutant Beasts and wild beasts within the mountains all perished under her lead. The hunting

party managed to hunt a staggering amount of meat with zero casualties ever since, bringing in an abundant harvest. Annie had thus become a goddess in many of the villagers' eyes.

On this day, both Yue Zhong and Annie were in a wooden hut, as Yue Zhong laid quietly on the bed, Annie hoisted him up, and began to feed him a bowl of meat soup tenderly. She would blow gently on the spoon before feeding it to Yue Zhong.

Watching him swallow the soup, there was a gentle look in Annie's eyes. These few days, she had already transformed from a lady who did not know how to serve others, into the epitome of a housewife taking care of her sick husband.

It was not a tough thing, as long as one was willing, most could pick it up. Annie was talented and resolute, furthermore, her state of mind was usually calm and steady, thus, these small things did not bog her down.

Lan Lan came bouncing over, looking at Annie, her eyes radiating with idolization as she reached out, "Sister Annie, let me help you!! You should go take a rest, you're just back from hunting, it's been tough on you."

Annie's performance had totally won over all the young men and women of the village. Not only was she adept at hunting, but she also picked things up first, and excelled in them. She cared for Yue Zhong meticulously, not leaving his side unless she had to carry out tasks. The entire village was jealous of this Yue Zhong who was bedridden.

Currently, outside the wooden heart, there were piles and piles of meat, and in the corner of the garden, there were all sorts of fur, leather, and bones from the hunting.

Annie frowned, and patted Lan Lan's hands away, "No, I'll do it myself."

After these few days of interaction, Lan Lan knew that Annie was

cold externally but warm inside, she was not angry, just staring at Yue Zhong in envy, "Yue Zhong ah Yue Zhong, I wonder how your ancestors are blessing you, to be able to find such a good woman. Your luck is truly too wonderful, I envy you so much."

Yue Zhong laid on the bed and chuckled when he heard those slightly innocent words, but did not say much.

At this time, 3 youths wearing tiger hides and carrying bows on their backs came into the room, their muscled bodies rippling.

The leader was a handsome youth with long hair, his eyes gazing at Annie with deep infatuation as he kneeled on one knee, declaring, "Sister Annie, I like you! No! I love you!! I love you more than my life!! Please be my woman, I will bring you happiness."

Annie looked at the kneeling youth and frowned, declaring indifferently, "I don't like you. Go out!"

The youth showed a stunned look, as he got up and retreated bitterly.

Another of the youths, Ada, came forward and kneeled, looking at Annie, his eyes also filled with love and passion, "Sister Annie, I like you, marry me. For you, I can give up everything else. As long as you marry me, I will help you look after Yue Zhong till the day he dies."

Lan Lan saw Ada professing his love and was taken aback. He was the top youth highly sought after by most girls in the village and was proud by nature. To think that he would actually kneel because of Annie, and was even willing to help Annie look after Yue Zhong.

Annie's next sentence knocked him out, "I don't like you. Go out!"

Ada chuckled bitterly and stood up solemnly. He asked loudly with unwillingness in his heart, "Why? Sister Annie, how am I not comparable to this fellow here? Why won't you choose me, instead, you would rather spend your life with this crippled trash?"

If you were to follow me, I will give you happiness!"

Annie frowned and her finger flicked out, causing an energy bolt to slam into Ada's chest, sending him flying out a few meters as he sprawled to the ground, "He's not a crippled trash! The 3 of you, get out of my sight!"

Seeing that she was finally pissed, there was a look of fear in their eyes, as they gritted their teeth and headed out. They did not dare antagonize her further and could sense a terrifying might beneath her fury.

Lan Lan came up to Annie carefully and tried to speak on their behalf, "Sister Annie, don't be angry, they're just in love with you. They did not mean any harm."

"En!" She replied casually, as she continued feeding Yue Zhong while blowing on the soup gently, as though nothing was more important than this.

Seeing him take in the soup, the corners of her mouth lifted in a smile, revealing a satisfied expression, as though she was the most fortunate and blissful woman in the world.

Lan Lan stared in bewilderment, not knowing what in the world was going on, "What's so good about this guy? How is Sister Annie so enamored with him, unbelievable!"

At this moment, San Ya ran in with an ashen face, her voice low and urgent, "Lan Lan, not good, the nobles of the Jiao Beast City are here!!"

"What?! They're here?!" Lan Lan's face turned pale, as her body trembled. She turned to Annie and urged, "Sister Annie, quick, hide! The nobles of the Jiao Beast City are here, those people come here to take our food and women. With your looks, they will not let you off."

Annie placed the spoon down, her perception sweeping out, as she asked Yue Zhong coldly, "23 of them, 21 Type 3, 1 Type 4, 1

Type 2. Take them out?"

Yue Zhong sighed, and shook his head, "Take me out for a look!"

Annie reached out to carry him like a princess once more.

Yue Zhong chuckled helplessly, "Can you switch up the way you carry me?"

Annie grinned, a crafty smile on her face, "Nope, I like this very much!"

Seeing that smile, Yue Zhong could not help but be stunned, captivated by her radiant smile.

With Yue Zhong's current willpower, even the charm techniques of a Type 9 powerhouse was no use to him. Only Annie, without any tricks, her smile full of her feelings, was enough to send Yue Zhong into a daze. His willpower was strong against other spirit techniques, but not a person's heart.

Being stared at by Yue Zhong, Annie was flushed slightly as well. She did not dare to look at him and quickly changed to a piggyback style as she stepped out.

At the entrance of the village, there were a few soldiers in black armor, their figures exuding a cold killing intent, guarding a middle-aged man dressed lavishly while riding a white horse, and another young man dressed in black robes riding a black horse.

The households in the village poured out, bringing out their best food, placing them at the side, while kneeling. Their faces were pale and their bodies trembling.

The middle-aged man on the white horse shot the villagers a look and wrinkled his nose, waving his hands, "Damn it. This rundown place is truly too pathetic. There's nothing good here! Forget it, you, go grab 20 kids, we need to complete Sir Zuo Yi's orders."

One soldier rushed out, and quickly rounded up the kids of the village, throwing them into cages.

The villagers began to bawl and sob.

The village head trembled, his face full of fear as he stepped up and asked, "Esteemed Lord Ives, we had just given the blood sacrifice 3 months ago? Isn't the next time not for another 5 years? Why have you come to take our kids this time?"

Ives shot him a glare, as he roared out savagely, "Lowly commoner, do I need you to teach me how to do my job?! Kneel, otherwise, I'll chop you up!!"

Chapter 971: 180° Change in Attitude!

The expression of the village head turned incredibly pale, as he kneeled on the floor hurriedly and kowtowed.

Supported by Annie, Yue Zhong walked out from the wooden hut and immediately saw a number of children aged 5 to 10 being rounded up and thrown into a cage, crying and wailing. The villagers who lost their kids were also crying uncontrollably, kneeling on the floor, not daring to move.

Even the 3 youths who had barged into Yue Zhong's hut earlier were on the ground, their bodies trembling and their faces ashen.

Seeing this, Yue Zhong frowned, and a hint of killing intent erupted. Those kids were obviously intended to be used for demonic practices. Otherwise, there would be no need to cage them.

Ives saw Annie, and his eyes immediately lit up with lust and greed, ordering loudly, "What a beautiful chick!! To think that there would such a high-quality good here! Men, go catch her for me!!"

Hearing his orders, 6 soldiers quickly charged towards Annie.

Annie hoisted Yue Zhong with one hand, pulling out a bat with the other, and sent 6 shadows slamming into the bodies of the 6 soldiers.

In that instant, the 6 Type 3 soldiers were sent flying back, as they doubled over on the floor and trembling with incredible agony.

Under Yue Zhong's instructions, she had already shown mercy, otherwise, with her Type 8 strength, just blowing at them would cause them to disintegrate.

Ives saw how strong she was, and was not upset, instead, looking extremely excited, as he asked, "Great!! What an incredible

specimen! I like her!! Baru, who is she?!"

Village Head Baru trembled as he replied, "Sir Ives, she's called Annie, and she is a wandering hunter that had just joined us not long ago."

Ives had an evil look in his eyes as he laughed savagely, threatening, "Annie, kneel down and submit to me. I can make the decision and spare this village from the blood sacrifice. Otherwise, I will kill all these kids, and raze the entire village to the ground. If you don't want to be the cause of their slaughter, surrender now! Become my woman. You only have 30 seconds to consider. By the end, if you cannot answer, I will kill everyone here."

When he waved his hands, his personal guards had already raised their weapons at the children within the cage.

Ives then swept the villagers a gaze, and laughed cruelly, "You people, if you want to leave, go beg her to save you."

"Annie, please, surrender! My son is in their hands!! Please!! Surrender to Ives, he will provide for you!"

"Annie, please, on account that we had sheltered you these few days, please save us."

"..."

The villagers began to kneel, crawling towards Annie as they begged pitifully.

Even the village head Baru came up to Annie, kowtowing profusely, as blood appeared, "Miss Annie, I'm begging you!!! On behalf of our village, please, please save us!! Please!!"

Ives was extremely cunning and knew how to pit others against one another. If Annie did not submit, he would really commit genocide. That was why Baru and the rest could only plead and beg for Annie to sacrifice herself.

Yue Zhong frowned when he saw the sight, and he spoke

indifferently, "Kill all of them, leave only 6. Separate that Marquis and the black-robed guy beside him."

"Got it!" Annie replied and with a wave of her hands, a number of transparent silk shot out, instantly slaughtering all of Ives' men.

In an instant, most of the soldiers were sliced up into fine pieces, fresh blood splattering everywhere. It was a gruesome sight.

Before Ives could even express his shock, he, the black-robed man beside him, as well as 4 others were all tied up by the silk and dragged before Yue Zhong.

"What?! Dead!?!"

"What did she do?!"

"She actually slaughtered all the soldiers and even captured Ives!!"

"That was too terrifying!!"

"..."

Seeing how Annie actually slaughtered the soldiers under Ives, the villagers were all full of shock.

Ives was a noble of the Jiao Beast City and had a huge background. If he were to be injured slightly, the entire village would be wiped out by the forces sent by the city.

Compared to Jiao Beast City, this village was nothing much. In these years, many other villages had been wiped out due to the slightest offense of any noble within the city.

The moment they realized the guards of a member of nobility had died in their village, Baru and the rest felt an intense sense of fear and helplessness.

At that instant, the black robes fluttered, revealing a strange monster with the head of a Wurm, his body covered entirely in grey scales, while wearing a casual outfit over his human-like body.

This Wyrms-head spoke in a growl, "Release me, you damn human scum. Do you know who I am? I'm a member of the Grey Wyrms, and if you lowly humans dare touch a single hair of mine, the entire Grey Wyrms Clan would not let you off!! You guys have offended me, I will definitely tear you limb from limb and cook you alive!"

Ives was also struggling, as he roared out, "This is Sir Sanford, one of the nobles of the Grey Wyrms Clan among the Holy Race! If you guys dare hurt him, the entire village would suffer the wrath of the Holy Race! Your plight would be worse than death!! Release us this instant, and offer your sacrifices!! There is still a chance to appease Sir Sanford!"

"What?! Holy Race!?!"

"He is actually from the Holy Race?"

"Shit, it's over, we actually offended a noble from the Holy Race!"

"..."

The moment they heard the term Holy Race, every one's countenance changed, and they were filled with despair.

Baru began kowtowing once more, pleading profusely, "Annie, please, release Sir Sanford, he's from the Holy Race. If we were to hurt him, even after we die, we will not be let off lightly. The Holy Race would not let us off, and they would round us all up and eat us alive."

"Release him!"

"Annie, release him!"

"..."

The villagers clamored to persuade her. They were extremely afraid of the Holy Race, as it would mean the demise of their entire village.

Facing the begging of the villages, Annie did not do anything,

instead, she turned to Yue Zhong and asked, "What do we do? Kill them?"

Her personality was like that, cool and unfeeling. Other than those she cared about, she would not frown even if more died in front of her.

In fact, most of the Holy Sons and Daughters of the Holy Heavens were like that. Only such characters could trudge through the countless challenges and rise to become an overlord.

If she had to change her mind because of unrelated people, or threats, Annie would have died umpteen times over.

Hearing those cold words, the entire village felt a chill, their eyes turning towards Yue Zhong. This seemingly crippled man was the one who decided their fate.

Baru pleaded, "Yue Zhong, please, release the 2 sirs. I'm begging you!!"

Sanford continued to struggle wildly, as he threatened viciously, "Release me, and give me 10 children to feed on! I will spare you guys this once. Otherwise, if you lowly humans dare to hurt me, I will get the Holy Army to round you all up and cook you guys to eat!"

Cries and screams began to ring out, and the entire field turned extremely chaotic. The moment they heard that Sanford wanted to eat 10 children, many of the villagers trembled, crying out, not knowing what to do.

Yue Zhong frowned and ordered, "Knock them out!"

Annie shot out a finger, and she manipulated the atmospheric energy to strike the heads of Ives and his men, knocking them out.

With a wave of Yue Zhong's hands, a number of Puppet Runes entered the brains of Ives and his men.

Yue Zhong then ordered, "Release their bindings!"

Annie waved her hands, and the silk strands tying up the bunch disappeared without a trace.

Sanford woke up immediately, crawling in front of Yue Zhong and spoke, "Your lowly servant Sanford greets Master. I had offended Master previously, and I seek Master's mercy and grace!"

Ives also woke up just then, crawling in front of Yue Zhong as though he was a loyal dog, "Your shameful servant Ives greets Master. I deserve death for my earlier offenses, and seek Master's instructions on how this servant can atone."

Chapter 972: Jiao Beast City!

When the villagers saw this scene, they were all shocked beyond words. They had never expected the arrogant Ives who had just been throwing his weight around and threatening them together with Sanford, to actually crawl in front of Yue Zhong, seeking forgiveness. It was simply unbelievable.

"How the hell? Who in the world is he?! He could actually get 2 nobles to plead for forgiveness!!"

The strongest youth of the village, Ada, saw the 2 kneeling man, and his eyes were filled with disbelief and shock. He was just a small fry in front of Ives and Sanford, and could only kneel on the ground, without even the courage to look at them. However, the 2 of them were actually kneeling in front of Yue Zhong who he had looked upon with disdain. The gap was simply too huge. The peace and bliss that he had promised Annie was like a joke.

The youth looked at Yue Zhong, his fist clenched while his expression pale, thinking with some unwillingness, "Sister Annie's eye for men is truly exceptional. I can't compare to Yue Zhong."

Lan Lan saw the scene from the room as well, and her heart was also filled with shock, "Those are 2 nobles! They're actually kneeling in front of him to be his slave. He has some capabilities, no wonder Sister Annie is so enamored with him. I can't discern as well as Sister Annie. This Yue Zhong is truly some character!"

Inside this village, all those who had thought Yue Zhong was simply a toad trying to eat swan meat, or the pile of dung beneath the rose, were forced to rethink. Now, they suddenly felt it appropriate for Annie to like Yue Zhong.

The numerous young ladies were also eyeing Yue Zhong with strange gazes.

In this world, these humans within the village lived no different

from animals. If the nobles wanted to kill them, there was nothing they could do.

As long as Ives opened his mouth, none of the women could reject him. Yet, this Yue Zhong was seemingly even more powerful than Ives, the hearts of the numerous women were obviously stirred. If it was not for Annie still standing beside Yue Zhong, many of them would have run over to profess their love.

Ives then asked Yue Zhong respectfully, "Master, would you like to go to the Jiao Beasy City? This slave has some businesses and properties there. The environment is a whole lot better than here."

Yue Zhong asked, "Did you bring money?"

Ives pulled out a bag of gold and handed it over, "This slave has a 100 gold coins!"

Yue Zhong chuckled, tossing the bag to Lan Lan, "This is for you. Thanks for taking care of us these few days."

After a few days of cultivation, although Yue Zhong was not yet at his peak, he could already control some parts of his body.

The villagers stared at the bag with jealousy. They knew that with this gold, Lan Lan's family would become the wealthiest in the village.

When Lan Lan received the bag, she was filled with joy, at the same time, there was a sense of loss and sadness. She knew that Yue Zhong and Annie were about to leave. This small village could not contain these 2.

"Let's go!"

With an order, Ives and the rest turned around, leading them out of the village.

The moment Yue Zhong and Annie got on a horse, Yue Zhong asked, "Why did you guys capture the kids in the village?"

Ives explained, "Master, the Mayor of Jiao Beast City, Marquis

Valentin, wants to organize a banquet, and is lacking some blood food. With the orders from the higher-ups, this slave has no choice but to come out to get more for Marquis Valentin."

Yue Zhong frowned, and felt a sense of unease, continuing his line of questioning, "Blood food? What's blood food?"

Ives then proceeded to say what he knew.

The world, or rather the planet they were on, was called Great Dragon Planet, and the rulers were the great Holy Race. They were made up of creatures like Sanford, the Grey Wyrms, the Lightning Wyrms, and many other species. Humans were considered the lower class on this planet.

Each and every one of the Holy Race was esteemed and placed above the lower class. At the same time, there were tiers to their classes, namely the Nobles, Citizens, Commoners, and Slaves.

Ives was one of the nobles of the human race. Most of the humans within the Jiao Beast City were ordinary Citizens, whereas Commoners lived in the mountainsides and countries, like Lan Lan and the rest. Slaves were the lowest caste.

In this cruel world, the Holy Race was at the top, controlling the fate of the world. Humans were their food, and could be killed or slaughtered any time they liked. Even someone like Ives could be killed if he did not have a strong backing.

As for the human nobles, they were usually partners and assistants to the Holy Race, helping them manage affairs, hunt, and suppress their own kind, catching Commoners as Blood Food for the Holy Race.

Blood Food referred to the food of these Holy Race members. It was like the Second World, where the Saint Race treated the humans as food, and in fact, humans formed a huge part of their diets.

Of course, likewise in this world, there were many human heroes

who sought to retaliate. However, in these thousands of years, all human resistance would be quickly put down before they could grow large enough. Furthermore, there was a separation in thinking of the humans. The nobles sought to ally themselves with the Holy Race, suppressing and hunting their fellow humans. The Holy Race might be cruel and savage, but there was a limit to their viciousness, as long as they had enough Blood Food, they would not consume wantonly. At the same time, there was still law and order. Hence, fewer humans stood out to resist the Holy Race, instead, becoming a sort of livestock for them.

The Holy Race were the rules on this planet, forming the Great Dragon Kingdom, with over 58,000 cities.

There were 48 kingdoms, each of them overseeing a thousand cities, while the main empire was in control of 10,000.

Each city would harbor a large number of humans and Holy Race members, while on the outskirts were numerous Commoners.

The Great Dragon Empire had their own experts as well, with each King being a Type 8 expert. The Emperor was rumored to be a Type 9 powerhouse. Each city was managed by a Type 7 mayor, and their own subordinates were also powerful warriors.

Under that sort of suppression, although there were easily 20 times humans to the Holy Race, they could only continue to serve.

The Jiao Beast City was a large city, prosperous and bustling. All around the city, the walls were at least 50m-high and there was a moat of about 40m wide surrounding the city. Only the 4 main gates in the North, South, East, and West directions allowed in and outflow.

This huge city wall and moat were enough to keep people in and out of the city.

The difference between Great Dragon Planet and Earth was that the gravity here was at least 10 times stronger, even a Type 3

powerhouse could only leap about 5m high. In order to jump into the city, one had to be at least at the Type 5 realm.

Due to the strength of the Holy Race, other than a few humans who submitted and acted as the fangs and claws of the Holy Race, the rest of the human race was largely below the Type 5 realm. Even the weakest Type 4 Holy Race member could defeat the strongest human.

On the city wall, there were 1,000 human soldiers and 100 Green Wyrms patrolling.

The equipment of the 2 races were extremely clear. The humans only wore ordinary cotton armor, and wielded wooden spears, while the experts of the Green Wyrms held large cannons, and were covered with Enhanced Armors powered by Mutant Beasts. They even each had an alloy blade at their waist. The vast difference between the 2 sides were at least a hundred years' worth of technology.

One single Green Wyrms expert in the Enhanced Armor could fight a Type 5 powerhouse, and wipe out a hundred human soldiers easily.

There were many laser cannons, machine guns, ray guns, and other advanced weaponry atop the wall. However, they were all controlled by the Green Wyrms experts.

The Holy Race was guarded even against the humans serving them, only allowing their own people the best of equipment to use. Humans could only utilize melee weapons, and like this, the humans were even more at a disadvantage and could not rise against the Holy Race by using those weapons.

As Yue Zhong and his group came to the South Gate, they saw a cart with a cage loaded on top, within it, numerous kids were locked.

The children were crying out uncontrollably, and yet, the

humans in front of the carriage were smiling and discussing their haul.

Yue Zhong looked at those humans serving the Holy Race willingly and felt an unbridled fury arose, as his killing intent burst forth, "Damn bastards, they're actually capturing their own kind for the pleasure of the Holy Race. Shameless!! They deserve to die!!"

Annie frowned, her eyes also filled with killing intent, "Shall we act?"

Chapter 973: Capturing the Mayor Manor!

Annie had a cold personality, to the point of being unfeeling sometimes. However, seeing these humans capturing the children of their fellow humans to present them as food for the Holy Race, this sort of behavior had really crossed her line as well, causing her to emit a killing intent.

Yue Zhong suppressed his own anger and spoke solemnly, "No need, head to the mayor's manor directly!"

Under his orders, the group of people quickly headed towards the gate.

Outside the gate, there were 16 human soldiers maintaining order. The moment they caught sight of the Grey Wurm noble among Yue Zhong's group, their expressions changed and they quickly darted to the sides, not daring to block their way.

The rest of the humans entering also quickly stepped aside, not daring to get in their way.

Although the humans in the city were of a higher caste than those Commoners outside, as well as slaves, in front of the Holy Race, they were still ants and could be beaten to death for no reason at all.

The structure and layout of the Jiao Beast City were modern, with high-rise buildings touching the skies, made out of unknown metal alloys. There were roads along the ground and even in the air, as vehicles traveled about, with anti-gravity capabilities.

Most of these occupants were the Grey Wyrms or Green Wyrms. No human could own such transportation means.

On the ground, other than the main roads, there were markings for carriages and pathways for walking as well. Those were mainly for the humans to use. The nobles of the human race rode horses, while the Citizens walked on the pathways.

Along those roads, there were a few Holy Races with savage expressions walking about as well. The moment they appeared, the nobles would quickly get off their horses while the citizens had to kneel on the ground while trembling from fear.

Inside the city, most of the nobles had some form of backing, thus, the Holy Race would not be too unbridled. However, against the citizens, if they were hungry, they could just pluck their heads off and eat them. Of course, it would be an offense to slaughter a citizen in public, but it was a fine at most, and there was little done to the Holy Race member.

On the path, from time to time, one could see some Holy Race members just devouring humans in broad daylight. Hence, as long as humans caught sight of them, they would evade as far as they could. If they could not, they would just kneel and tremble, praying that the Holy Race members had eaten their fill and not devour them.

Along the way, with Sanford, a true Holy Race member, leading the way, most humans would quickly get out of Yue Zhong's path, if they could not get away in time, they would get down onto the ground and tremble.

He ignored them, heading straight for the direction of the mayor's manor. Soon, he came to a huge castle that was about a thousand hectares.

"Halt, this is the mayor's manor! Get down, we're conducting a search!"

The moment they stepped into the gates, 4 Green Wyrms rushed out, barking at the party.

Yue Zhong spoke indifferently, "Get rid of them, knock them out!"

With a wave of Annie's hands, a number of silk strands directly pierced through their head, sending a spirit jolt, and knocked out

the 4 Green Wyrms warriors.

Yue Zhong waved his hands, sending a number of Puppet Runes into their heads.

The moment the runes branded onto the souls, those Green Wyrms soldiers had already become his puppets.

The group continued on towards the inner part of the manor.

The defenses were tight inside the manor, with numerous scanners and surveillance cameras. On top of that, there were sentries everywhere, like it was a heavily guarded castle. If anyone wanted to barge into this place, they would have to pay a terrible price.

Except for Yue Zhong, the moment he entered, the Super A.I. Bai Yi had already infiltrated the systems within the manor easily, handing control over to Yue Zhong.

Unless it was an empire where there was a Super A.I. defending the fort like in the Mech Kingdom, otherwise, most systems could not even put any resistance when Bai Yi came into play.

Through Bai Yi, Yue Zhong easily gained control over the surveillance within the manor, while Annie's silk seemed to have a life of its own, easily traveling through the manor, and knocking out those Holy Races warriors who were hiding in the dark.

In front of a Type 8 powerhouse like her, whose perception was so strong, those Holy Race warriors were as weak as ants, and no one could defend themselves.

With a thought, the Type 7 Mech that could change shapes appeared and covered his body, forming a silver-gold frame. He then controlled it with his will to move.

Yue Zhong stored many Mechs within his storage ring, even without Annie, he was able to make use of them to move.

When Annie saw that, there was a slight sense of loss in her eyes.

The manor was constructed beautifully, and with a complicated design. If an ordinary person were to come in, it was likely they would be lost.

However, since Bai Yi had control over the mainframe of the building, the structure was basically in her hands. She guided Yue Zhong smoothly towards the palace where the mayor Marquis Valentin was staying in.

The moment Yue Zhong entered Valentin's residence, he immediately saw a number of children of age 5 to 12, every one of them naked and trapped in cages, placed atop a long dining table. Seated at the tables, were a number of 3m-tall Holy Race members with Wyrms-heads, and vicious gazes.

The children within the cages were wailing and sobbing, their eyes filled with despair.

Valentin himself sat at the head seat, in front of him, there was a large basin, filled with cream, and 2 silver-haired girls with lithe bodies. Their eyes were filled with despair.

Seeing Yue Zhong appear suddenly, Valentin was taken aback, before his gaze turned cold and he laughed savagely, "Capture that human alive. I want to question him, just how a lowly human can actually enter our palace? Those stupid human guards must have a spy within them. I will sniff him out and roast him alive."

Hearing Marquis Valentin's order, 2 Type 6 Green Wyrms soldiers exploded forth, charging towards Yue Zhong with a burst of light.

Valentin watched them act, his eyes filled with a vicious glint. Those 2 Type 6 Green Wyrms warriors had torn numerous humans apart and were the cruelest of his subordinates.

Yue Zhong's gaze was cold as he barked out icily, "Damn beasts. Today will be your death day! I will let you guys know that humans are not your food!"

Annie waved her hands, and numerous silk shot out to restrain

the 2 Green Wyrms, and in a flash, they were sliced up by the silk, blood and body parts splattering on the floor.

Seeing how Annie took care of those 2 easily, the rest of the Holy Race experts were filled with trepidation as they stared at Annie.

"Type 7?! No!!! You're a Type 8 powerhouse!! There's actually someone like you on Great Dragon Planet!! I must definitely report this to the Emperor!! All of you charge forth and kill these 2 with all your might."

Valentin saw how Annie easily sliced the 2 Green Wyrms apart, and his face fell. He gave this order, before the dragon wings on his back unfolded and flapped powerfully, soaring into the sky.

Under Valentin's orders, the Holy Race soldiers on either side of the table stood up, prepared to fight Annie to the death.

Every single one of these Green Wyrms was ferocious and loved to battle. As long as there was an order, they would go all the way, even if they were not a match for their opponent, they would never retreat.

As the experts of from the Green Wyrms moved, the silk strands would pierce through their heads, controlling their bodies.

Valentin had just flown out when the silk strands already burst forth and wrapped around him. At the same time, one of the silk shot towards the back of Valentin's head.

As everything happened at once, Valentin flipped his hands, and a mechanical plate containing a Type 8 nucleus appeared. A transparent shield immediately enveloped him, blocking the silk strand.

The mechanical was a C3-Grade protection treasure, it was even able to defend against Type 8 powerhouses.

Every city mayor had a C3-Grade defense treasure, and it was their life-saving item.

At the same time, Valentin waved his hands, causing numerous beams of light to shoot towards the sky.

Annie frowned, and sent out more silk strands, coiling around the light beams.

The over-200 beams were mostly destroyed, but there was a dozen that managed to shoot away at 50 times the speed of sound, disappearing from the location.

Chapter 974: Shock!

Valentin sneered within the protection of the C3-Grade shield, "Hahaha, humans, I have already sent out information on the 2 of you. Not long after, the Great Dragon Empire will know of your existence. If you surrender now, I can still spare you and give you a way out. I can even confer upon you a noble status! Otherwise, you and the 300,000 humans in this Jiao Beast City will be wiped out!!"

The defense of the C3-Grade treasure was incredibly shocking, as long as the Type 8 Mutant Beast nucleus was not expended fully, within a short time, Annie would not be able to break through it.

The silk strands of Annie were useful in many areas, they could be used to assassinate, control, bind, defend, and even stealth, but they were not particularly strong in offense.

If it were Yue Zhong at his peak, he could definitely destroy the shield with a punch.

"You're spouting too much bullshit! Just sleep already!" Yue Zhong swept Valentin a look, his eyes flashing with a cold gaze, and a powerful intent that surpassed even a Type 9 powerhouse blasted towards him.

"Your Majesty!!" Struck by that intent, Valentin felt as though Yue Zhong had transformed into the Great Dragon Emperor who he feared and respected, reaching out to grab his head.

Under that terrifying spirit attack, Valentin's will was crushed, and his body crumpled to the ground, while the Mechanical Plate controlling the C3-Grade treasure fell onto the ground, and the shield disappeared.

Yue Zhong simply shook his finger, and sent a Type 7 Puppet Rune into Valentin's head, turning him into a puppet.

Annie stood quietly, and while she seemed calm on the surface, her heart was full of shock, "That was formidable!! His will

and intent already surpassed most Type 9 powerhouses!"

The usage of intent or willpower, as well as spatial laws, were the largest barriers for many Type 8 powerhouses to break through to the Type 9 realm. Many half-step Type 9 powerhouses would be stuck at the bottleneck for many years, before heading to various secret battlefields to temper themselves. However, most of them would only be able to train their will to be on the same realm as their strength, few could possess a will stronger than a Type 9 powerhouse at the Type 8 realm.

Valentin quickly came to, and he immediately came up to Yue Zhong, speaking respectfully, "Your slave Valentin greets Master!"

Yue Zhong asked, "How many Holy Race members are there in the Jiao Beast City?"

Valentin quickly replied, "There are 35,434 Holy Race members, 476 Type 6 powerhouses, 11,123 Type 5 powerhouses, and the rest Type 4."

With a wave of his hands, Yue Zhong sent a Puppet Rune into Valentin's hands "These are 40,000 Puppet Runes, go turn all of them into puppets that you can control."

There was no thickness to the Puppet Rune, there was no difference between 40,000 of them and 1 of them.

"Yes! Master! Valentin received the 40,000 runes and quickly led his subordinates out.

Annie swept a look over the children on the dining table, her brows furrowing slightly, "What do we about these little kids?"

"Don't kill me!! Big brother, big sister, please, don't kill me!!"

"I know how to do things, I'm willing to help you!! Please don't kill me."

"...'

When the kids on the table heard Yue Zhong and Annie's

conversation, they were filled with fear as they began to plead. They had seen how the 2 of them had slaughtered the Green Wyrms easily and were obviously more terrifying than the Holy Race. That was why they began to plead.

In fact, within the Great Dragon Planet, humans were even more vicious than the Holy Race.

Yue Zhong looked at the wailing children and frowned. He emitted a powerful aura, but was not fierce, as he barked, "Keep quiet!"

The kids were all frightened by Yue Zhong's intimidation, as they fell silent, staring at him with fear.

Yue Zhong spoke softly, "When I'm done handling things here, I will let you out. For now, just keep calm."

Hearing that, these kids finally managed to quieten down peacefully.

Annie frowned, "Are you intending to defend the city? We're not a match for the entire Great Dragon Empire."

If it were up to her, they had to leave here immediately.

The Great Dragon Empire was the overlord of this world and had over 48 Type 8 powerhouses, 1 Type 9 powerhouse and numerous Type 7 and Type 6 experts. Such a force was enough to crush Annie and Yue Zhong.

Annie was a human Holy Daughter, and against 100 Type 7 powerhouses, she could wipe them out. However, against 500 Type 7 powerhouses, she would have to retreat. If a thousand Type 7 experts joined forces, they could kill her.

Furthermore, Yue Zhong was still heavily injured, Annie did not wish to go against the Great Dragon Empire at this point in time.

Yue Zhong chuckled confidently, "Relax, I know what I'm doing."

Annie saw that, and replied with a nod, "En!"

Valentin was the mayor of the Jiao Beast City, and as he led his troops towards the rest of the Holy Race, he swiftly converted them all into Yue Zhong's puppets.

Noon, in the center of the city, the 300,000 humans were already gathered. All of them had been summoned by the Holy Race and eyed the warriors with fear, afraid of their lives being claimed.

One human noble in a suit, Ran Jiang, looked towards another noble, Huo Te, and asked in a low voice, "Old Huo, what's going on? Why did the city mayor gather all of us here? Is he going to kill all of us?"

Huo Te had a look of alarm as he began to tremble, replying with a voice lacking in confidence, "I hope not... We already did so much for them, they should eat the rest instead of us right?!"

Inside the Jiao Beast City, all humans were mere food for the Holy Races. Every year, many noble sons and daughters would also be captured. However, there had never been a massacre before.

After all, if the Holy Race were to just slaughter wantonly, all humans would be wiped out, then the Holy Race would experience food shortage.

As the humans present began to speculate and guess, a human beauty dressed in silver armor came walking out, guarded by a number of ferocious-looking Holy Race warriors, as she came up to the podium.

Huo Te gazed at Yue Zhong and Annie and could not help but exclaim, "Look!! Those are humans!!"

Ran Jiang had a look of disbelief, "How could humans be walking together with the city mayor?"

Seeing Yue Zhong and Annie, the humans below began to break out in a discussion.

Yue Zhong frowned, and emitted a powerful pressure, "Quiet!"

Immediately, everyone quietened down.

Yue Zhong then explained, "I am Yue Zhong, a human. From today onwards, I'm the new mayor of the Jiao Beast City, you all are my citizens. My aim is to destroy the Great Dragon Empire and release all humans, instating humans as the rulers of this planet. I order you all to follow me, and fight for the freedom and rights of your fellow human beings, as well as your lives."

When those words fell, it was as though everyone became ants thrown in a boiling pot of water. Most of them did not celebrate, instead, they were filled with fear and terror.

After such a long period of time, the humans had no lack of any passionate young heroes to go against the Great Dragon Empire, however, their plights had always been miserable. All those who joined them had always been caught and eaten as well. Under the threat of the Great Dragon Empire's might, no one here wanted to fight against the Holy Race.

"Regardless of what you think, I don't care. What I need is your absolute obedience. Those who resist will die. My first order is that, from now on, no one is to hunt other humans, to hand any of your fellow human beings to the Holy Race. Those who disobey will end up like these guys."

Yue Zhong waved his hands, as 30 human soldiers-turned-puppets escorted 200 human nobles, as well as numerous others, out like dogs, shoving them towards the platform.

One of the captured nobles had a savage look as he roared out, "Release me!! Yue Zhong, you damn traitor!! You dare go against the Great Dragon Empire!! The Empire would not let you off! You will be punished and cooked by the Empire!!"

Another noble also screamed, "You dare to capture me!! My backer is Marquis Serati!! If you dare to touch me, you will definitely die!!"

The captured nobles were all screaming and venting their fury.

Yue Zhong waved his hands, and declared coldly, "Kill!"

In that instant, the 30 Type 5 human soldiers wielded large blades and charged through the captives, before turning to their hunting squads as well. Their blades swished through the air, acting like grinders.

The podium then became like a mountain of corpses and a sea of blood. The nobles and their hunting squads were all sliced up into headless or dismembered corpses, crumpling to the ground.

In an instant, there were over 4,000 dead bodies.

When the spectators saw this, all of them turned pale, and many vomited from the gruesome nature of the massacre. They were filled with fear towards Yue Zhong, as though he was a Devil King.

To these humans who had been treated like slaves, Yue Zhong just needed them to fear him and obey him, only then would he throw them into battle.

Chapter 975: Attack!

Seeing Yue Zhong slaughter those hunting parties without mercy, the spectating humans were all filled with terror.

Yue Zhong shot them all a glance, and declared solemnly, "From now on, all of you will become warriors, until we have fully obliterated the Great Dragon Emperor. Now, we will begin registration."

After establishing his dominance, the numerous human soldiers-turned-puppets quickly came forward, beginning the forceful recruitment of soldiers, registering everyone present as a soldier.

When Annie saw how Yue Zhong forced these humans to be soldiers, her brows arched, as she spoke, "Yue Zhong, even if these people became soldiers, their hearts are not with you, there's no point."

These humans had been domesticated entirely by the Great Dragon Empire over thousands of years, their behavior and attitude were too servile. They had no intentions of resisting the Great Dragon Empire, even if Yue Zhong were to conscript them, they would not become a strong force.

Even if they took a step back, and these people were willing to go against the Great Dragon Empire, in front of such might, they were not even capable of being cannon fodder. Thus, Annie could not understand why Yue Zhong would want to waste the time and energy.

Yue Zhong looked out at those numb and desensitized people, and spoke, "I know. However, Annie, in order to truly change a race from being slaves to the rulers, it is not possible to rely on just a few people. They need to learn to stand up and fight for their own. Only then would there be a bright future. These people will be the future of the human race here on Great Dragon Planet."

To leave the future of the race to the decisions of a few top humans would not be enough. Otherwise, if there were no strong contenders and future generations, the race would still fall to ruins.

Yue Zhong chose to force the people within the Jiao Beast City to become soldiers in order to raise their combat will, the intention to resist, as well as the honor and glory of ages past. As for their combat strength, Yue Zhong did not really give a hoot about it.

Eyeing the people below, Yue Zhong took a piece of fruit that seemed to be burning like a flame and took a huge bite. As the fruit entered his abdomen, a pure energy coursed through to his soul, replenishing the damage he sustained.

This scarlet-red fruit was called the Blazing Flame Fruit, a special product of the Great Dragon Planet. When consumed, it can benefit a person's spirit and soul.

After he took over Jiao Beast City, Yue Zhong discovered many of such fruits within the manor, and they were the best medicine to treat his injuries.

About 5,000 km west of the city, there was a huge and grand city covering a large area, with numerous floating islands above, as well as a huge 1m-tall city wall covering it.

This city was called the Green Wyrms King City, the capital home of the Green Wyrms Kingdom.

Within the city, there was a beautiful and lavish palace. There was a beautiful green lake located inside, and in the pavilion overlooking the lake, 2 Wyrms-head creatures were relaxing, their bodies naked and covered with green scales.

Inside the lake itself, a number of red-scaled mermaids with exceptional looks and alluring figures were frolicking around.

One of the 2 Green Wyrms, who emitted a peak-Type 8 strength, reached out grab a fresh and bloody human heart, taking a bite out

of it, as he laughed cruelly, "Valentin had just a call for aid, there's some Type 8 female human that had breached the Jiao Beast City. What do you think, Isado?"

Isado's brows arched, as he replied, "Your Majesty, defeating a Type 8 human powerhouse is easy, but it would be tough to kill them. Considering the strength of our Green Wyrms Kingdom, it would be difficult to kill that human. I think we should request for the other kingdoms for aid."

Every Type 8 powerhouse had their capabilities, and unless one had absolute strength to overwhelm the opponent, most of the time, a clash would only result in a win or lose, very seldom would one be able to kill the enemy.

It was especially so for human Type 8 powerhouses. Their combat strength might not be comparable to other races of the same realm, but in terms of life preservation, most human experts were more capable than foreign races. If a Type 8 expert wanted to leave, even an expert of a stronger realm might not be able to catch them.

The Green Wyrms King downed a cup of virgin's blood, laughing lightly, "True, with our present strength, it would be easy to defeat her, but to kill her, it would be difficult. I've already reached out to the Grey Wyrms Kingdom, the Scarlet Wyrms Kingdom, the Blue Wyrms Kingdom, and the Silver Wyrms Kingdom to request for help. The 4 kingdoms had already entered a state of vigilance, selecting their experts to organize a net around the Jiao Beast City."

With a wave of his hands, a holographic image appeared, revealing the scene in the Jiao Beast City, "That Type 8 powerhouse is truly a fool. If she had fled the moment she revealed herself, it would be a headache for us to deal with her. We would need to invite the 8 Great Saint Kings, or even the great Emperor to act personally. However, she is actually trying to organize a human army to resist our Holy Race. What ignorance. Once we are

done gathering our troops, it would be hard for her to flee. At that time, if we can capture her alive, I will toy with her to my heart's content, before eating her. A human Type 8 powerhouse, just thinking about it is enough to make me salivate."

On the display, Annie was standing in front of some human troops being trained, her gaze cold, her demeanor valiant. Beside her, there were 20 others learning to lead as well.

The technology on Great Dragon Planet was incredibly advanced as well, with satellites to provide feed. The moment Jiao Beast City had fallen, a dozen satellites were in place to conduct surveillance around the clock, sending the image back to the Green Wurm Kingdom.

Isado looked at Annie with a hint of contempt in his eyes, "What a big-breasted bimbo. She actually reckons that she could make use of the humans in Jiao Beast City to go against our Holy Race. It is truly foolish. Your Majesty, I will surely capture this woman alive for you to enjoy."

There was a cruel smile on the face of the Green Wurm King, "3 days later, all troops will gather at the point. At that time, Isado, it will be up to you."

Isado replied respectfully, "Yes, Your Majesty!"

3 days later, outside the Jiao Beast City, a large number of troops gathered in all 4 directions about a 100km away from the city. The Holy Race army numbered about 8m, intending to surround the city.

Within these forces, there were all sorts of strange equipment and preparations, including powerful and advanced cannons, as well as mechanical devices meant to capture.

A huge 10,000m-long battleship soared above in the skies, and in a flash of light, 12 Holy Race experts were sent down.

The 12 Holy Race warriors did not look too different, but they

had scales of 4 different colors, and there were 3 experts of each color.

The Green Wyrms King looked at the 12 warriors, his face smiling, as he walked up and greeted them enthusiastically, "Grey Wyrms King, Scarlet Wyrms King, Blue Wyrms King, Silver Wyrms King, glad you all could make it. This time, the Type 8 human expert would find it hard to flee."

The Silver Wyrms King licked his lips, "Green Wyrms King, we can help you capture that female Type 8 powerhouse, but, we all want to have a go at her too. When you decide to consume her, we want a part of flesh as well. We have not eaten a Type 8 powerhouse's flesh for a long time.

These Holy Race warriors of the Wyrms Race were all lustful creatures, and they loved mating with the females of other races. At the same time, they enjoyed slaughter and loved to consume human flesh the most.

This time, the 4 Kings came from their own kingdoms, interested in consuming Annie.

The Green Wyrms King laughed out loud, "No problem! We will all play and eat together!"

The Silver Wyrms King had a vicious glint in his eyes, "In that case, since we're all prepared, let's move out!!"

Of the 5 Wyrms Kingdoms, the Silver Wyrms Race was the strongest and had the most warriors. Even on the Green Wyrms King's territory, he had the most authority.

With that order, all the Holy Race warriors raised their weapons, decked in their Enhanced equipment, and began to soar into the air, heading towards the Jiao Beast City.

With this, over a million warriors flew through the air.

It was a terrifying scene, to see a seemingly endless number of soldiers blocking out the skies.

"Enemy attack!! Enemy attack!!"

When the Holy Race launched their attack, the soldiers in Beast Jiao City discovered them pretty fast, and the whole city began to sound out the alarm.

Hearing the alarm, many of the soldiers who had been training began to find cover as per their training.

However, there were those who stared at the sky with ashen expressions, their bodies trembling.

Chapter 976: Silk Domain!

The vanguard wave of the Holy Race had numbers exceeding the imagination of the people in the city, causing them to be filled with despair.

"It's over, we cannot win... We're doomed!!! We're going to be killed!! It's over!!"

'We're so dead, this time, we're are going to become food for the Holy Race!!'

"..."

The soldiers looked to the sky in horror, seeing the dense numbers of flying soldiers. Their expressions turned ashen, their bodies trembling uncontrollably, and were filled with terror. Many of them had just been trained for a short time, and their fighting morale was not high. Faced with such a scenario, they fell into despair easily.

Standing atop the wall, Annie looked at the number of soldiers covering the skies, her brows furrowed, "There are too many enemies. It'll be difficult for me to deal with all of them!"

If Annie were to go all out and utilize her Domain, it would be possible for her to kill tens of thousands of enemies. However, to fend off a million soldiers, it was too much to ask.

"Don't worry, watch me!!" Yue Zhong laughed, and waved his hands, "Bai Yi, do it! Blast them out of the skies!!"

"Yes!"

With a single order, all throughout Jiao Beast City, cannons appeared, pointed to the skies, and adjusted their aim swiftly.

At that instant, they all fired out mercilessly, forming a rain of bullets that blasted at the skies.

Under the barrage of attacks, many flying Holy Race soldiers

were instantly obliterated, their bodies ripped and shredded.

Bai Yi was Yue Zhong's treasure, thus, the enemies she hunted was considered Yue Zhong's, and a huge amount of life force was absorbed by him, quickly healing his wounds.

Life force was the simplest and purest of energy in a biological life form, with the ability to strengthen the physique, heal the soul, and nourish the spirit. Because of this, it was able to help a person evolve continuously, finally achieving the God-Devil Physique.

There were so many cannons within the city, and under Bai Yi's control, they were able to exhibit 200% of their power. Anything beyond the 3km area of the city was directly buffeted by the attacks, causing the Holy Race soldiers to turn into mists of blood.

"What?! So many Holy Races are being killed?!"

"So many!!! So many are being killed!! This Yue Zhong is killing so many Holy Race warriors!! Too formidable! They can't even get close. Maybe... we might be able to win by following him!! Maybe we can truly wipe out the Holy Races!!"

"..."

As they watched the countless soldiers being slaughtered in the skies, not able to get close to the city, many despairing soldiers suddenly felt that there was hope.

The soldiers who had already been turned into puppets began hollering at the rest of the human soldiers, "Attack!! Wipe out those stinky worms!!! Attack now and victory will belong to us, humans!!! By killing them, we will have a chance at survival!! Otherwise, we will all be killed without a burial ground!!"

"Kill!!!"

"Kill!! Kill!! Kill!! We're invincible!!"

"..."

Under the barking of those puppets, the rest of the human soldiers finally manage to muster some courage and will to fight. They raised their weapons and began to act according to their training, getting behind cover and firing at the soldiers in the skies.

With Bai Yi's incredible aim, the humans were able to exhibit a decent result, hitting each and every Holy Race soldier who burst apart. This raised their confidence and morale.

Slowly, the rest of the human soldiers began to join the battle, attacking the soaring Holy Race soldiers. They no longer felt like domesticated livestock, instead, they began to feel like soldiers subconsciously.

As for the Holy Races, they were not trashed either, but savage creatures. Even with so many of their comrades being killed, they did not seem to have any fear, instead, readying their own particle rifles to fire back at the city.

A number of the beams blasted upon the city wall, punching many holes into it, and a few human soldiers and equipment atop the walls were also destroyed as a result.

The city wall was meant to keep out humans, thus, while it was effective against human experts, to the weapons of the Holy Race, it was not much.

Countless beams fired out continuously at each side, and both sides began to suffer more casualties.

However, as the human soldiers had cover, while the Holy Race soldiers were flying in the skies, they were the best for target practice. Hence, the Holy Race was suffering more, without achieving much.

Amidst the cruel and intense battle, the Holy Race soldiers had no choice but to land on the ground and spread out, in order to minimize casualties.

Annie stood beside Yue Zhong, seeing that he had not yet acted personally but had already caused so much damage to the enemies, and her eyes were filled with respect, "As expected, he is something else in terms of combat and warfare."

Furthermore, through this battle, while the soldiers in Beast Jiao City could not be considered elites, they would have gained the confidence and will to fight the Holy Race. They were no longer trash and domesticated livestock, but a strength that could be utilized.

At the center of the 5 armies, the Silver Wyrms King looked at the Jiao Beast City, his eyes flashing with a look of greed, "Strong! I thought that woman was just a big-breasted no-brain beauty, but who knew she could train trash to such standards? I really want to eat her now!!"

The Scarlet Wyrms King piped in, "The probing has ended, let's do it for real!!"

The first million Holy Race soldiers were just sent to probe the city, they wanted to see just how strong Annie was. In their estimations, such a number should have been sufficient to force Annie to act, then they could assess her strength and act against her to capture her alive. They were not naive to think that a million soldiers would be enough to defeat her.

The Silver Wyrms King nodded in agreement, "Sure!"

"She's out!! The Type 8 human powerhouse is out!!"

Just as the Silver Wyrms King was about to give the order, all of a sudden, Annie, who had been staying still atop the city center, flew out and charged into the midst of the Holy Race warriors.

Annie raised her hands, and numerous transparent silk strands shot out to pierce the heads of those Holy Race soldiers, directly killing them.

The silk strands were like Annie's clones, as long as anything was

in her range of perception, the silk strands could easily penetrate the enemies and kill them.

With her full strength on display, it was like a sweeper, clearing waves after waves of Holy Race soldiers. Huge numbers of the Type 5 soldiers were slaughtered like ants, without any means to resist.

All Type 8 powerhouses had the terrifying ability to manipulate atmospheric energy, and against lower-ranked opponents, it was a huge advantage. As long as Annie had enough time, she could easily wipe out this million-strong army.

The Silver Wyrms King watched Annie slaughtering those low-leveled Holy Race soldiers, and was not furious, instead, he felt excited, ordering, "Very good! Very good!! She's finally made her move!! Her strength is at the high-Type 8 realm, which is commendable for a human. However, she's not our match! Everyone attack! Catch her alive!!"

As long as they could get her, even if they had to lose 8 million Holy Race soldiers, they would not frown. After all, a Type 8 human expert could cause the Great Dragon Empire a headache if she chose to hide and use guerilla tactics. If it came to that, only the Type 9 Emperor could deal with her.

If the Type 8 powerhouse was well-versed in stealth and did not act, instead, just hiding for long without any signs, then even a Type 9 powerhouse would be powerless. After all, a Type 9 powerhouse was only halfway to the True God stage, and not yet invincible.

"Good! Move out!!"

The moment the Silver Wyrms King spoke, the 3 million Holy Race soldiers immediately soared out towards the city.

The 5 Kings brought their strongest subordinates and turned into 14 beams that hid their aura and wore ordinary equipment, hiding among the soldiers as they headed towards Annie's location.

Not long after, the 3 million-strong army surged towards Annie.

Silk Domain!

Facing that endless waves of soldiers, Annie's gaze turned chilly and activated her Domain. At that instant, countless transparent silk shot out from her body, containing principles and laws as they shot out, capable of slicing even the fleshy body of a Type 9 powerhouse.

The silk strands reached out to about 3 km around her, slicing and cutting constantly, with her at the center, and any unfortunate Holy Race soldier that got close enough would be chopped up into fine pieces. In just a single second, over 90,000 Holy Race soldiers had been sliced apart.

Chapter 977: Defeating the Holy Race!

After Annie activated her Domain, the strength of her silk increased exponentially, as countless silk strands shot through the skies, slicing the numerous Holy Race soldiers into pieces of meat. Every second, over thousands, were being wiped out.

As she floated in mid-air, she was like a killing goddess, slaughtering tens of thousands of Holy Race soldiers. This was the true terror of a Type 8 powerhouse who comprehended a domain, with the ability to take out an entire country.

"Domain? Not bad, she's high-quality! However, break for me!"

The Silver Wurm King who was hiding within his troops cackled, before suddenly exploding forth with full strength. His claw came slashing as his Silver Dragon Domain burst out, and images of silver dragons roaring encompassed the area, rushing at Annie's Silk Domain.

As the Silver Dragon Domain slammed in the Silk Domain, the countless silver dragons roared out and ravaged, tearing apart most of the silk strands, causing even the principles and laws within to disintegrate, and they could not maintain their form.

Annie's comprehension into the law could not compare to the Silver Wurm King's, thus, when both clashed, her Domain was at a disadvantage.

The Green Wurm King took the chance to activate his Speed Domain, with a terrifying acceleration that tore apart space, he appeared behind Annie mysteriously, his expression an evil grin as he grabbed at Annie's head.

The rest of the Kings also encroached on Annie's location from 3 different directions, sealing any possible escape.

The 5 Kings, who were at the half-step Type 8 realm, all shot through the skies, each of them wielding a silver spatial plate,

channeling their power to activate a spatial barrier that sealed everything within a 10km radius.

This spatial barrier would take 2 punches from a peak-Type 8 powerhouse to break through. As long as they could hold her for that extra moment, it would be enough to injure her or to capture her alive.

The lion does not hold back while hunting the rabbit, likewise, even if the Scarlet Wyrms King and the rest looked down on a human powerhouse when they made their move, it was all-in, not giving Annie a chance.

The threat of a Type 8 powerhouse was too huge, and their ability to flee was extremely high as well. If not careful, they could cause a disaster. The Kings did not want to leave it to fate.

Seeing that Annie was about to be captured by the Green Wyrms King, all of a sudden, there was an area behind Annie that was filled with Devil Qi, as a powerful Devil Domain burst forth, instantly enveloping everything within a 30 km radius.

The claws of the Green Wyrms King closed on thin air.

Numerous devils suddenly appeared, pouncing on the Holy Race warriors and turning them into emaciated corpses that fell out of the sky. It seemed as though the sky was pouring dead bodies all of a sudden, and it was a shocking sight.

The terrifying Devil Qi within the Devil Domain was not easy to resist, as even the 9 half-Type 8 powerhouses following their kings were affected, their faces turning pale before they were all reduced to corpses.

The spatial barrier also disappeared immediately.

"Dumb fools, since you've sent yourself up, that's great, you can all go to hell!"

Yue Zhong walked out from the midst of the Devil Qi, appearing mysteriously behind the Green Wyrms King, and with a single slap,

he turned the Type 8 Green Wyrms King into a bloody mess, while the life force was absorbed by him.

When he was done absorbing that life force, as well as the numerous life force energy of the soldiers, flowed into Yue Zhong's soul. Adding on to the Blazing Flame Fruit, he quickly recovered.

After he had killed the Green Wyrms King in a single hit, Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed as he eyed the rest of the Holy Race Kings, and with a thought, he threw himself right smack in the middle of them.

At that instant, the insidious Devil Qi began to surge around the remaining 4 Wyrms Kings like snakes.

The 3 weaker Wyrms Kings were immediately turned to emaciated corpses as their blood essences were absorbed cleanly, their dead bodies floating around in the domain.

As for the Silver Wyrms King, he was still trying his best to pit his Silver Dragon Domain against the Devil Domain, forcefully holding the Devil Qi at bay.

Since Yue Zhong was still evolving constantly, the might of his God-Devil Domain grew alongside him. Just the Devil Domain was able to slaughter those without domains currently.

"Break for me!!"

Inside the Devil Domain, the Silver Wyrms King roared out savagely, as his entire body transformed into a silver dragon that charged towards the skies, his right claw flashing about and tearing many of the devilish manifestations apart. He then charged towards the edge of the domain.

Currently, he no longer had thoughts of capturing Annie, he just wanted to flee and survive this ordeal.

"You want to flee?" Yue Zhong laughed coldly, and with a thought, he appeared in front of the Silver Wyrms King. His terrifying will then burst forth, enveloping the Silver Wyrms King

as he roared out, "Kneel!!"

Under the assault of the terrifying intent, the body of the Silver Wyrms King shuddered, and in his mind, he seemed to see Yue Zhong transform into a might giant that had no limits to his size, stretching out a massive hand intending to flatten him.

The moment his consciousness was grabbed, the Silver Wyrms King screamed out miserably and fainted.

With a finger pointed out, Yue Zhong sent a Type 8 Puppet Rune into the head of the Silver Wyrms King, turning him into his puppet.

After he had taken care of those Type 8 Wyrms easily, Yue Zhong expanded the Devil Domain, as wave after wave of Devil Qi enveloped the countless Holy Race soldiers below.

As the Devil clouds passed, many of the soldiers were turned into dried corpses as they fell out of the sky.

By the time over a million Holy Race soldiers were wiped out by Yue Zhong, the remaining ones started to feel a sense of terror. They dispersed, pulling out their particle cannons in a bid to fire at the devil clouds. However, the clouds seemed to consume everything, even when the beams struck the cloud, there was no reaction.

At the same time, most of the automatic weapons that were brought by the Wyrms outside the city began to adjust their aim, and began firing wildly at the remaining Holy Race soldiers.

The weapons meant to prevent Annie from escaping had suddenly turned on their masters, causing catastrophic damage to the Holy Race army, as many of the soldiers were punctured full of holes.

The entire region outside the city had turned into a hell of blood and beams, with increasing Holy Race casualties, their blood seeping into the ground.

At every second, there were thousands and dozens of soldiers being killed.

On the road leading to Jiao Beast City, there were countless mangled corpses of the Holy Race soldiers.

After the intense battle continued for a while, the millions of soldiers under the Holy Race banner who had lost their leaders and comrades began to turn tail and scrambled to flee.

These Holy Race soldiers were beings with intelligence, if they had a leader, under absolute orders, even if faced with death, they would fight till the end. However, since 4 of the Kings had been killed and the remaining's fate was unknown, adding on to the intense firepower from Jiao Beast City, Yue Zhong, as well as the automatic weapons they brought, they could no longer hold out and started to crumble.

"We won!! We actually won!!"

"It was a huge victory!! Our victory!!"

"..."

Seeing the fleeing Holy Race soldiers in the skies and on the ground, the human soldiers in Jiao Beast City were filled with disbelief and overwhelming joy. They began to erupt in cheers and roars, they had originally assumed that only death awaited them for their rebellion. However, they had actually survived and achieved a great victory, killing over 3 million Holy Race soldiers, defeating the 8 million strong army. Such a battle result was simply unimaginable.

An order was then passed, "Attack!! Sir Yue Zhong has given the order, we will attack Green Tooth City!!"

"Attack!! Wipe out those damn creatures!!"

"Attack!!"

"..."

Having received that order, the excited soldiers finally mustered their courage, as they began boarding the numerous anti-gravity vehicles and made for the direction of Green Tooth City.

With Yue Zhong's ability to deal with a million soldiers easily, the human soldiers were filled with bravado and excitement.

Under Annie's lead, all the soldiers poured out of the city, heading towards Green Tooth City.

Most of the forces within Green Tooth City had already been activated by the Green Wurm King, thus, they were easily routed and brought down by the human army, while the surviving 5,000 Holy Race members in the city were slaughtered mercilessly.

After dealing with Green Tooth City, the human forces' morale was greatly boosted. Furthermore, they obtained even more advanced weaponry and equipment, thus raising their confidence and capabilities.

The 500,000 humans within Green Tooth City were also conscripted into the forces, reorganized into the growing human army.

During the reorganization and training, the forces of Jiao Beast City began to take out the surrounding cities around the region, freeing those under the Green Wurm King, while bolstering their forces and further training the new recruits.

With the death of the Green Wurm King, the forces of the Green Wurm Race had been broken, and no one could stop the expansion of Annie's forces.

Chapter 978: Killing a Holy King!

Other than the Emperor of the Great Dragon Empire, there were 8 Holy Kings, each of them was a half-step Type 9 powerhouse, and were the pillars of the Empire, helping to deal with countless foreign races and powerhouses.

The Gold Wyrms Kingdom was one of the 8 Holy Kingdoms, their King was the Gold Wyrms King, one of the 8 Holy Kings.

One peak-Type 8 powerhouse came running into the palace of the Gold Wyrms King, letting out a miserable roar, "Gold Wyrms Holy King! It's bad!! Something's terrible happened!!"

The powerful voice reverberated throughout the kingdom, and hearing that voice and message, everyone in the kingdom had a huge change in expression.

Following that shocking voice, a flash of silver light charged into the palace of the Golden Wyrms King.

Along the way, there was no one who came forward to stop the silver light, allowing it to rush straight into the palace, revealing the face of the shocked Silver Wyrms King.

A beautiful lady in white, with long black hair, came up to the Silver Wyrms King and bowed, saying, "Your Majesty Silver Wyrms King, I'm called Cai Wei, the great Gold Wyrms Holy King has instructions for me to welcome you, please come with me."

The Silver Wyrms King had a fierce glint in his eyes as he roared out impatiently, "Bring me over quickly! Otherwise, I'll eat you in one bite!"

Cai Wei's body trembled slightly, as a look of fear flashed across her eyes. She replied quickly, "Yes!"

She was an absolute beauty and had some position within the Gold Wyrms Kingdom. However, at the end of the day, she was still a prey, and if the Silver Wyrms King were to really eat her, the Gold

Wyrms Holy King would just watch on and laugh.

Cai Wei brought the Silver Wyrms King through a few corridors, before arriving at a garden that was filled with mist, countless fragrant flowers, and numerous beautiful ladies. It looked like a garden out of paradise.

Inside the pavilion of the garden, there were 4 beings, resembling each other. To the human eyes, it would be hard to distinguish them, these were all Wyrms-head beings of the Holy Race. Only the different colored-scales showed a clear distinction between their races.

The moment she entered the pavilion, Cai Wei's face turned horrified, as she became pale. She saw a beautiful corpse on the pavilion, and the lady had been sliced up in countless pieces, placed in front of the 4 Wyrms.

Seeing that beautiful corpse, there was a look of sorrow and anguish in Cai Wei's eyes. That lady was her closest friend and sister, and she had been one who received the love of the Gold Wyrms Holy King. To think that she would still meet with such an end.

The golden-scaled Gold Wyrms Holy King saw the Silver Wyrms King coming in and smiled, extending a plate that had the bloodied head of the woman towards him, "What's the matter, Silver Wyrms King? Why are you so anxious? Come and taste the rare Nine Yin body of a young woman."

"Greetings Gold Wyrms Holy King, Silver Wyrms Holy King, Grey Wyrms Holy King, and Green Wyrms Holy King, I have an important matter to report." The Silver Wyrms King greeted them solemnly, "I had gone out on an expedition earlier to hunt a Type 8 human expert, and from her hands, I've gained a precious map, which reveals the location of a Gold-Grade Treasure!"

"What? A Gold-Grade Treasure map?!"

Hearing those words, the casual and relaxed expressions of the 4 Holy Kings immediately changed.

A Gold-Grade Treasure was something not any expert in the world could create. A Type 8 powerhouse possessing a Gold-Grade Treasure could easily decimate a Type 9 powerhouse. Thus, the news of such a treasure caused shock to the 4 Holy Kings, each of them feeling a rising greed.

"Gold Wyrms Holy King, look, this is the map." The Silver Wyrms King took out a silver cloth, as he walked towards the Gold Wyrms Holy King, as he spoke loudly, "The Green Wyrms King also knows of this map, and they had already reported to the Flame Wyrms Holy King. From what I know, they have already begun to move out."

When the Gold Wyrms Holy King heard this, his gaze narrowed as he grabbed the treasure map hastily and exclaimed, "What? The Flame Wyrms Holy King has already made his move? Damn it! We need to hurry as well!!"

Within the Great Dragon Empire, there was likewise internal strife for rankings and positions. The Gold Wyrms Holy King and the Flame Wyrms Holy King had bad blood between them. If it was not for the Type 9 Emperor pressuring them, they would definitely engage in a vicious clash.

The remaining 3 Holy Kings also paid attention to the map, after all, not everyone could resist the allure of a Gold-Grade Treasure.

Right at that instant, Yue Zhong, who had been in Stealth the entire time behind the Silver Wyrms King executed his will attack that was capable of dominating even Type 9 powerhouses.

In the consciousness of the 4 Holy Kings, Yue Zhong's intent transformed into a True-God existence, pointing out with a finger capable of suppressing them.

The 4 of them were more powerful than the Silver Wyrms King,

however, since they were caught off guard, they lost their senses for that very short moment.

Yue Zhong took the chance to explode out with his strength, sending 4 powerful fists at the 4 Holy Kings.

There were automatic defenses within the possessions of the 4 Holy Kings, each of them activated and blocking in front of Yue Zhong. These were extraordinary treasures, even with the full might of a Type 8 powerhouse, it was hard to break them.

However, Yue Zhong's God-Devil Physique was truly tyrannical, with a single fist, it caused the defenses to break apart, and the boundless strength struck the heads of the 4 Holy Kings, instantly bursting them.

In an instant, Yue Zhong's sneak attack had successfully killed the 4 half-step Type 9 Holy Kings.

If it were a frontal clash, Yue Zhong would have to execute all his trump cards in order to defeat these 4 Holy Kings. Furthermore, it might not be a successful endeavor to kill them. However, because he sneaked up on them, he had succeeded and was able to absorb their pure and abundant life force.

Upon absorbing the life force of these 4 Holy Kings, Yue Zhong's soul finally recovered fully and was able to evolve further.

Cai Wei stared and watched all these in stunned silence, her face turning pale, and her body trembling uncontrollably.

Yue Zhong did not bother about her reaction, instead, he turned to Silver Wyrms King and asked, "Silver Wyrms King, are you able to gather all the Holy Race members in this Gold Wyrms Kingdom?"

With Yue Zhong's present strength, it was not an issue to eliminate all the Holy Race members in the city. The only problem was that the scope of the mission was too large. If Yue Zhong were to go on a massacre, it would alert the rest and allow them to flee. It would waste time and energy just to kill a few thousand, unlike

the battle at Jiao Beast City, where he had just slaughtered as he pleased.

The Silver Wyrms King responded in respect, "Master, I don't have that ability. I can't order the subordinates of the Gold Wyrms Holy King. They would not obey my instructions as well since I'm an outsider. I don't have that kind of authority here."

Yue Zhong frowned, "Since that is the case, forget it. You can go and kill the Holy Race members as much as possible, I will go and take a walk in the treasury."

The Gold Wyrms King City also used technology and humans for defense. Through the surveillance cameras and computers, Yue Zhong had already obtained the location of the treasury with Bai Yi's help.

"Wait, sir!!" At this time, Cai Wei's voice sounded. She walked over bravely, and bowed, "Sir, I know how to gather all the Holy Race members in the city. If I can help you complete this objective, I hope that sir will grant me a wish."

Yue Zhong frowned, and swept her a look, "What is that? Tell me about it first."

Wiping out the Holy Race members in the Gold Wyrms King City was just an idea that Yue Zhong had, if the condition of Cai Wei was too high, he would not be willing to waste time or energy on her.

She knelt on the ground, begging Yue Zhong with an earnest expression, "Please allow this lowly one to serve you, Master!! I am trained in the art of tending to my owner and am considered an exemplary maidservant. I'm well-versed in all sorts of daily chores, tending to management and paperwork, culinary skills, poetry, painting, dance, singing and all sorts of entertainment skills. If you want it, I can even warm your bed for you. Please take me away and let me serve you!! I will be loyal to you forever, I'm begging you, please take me away!"

Humans were lowly on this Great Dragon Planet, and danger was rife. Without any backers, one would not know when they could be eaten. Cai Wei had led such a life for so long, and she hoped to rely on another human.

Yue Zhong looked at her and spoke blandly, "Alright! If you can accomplish this for me, I will promise to take you as my maid. Get up!"

"Thank you, Master!!" Cai Wei got up and quickly went over to the waist of the dead Gold Wyrn Holy King, pulling out a small gold plate. She then handed it to Yue Zhong, "This is the summoning tool of the Gold Wyrn Holy King, once activated, all of the subordinates of the Gold Wyrn Holy King would gather here."

Chapter 979: Evolve: Half-Step Type 9 Realm!

Yue Zhong took up the golden plate, and with a thought, a bout of energy was sent into it.

The plate then lit up, and a strange energy wave stretched outwards in all directions.

Dang! Dang! Dang!

"His Majesty summons!!"

Immediately, everywhere within the Gold Wyrms King City, alarms rang out, and the commanders of the army were shocked, and quickly gathered their forces, soaring off towards the palace.

The Gold Wyrms King City was the capital of the Gold Wyrms Kingdom, and its surface area was much larger than China. The total number of Holy Race members here numbered over 40 million, and the humans were over 500 million. Just the forces alone inside the capital numbered 2 million.

The moment they received the summons, the 2 million-strong army immediately soared towards the palace.

Huge armies arrived and descended from the skies, landing in the vast palace courtyard in an orderly fashion. There was not a single hint of chaos. These were elite troops that had been trained for a long time and knew their positions.

At the same time, a number of huge battleships arrived and awaited orders from the Gold Wyrms Holy King.

Inside the palace, Cai Wei stood behind Yue Zhong, eyeing the incoming troops, and her eyes were filled with fear. The pressure of these millions of Holy Race members was too overwhelming.

However, when she saw how incomparably calm and steady Yue Zhong was, her emotions started to quieten, and it felt like even if

the sky came falling down, he would be able to shoulder it. All she had to do was to trust him.

Yue Zhong was also looking at the number of troops and laughed lightly, "Very good, seems like the majority is here. Time to collect some lives!"

In an instant, the vast Devil Domain appeared and spread out, enveloping the entire Gold Wyrms army. It reached over 50km, easily bringing all the soldiers within.

Within the domain, countless devilish manifestations appeared and pounced on the soldiers of the Gold Wyrms King, tearing them apart and sucking their blood essence, turning them into dried corpses.

In the skies, the battleships were also invaded by the Devil Qi, as the manifestations appeared and pounced on the warriors within, devouring them.

In just a few breaths, the 2-million strong Gold Wyrms King's army had been devoured by the Devil Domain, left with emaciated corpses.

All the emptied battleships were then kept into Yue Zhong's Universe Ring.

After a large portion of the army was wiped out, the Devil Qi within the domain gathered together to form a huge Devil of over 60km in height.

The Devil then opened its huge mouth, and sucked in deeply, affecting all the other Gold Wyrms King City's soldiers that were still en route, as a terrifying whirlpool appeared in mid-air, sucking all the soldiers in.

The terrifying devil exerted that suction once, and over thousands of the Gold Wyrms City soldiers were turned into emaciated corpses that dropped out of the sky.

The entire city erupted in chaos upon seeing that massacre of

soldiers, as countless humans started to flee out of the city.

Cai Wei stood one side, staring with shock at the rate of how Yue Zhong was slaughtering the Holy Race soldiers, "Strong!! He is really so strong!! I've managed to follow the right person!"

After evolving to the peak-Type 8 realm, Yue Zhong's strength had undergone another earthshaking change. As long as he went all out, just him alone could easily wipe out an entire race that was weaker than him. He was truly nearing the peak of strength.

Once he had wiped out over 2 million elites, Yue Zhong could sense the inner energy circulating within him increasing once more. Adding on to the life force he obtained from killing the 4 Holy Kings, he was already near the bottleneck.

"Time to go!" Yue Zhong turned around and headed further into the palace.

Along the way, there were many remaining experts of the Gold Wyrms King, however, before they had the chance to act, Yue Zhong would raise his hand casually and destroy their brains with energy, their life force surging into him.

Under Bai Yi's instructions, Yue Zhong passed through numerous alleys and came in front of the secret treasury.

In front of the treasury, there were 2 half-step Type 8 Gold Wyrms experts. As Yue Zhong arrived, they opened their eyes and stared at Yue Zhong and barked out, "Who are you, people?!"

Yue Zhong had no intentions to waste his breath on them, directly pointing with his finger and two energy blades sliced their heads off, "Die!"

Facing the defense-packed door, Yue Zhong just punched out at it and the explosive strength from his God-Devil Physique burst out, directly causing the door to crumple.

He then stepped into the treasury.

Within the treasury belonging to the Gold Wyrms Holy King, there were many precious stones, Mutant Beast nuclei, heavenly treasures, and all sorts of advanced warfare equipment. It was truly abundant.

Yue Zhong swept them all a glance, without much interest. They were of use to him, but not personally, as his strength would not suddenly increase by utilizing all of these.

While the treasures were abundant, it could not compare to the one in the Mech Empire. After all, one was a true Type 9 expert's storage, while this was just a half-step Type 9 powerhouse.

Yue Zhong's gaze swept past the treasures, when all of a sudden, he was attracted to one particular object. In the midst of all the treasures, there was a small spring of clear water. At the center, there was a plant that had 7 rainbow-colored leaves, with 3 rainbow-colored fruits.

When Yue Zhong saw the fruits, his eyes lit up, "That's the Rainbow Dragon-blood Fruit! The legends say that it could only grow in the blood of a dragon True God powerhouse, and it would only produce a rare fruit every 10,000 years. There have been records in the Great God World, but none has ever been seen. If a Type 9 powerhouse were to consume one, it would nourish the body. Who would have thought that I could come across such a fruit here?!"

Yue Zhong waved his hands and the energy surrounding him grabbed out at all the treasures, sweeping them all into his Universe Ring, emptying the entire treasury.

"It's missing one, seems like the Gold Wyrms Holy King consumed one." Yue Zhong walked up to the Rainbow Dragon-blood Fruit, only to discover one obvious hole, evidently, one of the fruits had been taken.

Yue Zhong reached out and plucked all 3, before throwing them into his mouth. He chewed awhile and swallowed it.

The moment those 3 fruits entered his abdomen, they turned into a number of rainbow-colored dragon-shaped energy beams that rushed through his body.

There was a loud crack, and his body almost split apart, as gold blood started to flow out of him, turning him entire golden.

The medicinal properties of the Rainbow Dragon-blood Fruit were extremely strong, even the Gold Wurm Holy King needed a long time to fully digest and refine a single fruit. If an ordinary person were to consume one, he or she would be burnt alive by the power of the fruit.

The energy from the 3 fruits continued to surge through his body, breaking it apart and nourishing it further, making him even stronger.

The accumulated life force within him was also ignited by the commotion, and charged right through his consciousness, turned into golden Yuan Qi by his God-Devil Nucleus, merging with the energy of the Rainbow Dragon-blood Fruit, entering his bones.

Under the assault of the yuan qi, Yue Zhong's bones were continuously evolving, turning into indestructible god-like bones.

The process took an entire day and night.

"I've finally reached the half-step Type 9 realm!!"

Yue Zhong opened his eyes, as 2 sacred light shot out. He could sense that his body had been strengthened more than dozens of times. He had finally broken through to the half-step Type 9 stage. As long as he comprehended spatial laws and accumulated enough strength, he would be able to reach the Type 9 stage, lording over those of the same class, and becoming a true peak expert.

Yue Zhong turned to look and saw Cai Wei kneeling beside him, holding a wet towel and wiping his face for him.

Chapter 980: Controlling the Gold Wyrms King City!

Cai Wei saw Yue Zhong open his eyes, and could not help but exclaim with joy, "Master, you're awake! That's great!!"

Yue Zhong was her current backer, if he were to die, her future would be bleak. That was why when she saw Yue Zhong's body suddenly breaking down, and golden blood flowing everywhere, she had been terrified.

During his coma, Cai Wei had been taking care of him.

After reaching the peak-Type 8 realm, his God-Devil Physique was incredibly tough. Few could actually hurt him. Furthermore, there was the loyal puppet Silver Wyrms King watching over him, even if Cai Wei, with her Type 2 realm, wanted to hurt him, she would definitely die horribly.

Furthermore, due to her weak strength, even if Yue Zhong were to let her hack him, she would not succeed.

"You're decent. Cai Wei, I will give you control over a unit, you take them and go wipe out all the Holy Race members in the city while maintaining peace and order for the humans."

With a wave of his hands, an entire fleet of Mechs appeared, filling up the armory.

When Cai Wei heard those words, she panicked, and hastily declined, "Master, I! I can't!! I don't have that sort of experience!"

Yue Zhong's gaze narrowed, as he stared at her and spoke, "No! If I say you can, you can. I'm handing you control over these Mechs to kill those Holy Race warriors. All you have to do is to give the command. Maintain order, and eliminate anyone who disobeys or go against us. I have things to do, when I'm done, I will come back for you. This unit is enough to ensure your safety."

The main force of the Gold Wyrms Holy King had already been slaughtered by Yue Zhong. Although there were a number of remaining Gold Wyrms, they were not gathered or orderly, thus, 200,000 Mechs were enough to wipe them out.

The number of Mutant Beast nuclei he obtained from this city was also enough to sustain such an operation.

Cai Wei felt the resoluteness of Yue Zhong, and took a look at the awe-inspiring Mechs, thus, gritting her teeth to reply, "Yes!!"

Yue Zhong ordered coldly, "I hope that when I'm back, all those who had hunted humans would be turned into corpses as well."

When Cai Wei heard that, she exclaimed out of shock, "Master, if that's the case, there would be at least ten million guilty humans!! Are you sure?!"

The Gold Wyrms King City was the imperial city of the Gold Wyrms King, thus, most of the humans here were loyal dogs, and had participated in the hunting and capturing of their own kind. If Yue Zhong insisted on punishing them, over ten million people would be put to death.

Yue Zhong's gaze narrowed, "Those inhumane bastards do not deserve to live! Carry out my order!"

Cai Wei could only nod, and reply respectfully, "Yes!"

After handing the city to Cai Wei and the 200,000 Mechs, Yue Zhong disappeared from the spot.

The moment he disappeared, the Mechs immediately launched into combat, forming various units and slaughtered their way through the city, eliminating any Gold Wyrms on sight.

Many of the Holy Races were heavily injured and killed without mercy, while their friends tried to flee.

Inside a small alleyway, a dozen particle cannon-wielding Mechs were patrolling. Suddenly, they adjusted their aims and fired at a

small house.

A number of beams blasted into the room, and the 6 Gold Wyrms experts who were laying in the ambush were instantly punctured full of holes.

The sentient Mechs were equipped with the latest biological scanners, and no matter where the Gold Wyrms hid, they would be taken out easily.

There were a number of brave and courageous Gold Wyrms warriors who tried to attack the Mech army head-on. However, before they could even turn around or raise their weapons, they would be struck dead.

Compared to biological life forms, these sentient Mechs had an advantage, in the sense that, as long as there was enough power from the Mutant Beast nuclei, they could fight forever, without getting tired, and were truly formidable soldiers.

Of the 200,000-strong army, every 5,00 Mechs would form one unit, dispersing in 400 different directions, and slaughtering the Holy Race members inside the Gold Wyrms King City. Every second, the death toll was rising, as screams and roars of misery and anguish rang throughout the city.

"Sector C765 has been cleared! The 345th unit is heading towards Sector C767, estimated time for clearing: 30 minutes."

"Sector C723 has been cleared! 312th unit is heading towards Sector C728, estimated time for clearing: 30 minutes."

"..."

Cai Wei sat in a makeshift command post, as a huge display screen was in front of her, giving her full view of the 400 units massacring the Holy Race members, advancing through the city.

She thought excitedly, "So strong!! This army is really invincible. The Holy Race cannot even fight back! Unbelievable! It seems like it's not impossible to wipe out all the Holy Race members from the

Gold Wyrms King City!"

Initially, Cai Wei was worried that she had no experience in commanding, even if she was given a huge army, she would not be able to utilize, but now, her worries were all gone.

"A large human unit appeared in Sector B436, their commander is Marquis An Jie. These are the hunting party members. 211th Unit will proceed to wipe them out. Please authorize mission!"

Right at this time, there was a notification from the communicator.

Hearing this, Cai Wei finally understood why Yue Zhong handed her such authority, it was for her to determine if the humans should be killed or spared.

Yue Zhong was not too sure about the situation here, thus, he could only rely on Cai Wei's discernment and judgment.

Cai Wei's thoughts flashed to this point, and she gritted her teeth to pass the command, "Mission authorized, clean them up!"

Marquis An Jie was one of the most loyal dogs of the Holy Race within the Gold Wyrms King City, and the number of fellow humans that had died at his hands numbered over thousands. Even Cai Wei's family had been broken apart due to him, and she was rounded up and presented to the Gold Wyrms Holy King.

After receiving Cai Wei's order, 5,000 Mechs immediately adjusted their directions and headed towards a particularly lavish mansion to attack it.

Under the numerous beams, the manor of Marquis An Jie was torn apart, and the thousand people inside were shredded apart.

With the frenzied assault of the Mechs, the Gold Wyrms Race, as well as their human-hunting parties, were all cleansed.

The entire city was thrown into panic and fear, while Cai Wei took the chance to announce the fall of the Gold Wyrms King rule,

and established the new human government.

Together with the might of the 200,000 Mechs, the rest of the humans maintained their silence and watched as Cai Wei pushed on ahead.

The new human government did not see many newcomers interested in joining. Many were still fearful that the moment they joined when the rest of the Holy Race were to get wind, they would be punished alongside.

However, there were many humans who had deep hatred against the Holy Race as well, many of them living in fear of being food for the Holy Race, or watched their loved ones being captured to be devoured. These people joined and swiftly help build up the new government, controlling and maintaining peace and order.

The Great Dragon Holyland was the Imperial Capital of the Great Dragon Empire and their core strength.

It occupied a huge area and was even larger than Russia on Earth. There were many floating mechanical fortresses in the skies above the Holyland.

30 battleships continued to orbit and patrol around the Great Dragon Holyland.

Within the Holyland, all the elites of the Great Dragon Empire were gathered. The numbers of the Type 7 powerhouses alone numbered more than a million.

At the same time, other than the Holy Race, there were a few other races including humans, and of these foreign races, the males were handsome, the ladies beautiful. Those who were ugly or ordinary would have been put to death or devoured by the Holy Race.

As for the good-looking ones, they were the toys of the Holy Race. The Wyrms Race were incredibly lustful in nature, even the females had droves of good-looking males serving them. After they were

done, they would then rip the throats of the human males apart and devour them. It was extremely gruesome.

At the center of the Holyland, there was a huge crystal island of 900 sq km, and beneath it, one could see many spiritual dragon veins.

The amount of energy accumulated around those veins could surpass even the mutating Earth. As these dragon veins supported the palace, the amount of energy was simply too abundant, as all sorts of strange and rare flowers and plants grew. It was a cultivation heaven for anyone.

At the center of the floating crystal island was a scarlet crystal palace of about 100m in height. This belonged to the foremost expert of the Great Dragon Empire, which was the Type 9 Emperor. Only he had the qualifications to reside over such a lavish and spiritual resource.

Chapter 981: Half-God Aji Hong!

A silver beam of light descended from the skies, flying towards the floating island.

Following 2 shouts, 2 half-step Type 8 Gold Wyrms powerhouses stepped forward with their spears pointed at the incoming target, "Halt!"

A few half-step Type 8 auras burst forth from various parts of the floating island, no lesser than a thousand.

When the silver light rescinded, the silhouette of the Silver Wyrms King was revealed, "I'm the Silver Wyrms King, I have an important matter to report to His Majesty Aji Hong!"

One of the Gold Wyrms powerhouses spoke solemnly, 'Wait a moment, we will go relay the message.'

The other Gold Wyrms expert immediately soared into the scarlet crystal palace, and did not take long before flying out, "Silver Wyrms King, His Majesty will see you, come with me."

Under the lead of the Gold Wyrms expert, the Silver Wyrms King entered the palace.

Inside the crystal palace, there were many experts, the weakest servant was still at least a Type 7 powerhouse. Outside, any one of them could be a city lord, but here, they were just mere guards.

After passing through the long corridors, the guard led the Silver Wyrms King into the deepest parts of the palace.

Inside the deepest part of the palace, where there were many rune engravings of mystical dragons, drakes, and wyrms all over the palace, sat a powerful being, with a true dragon head. His upper body was naked, and 2 beautiful busty ladies sat beside him, while he exuded a powerful aura, his pupils sharp as they stared coldly at the Silver Wyrms King who had entered.

This was the strongest expert of the entire Great Dragon Empire, who had true dragon veins, half-God Aji Hong.

When the Silver Wyrms King saw Aji Hong, he immediately kneeled and exclaimed, "Your subject greets Your Majesty! May Your Majesty last beyond eternity!"

Aji Hong's gaze was cold, as he shot the Silver Wyrms King a condescending gaze, without calling for him to stand, instead commandly coolly, "What's the matter, speak!"

The Silver Wyrms King continued to kneel, while reporting, "Your Majesty, the Gold Wyrms Holy King had been killed, and my Silver Wyrms Kingdom had also been destroyed!"

When Aji Hong heard this, his gaze narrowed, as his tone turned frosty, "Who was it?"

The moment his killing intent billowed out, the 2 busty beauties beside him felt short of breath, their bodies turning clammy as though they were about to die, and their expressions ashen.

Type 9 powerhouses were close to the God realm, they could easily slaughter a person with thought alone.

The Silver Wyrms King opened his right hand, and sent a crystal imaging sphere towards Aji Hong, "Your Majesty, your subject has managed to record everything, please accept this. There's also the secret of a Gold-Grade treasure within, please look at it privately."

The action of the Silver Wyrms King was a little overboard, and there was a look of unhappiness in Aji Hong's eyes, but the moment he heard that there was a secret about a Gold-Grade Treasure, he could not help but be moved, and ignored the action, "Secret of a Gold-Grade treasure?"

A Gold-Grade treasure could only be created by a True-God expert, and each of them was extremely precious. Many Type 9 powerhouses did not even possess one.

At the moment the crystal sphere flew towards Aji Hong, Yue

Zhong, who had been in stealth, punched out with a mighty fist, bringing a destructive strength aimed at the Type 9 being.

Yue Zhong's speed was terrifying, and Aji Hong did not have the chance to react when Yue Zhong's fist already slammed into his chest.

Aji Hong spat out a mouthful of golden blood, his body soaring back swiftly as he slammed into the palace behind him, causing many fractures of the structure.

The body of a half-God was incredibly resilient, if it had been any other half-step Type 9 powerhouse, that blow of Yue Zhong was enough to crush their being. However, Aji Hong just spat out a mouth of blood, without a single bone broken.

The 2 beauties beside Aji Hong disintegrated from the resulting shockwave.

Yue Zhong's eyes turned cold as he continued to shoot towards Aji Hong.

"Damn you!! You dare hurt me?! Impertinent!! I will roast you alive and eat you!!"

There was a furious glint in Aji Hong's eyes, as he roared, and slashed out in front of him, creating a spatial rift.

The moment the rift appeared, a strong suction force began to exert outwards, enveloping Yue Zhong and pulling him towards it.

All Type 9 powerhouses could control space as they willed it, and they could open portal gates, using them for offense and defense, and it was the main advantage they had over Type 8 powerhouses.

With a thought, the Radiant Battleship in the void shot out a beam to negate the spatial rift, and he passed through it to appear in front of Aji Hong, punching out once more.

"Scram!!"

Aji Hong was, after all, a true Type 9 powerhouse. Roaring in

rage, his right claw slashed out, containing draconic laws, slamming into Yue Zhong's right hand.

With a loud boom, Yue Zhong was sent flying back a few hundred meters, slamming into countless crystals. The intent within Aji Hong's attack also slammed into his consciousness. However, his will was much stronger after the baptism and refining, exceeded even that of Aji Hong's. Thus, the intent was instantly shredded apart.

On the other side, Aji Hong had been sent back a few hundred meters from the impact as well. He spat out a mouthful of gold blood, his eyes full of shock, "Your physique is able to contend against mine?! Extraordinary! In this world, only those who had gone through the baptism of the system could gain such a body. You must be Earth's 1st Oracle, Yue Zhong!!"

As a half-God existence, his thought process had long surpassed computers. In a flash, he had guessed Yue Zhong's background.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, as he slapped out at 2 approaching half-step Type 8 powerhouses, turning them into minced meat, "You know too much. Seems like your Great Dragon Empire has already infiltrated Earth."

"That's right!! Yue Zhong, your balls are sure big. You think that your God-Devil Physique is so great? If you had reached the Type 9 realm, I would have fled the moment I saw you. However, you're not there yet, and you dare antagonize me?! You're just in time for me to consume, and after a long period of secluded cultivation, I will have a chance to reach the Type 10 realm!! Go to hell!!"

"True Dragon Descends upon the World!!"

Aji Hong glanced at Yue Zhong with a look of greed, as he spat out a mouthful of turbid air, and immediately began casting his strongest art.

Aji Hong quickly transformed into a terrifying dragon, emitting a

powerful pressure. He was easily over a hundred meters long, each of his scale containing a hint of a true dragon's image. With a loud howl, he descended towards Yue Zhong, intending to grab at him.

This True Dragon Descent was a skill that Aji Hong had discovered within this planet upon reaching the Type 9 realm. It was formidable and could defeat those of the same realm. Each time he raged, he could easily cause mountains to topple and the earth to split.

When he struck, the entire floating island began to shudder, as a number of rocks and stones dislodged, dropping toward the ground beneath.

Facing that hit, Yue Zhong could sense clearly the surrounding space had been sealed by Aji Hong. Everything seemed against him, and he could only face the attack head-on.

"Aji Hong! If you want to kill me, you're still not qualified!! Become my evolving nutrients!"

There was a cold look in Yue Zhong's eyes, as he channeled his Universe Ring. An entire galaxy appeared in front of him, as he sent it out to the sky.

"What an amazing secret technique! However, you have revealed yourself even before comprehending a domain, you don't deserve to utilize such a move! The move was exquisite but the user is trash!! Just die!!"

Aji Hong laughed coldly, his dragon-form reaching out to grab, as countless true dragon images continued to follow and attack anyone along the way, forcefully dissipating the galaxy that appeared.

A Type 9 powerhouse could bring laws directly into their domain, and their own bodies were their own domains. Thus, when Yue Zhong had just attacked Aji Hong, it was no wonder he escaped.

Aji Hong had a vicious glint, trying to destroy the Universe Ring. His true dragon images suppressed Yue Zhong.

"Type 9 powerhouse, truly extraordinary! However, today, you will still lose at my hands! Armor!" Facing that seemingly impossible attack, Yue Zhong's eyes turned cold, as he barked out and a radiant armor appeared on him.

After donning the Type 9 Gold Battle Armor, the Type 9 nucleus and 36 Type 8 nuclei all lit up, as a powerful strength surged into Yue Zhong's body, forcefully pushing his strength to the Type 9 realm.

"Aji Hong, just die!"

With the help of the Gold Battle Armor, Yue Zhong faced Aji Hong, and in an instant, he exploded out with thousands of punches, as though beams of gold were pummeling at the dragon that was Aji Hong.

Chapter 982: Eliminating a half-God!

Hong! Hong! Hong! Hong!

Following a few earth-shaking explosions, the entire floating island started to crumble under the intensity of the battle, as pieces and shards started to descend from the sky.

Yue Zhong had already launched more than a dozen thousand punches at Aji Hong, who was forced back hundreds of meters, as he spat out golden blood.

Aji Hong stared at the Gold Battle Armor, his eyes flashed with disbelief and he roared with discontentment, "You're wearing a Gold-Grade Treasure!! How?!! How could you have 2 Gold-Grade Treasures?!"

One single piece was incredibly precious, each time one appeared, there would be an intense bloodbath. Furthermore, most of the current known Gold-Grade Treasures were in the hands of Type 9 powerhouses. If a single Type 9 powerhouse was known to possess one, it would be incredible. Yet, Yue Zhong actually possessed 2 of such treasures, Aji Hong was naturally aggrieved.

As the island started to break apart, the changes in the atmosphere and energy also aroused the shock of the elite troops within the Great Dragon Empire. Many of the elites began to soar over, most of them at the Type 7 realm. However, there were at least 20 Type 8 powerhouses among them as well.

The Great Dragon Holyland was the core of the Empire, and it was natural for many experts to be stationed here.

"You have too many loyal dogs, right on time, I need some nourishment!"

Yue Zhong swept out his perception sense and picked up on the numerous experts gathered. With a thought, the Devil Domain surged, extending over a hundred kilometers, and the devilish

manifestations began to pounce towards the elites of the Great Dragon Empire.

In an instant, many of these core experts were swarmed by assault.

Under the enhancement of the Gold Battle Armor, Yue Zhong possessed a Type 9 fighting strength, and his Devil Domain had similarly become more terrifying. The moment those Type 7 powerhouses entered the domain, they became emaciated corpses, while the 28 Type 8 powerhouses were also torn apart by the devils.

As Yue Zhong slaughtered wantonly, he could sense countless strands of life force surging into his body, accumulating within him.

"No!! You damn bastard!! I will eat you up!!"

As Aji Hong watched his elites being consumed by Yue Zhong, his eyes were filled with a savage glint. He roared out in fury and rage, these were the experts his empire had poured in large amount of resources to nurture. To think that they would be killed by Yue Zhong so easily, this caused a huge blow to the empire.

In his fury, he channeled out countless true dragon images, each of them containing principles as they slammed towards Yue Zhong. After becoming a true dragon, his body was his strongest weapon, and unless there was a Gold-Grade weapon, other weapons would not be able to deal damage to it.

The 2 Type 9 monsters continued to battle it out in a maddened frenzy.

Aji Hong was a true Type 9 powerhouse and was familiar with the control of spatial laws, more so than Yue Zhong. However, no matter what it did, most of its strength and attack would be negated by 90% when they struck Yue Zhong. The remaining 10% was not particularly hurtful to Yue Zhong either.

Yue Zhong continued to give it his all, learning how to control and get used to his current strength.

As the 2 parties fought harshly and intensely, as though it was a sparring match so that a half-God could give Yue Zhong some pointers.

Yue Zhong was steadily getting stronger and improving during the exchange.

The fight continued to ignite huge amounts of atmospheric energy all around, causing terrifying hurricanes and shockwaves to blast outwards.

Under the intense blasts, many structures began to collapse as the ground broke apart. The countless Holy Race members and humans within the Great Dragon Imperial City were struck by the aftermath and died instantly.

Due to a large number of deaths resulting from the battle, the remnant life force was instantly absorbed by Yue Zhong through the God-Devil Imprint and stored within his body.

The 2 continued to fight for an entire 4 days and 4 nights, while the entire Imperial City had been leveled, all that left was debris and corpses everywhere.

After going all out continuously for 4 days and 4 nights, both Yue Zhong and Aji Hong were starting to get exhausted. A few Type 8 nuclei on the Gold Battle Armor had also shattered. The might of the armor was huge, but its consumption was likewise terrifying. The nuclei could not keep up with the energy consumption, thus, it was natural that they broke apart. In fact, the armor was best used for a Type 10 True God expert, with his own strength channeling the armor to bring about the best result.

As for Aji Hong, he was also riddled with injuries, his entire body covered in golden blood. Yue Zhong's attacks were imbued with some laws and principles as well, and although Aji Hong's

regeneration was incredible, against wounds caused by laws, they recovered at a much slower pace.

By the time the battle reached the 5th day, Aji Hong and Yue Zhong's strength had dropped to the high-Type 8 realm. However, they were still battling it out intensely.

"Your Majesty, we're here!!"

At the dawn of the 5th day, 4 half-step Type 9 auras surged from a distance, as the remaining 4 Holy Kings charged over madly.

Right behind them, there were 48 Type 8 powerhouses following closely. This unit might not count for much in front of Yue Zhong at his peak, however, it would be the deciding factor in the current state of the battle between the 2 peak experts.

Aji Hong grinned viciously at Yue Zhong, his right hand extending out to form a seal on the space around the both of them, "Haha! Yue Zhong, your death is near!! You think that I don't know you have a Super A.I. that can interrupt our communications? From the moment I saw you, I had already sent out a signal, we've been waiting for you to get exhausted! This time, you're dead, all that you own will belong to me!"

Yue Zhong swept Aji Hong a look, his eyes filled with pity, "What a fool, you're just courting death."

"Open fire!"

With a thought, the Radiant Battleship opened fire and the last Type 9 nucleus cracked and crumbled, as a white cannon blast tore through space, piercing the space of the Great Dragon Planet.

The beam immediately slammed into the 4 Holy Kings as well as 38 of the 48 Type 8 powerhouses behind, vaporizing them.

After that, the beam blasted through the spatial lock around Aji Hong and Yue Zhong's position, blasting into his body.

"No!!"

Aji Hong only had time to scream out once, before his body was also vaporized due to the beam. Even the indestructible god-bones within its body were eradicated, leaving behind only a white Type 9 nucleus, and a spatial ring that fell to the ground.

The moment Aji Hong died, an abundant life force surged into Yue Zhong's body.

The pure life force surged through his body and tunneled into his bones, metamorphosing them into fully-golden, indestructible god-bones.

With the assistance of Aji Hong's life force, Yue Zhong was able to cross another realm, reaching the peak of the half-step Type 9 realm. As long as he comprehended spatial laws, he would immediately break through and become a true Type 9 powerhouse.

Yue Zhong reached out and kept the Type 9 nucleus as well as the spatial ring.

After killing Aji Hong, Yue Zhong swept a look at the remaining 10 Type 8 powerhouses, and with a wave of his hands, the Devil Domain appeared, coiling around them, and turning them into emaciated corpses.

Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief, "Finally. A Type 9 powerhouse is truly hard to deal with. If it was not for his rushed intention to kill me and wasting so much of his strength, I would only be at a draw with him."

If Aji Hong intended to flee, Yue Zhong would not be able to do anything to him. Furthermore, the human race on the Great Dragon Planet would have to face a calamity.

With a thought, he swept a glance through the spatial ring, and was filled with joy, "Yes! There're 3 Type 9 nuclei here."

A Type 9 nucleus was extremely precious to Yue Zhong, it could power the Radiant Battleship as well as the Gold Battle Armor.

There were other treasures as well, but just the 3 Type 9 nuclei

could be considered the most useful to Yue Zhong.

"This planet belongs to me now!"

He looked at the 3 nuclei and smirked. With a thought, he entered the Radiant Battleship hidden within the void.

Without a Type 9 powerhouse holding the fort, the Radiant Battleship could now scan the planet in an unbridled manner, giving him the location of every single living thing on it.

Within the Black Wyrms Kingdom, the palace where the Black Wyrms King resided, there was a large hole, as Yue Zhong stepped out.

The Black Wyrms King was in the middle of enjoying himself, and he turned around swiftly, only to be met with Yue Zhong's palm, slapping him into minced meat.

Chapter 983: Alien Invasion!

After killing the Black Wyrms King, under the astonished gaze of the females of other species, Yue Zhong swept up all the treasures and resources, before disappearing back into the void.

In an instant, Yue Zhong had transcended space, appearing in the residence of the Wind Wyrms King, and slapped the Wind Wyrms King into meat paste.

With the Radiant Battleship sending him everywhere, Yue Zhong appeared like a ghost, tearing the numerous Type 8 Wyrms Kings throughout the planet, squashing them to death and absorbing their life force, being making away with all their belongings.

After the Type 8 Kings were all squashed to death by Yue Zhong, the human armies led by Annie were unstoppable. They advanced everywhere and destroyed cities, and the Holy Race warriors were all slaughtered.

On the other side, Cai Wei was controlling the 200,000 Mechs to tear through the Gold Wyrms King City and establish a human base.

The planet was incredibly vast, and with all the upper echelons of the Great Dragon Empire slaughtered by Yue Zhong, the entire governing power was thrown into chaos. However, to fully subdue the planet, it was not a simple task.

The number of Holy Race members was simply too large on the planet, furthermore, the fear they had instilled in the human race was too deeply ingrained.

Those that truly dared to go against the Holy Race members were those inside the Jiao Beast City, who had deep-set hatred against the Holy Race.

However, the resources were truly abundant, and to Yue Zhong, this planet was the best to establish a base.

Yue Zhong took out another 300,000 Mech Beasts to hand to

Annie, getting her to push even further out.

Currently, he was outside the city, making use of the Mechs and the technology obtained from the Mech Kingdom to produce even more mech-production facilities.

The Mech Empire was able to subdue so many planets and crush civilizations was because, on top of the strength of the Mech Emperor Zu Yuan Ting, they had a steady, never-ending stream of Mechs.

With enough nuclei and resources, the Mech kingdom could easily make use of their mechs to produce even more facilities that would churn out more Mechs every day without stop, replenishing their numbers until they wipe out their enemies.

Yue Zhong had wiped out the top brass of the planet, and obtained many equipment and resources, allowing Bai Yi to take over the reins in controlling the Mechs to build factories and build more Mechs.

As long as Yue Zhong had enough time, he could make use of the resources on this Great Dragon Planet to produce Mechs with stop. Once the numbers accumulated, it would form a terrifying army, enough to wipe out the entire planet's Holy Race members.

On Earth, China's capital.

Inside a meeting hall, the major heads of China were gathered, including Chen Yan, Chi Yang, Hu Yi, Bai Xiao Sheng, Li Guang, Ji Qing Wu, Chen Yao, Luo Qing Qing, Han Qiong, and many others.

Luo Qing Qing, Han Qiong and Luo Chen were from another world, but the people they brought were not little, and against the zombies, Mutant Beasts and aliens, they had contributed greatly, integrating fully within Yue Zhong's forces.

Chi Yang started solemnly, "Today, there were 13 alien hosts discovered at the Guang Xi base. They had been infected through the alien-rats in the tunnels. There have been similar cases

discovered in Hunan and Sichuan. The evolution speed of these aliens are too fast. They have caused quite the commotion in some of the bases."

His eyes flashed with exhaustion, as he continued, "In this month alone, there had been 2,600 ordinary people who had died due to infection or killings by the aliens. On the military side, over a thousand had also perished in the clash against those aliens. Our prized hunters no longer dare to leave beyond 20km from the bases. I hope that everyone can pool their ideas to deal with this, or our China will soon cease to exist."

In a month, the death toll had reached 4,000. Currently, there were only about 10 million people in China, the death toll was not something they could take on in the long run.

Especially for those ordinary people who were infected, this caused even more panic in the large bases.

Hu Yi spoke out, "Let me say something. Currently, there are traces of aliens everywhere in China. From the information that Leader brought back, their reproduction rate is astonishing, and as long as they have enough food, they can survive in any conditions. Furthermore, they can infect any life form. Based on our conjecture, they should already have amassed a large army, and are right now dispersed throughout China."

"During our clashes against the zombies and Mutant Beasts, we have come across infected zombies and Mutant Beasts as well. Although we were able to wipe them out, it's likely that they have already spread throughout the country. We would soon be facing a tough battle."

Hearing his words, everyone's expression sunk slightly. The aliens were truly the most terrifying enemies they have had to face.

Compared to them, the zombies, Mutant Beasts and the Sea Clan did not count for much.

The most fearsome thing about them was their ability to multiply. As long as the Alien Queen continued to produce spawn, letting them infect all sorts of life forms, they would quickly grow and evolve. What was more, if an ordinary alien left the Queen, and absorbed enough food, it could also evolve to become a Queen, and produce other forms of aliens that was filled with spawn. Once those big-bellied aliens split apart, countless spawn would be produced and infect the life forms nearby.

Although the first wave of aliens had been destroyed by Yue Zhong initially, there had been some who slipped through the nets, and through the evolution and reproduction capabilities, who knew how many were currently in China.

China had obtained all sorts of powerful and high-tech weaponry, as long as the army used those, they could deal with small numbers of aliens. However, searching and flushing them out was a huge problem. These aliens could hide within any biological life forms, and if one did not open up the hosts, it was almost impossible to sense them.

As everyone fell silent, the doors of the meeting hall suddenly swung open. One officer came in with an ashen expression, as he shouted, "Not good, Guang Xi's base has just sent a request for aid, they're under attack from a huge alien army. Based on the preliminary scans, the total number of aliens is over half a million."

"What?!"

Hearing that, everyone's expression sunk.

Ji Qing Wu pressed a button, and some screens appeared inside the meeting hall, showing the images from Guang Xi.

Yue Zhong had obtained numerous advanced satellites from the Mech Kingdom, and launched 15 of them in the stratosphere of Earth, monitoring the planet.

Right outside Guangxi, all sorts of aliens were currently pouncing towards the base, and the savagery of the attack could be seen.

There were many bunkers and military structures established around Guangxi base, with automatic laser weapons installed.

The numerous automated laser cannons appeared and began firing at the aliens, at the same time, the Mech Beasts stationed around the base as well as Mechs under Bai Yi's control entered the battlefield.

Many humans equipped with particle cannons and enhanced armor also went to the frontline, taking cover within those bunkers, firing at the incoming aliens.

Under the intense firepower, huge numbers of aliens were being blasted apart.

However, their combat power was no joke as well. Even in the midst of the firepower, they could charge forth and tear apart the Mech Beasts and Mechs in a single move.

When they burst forth with their speed, they were faster than the speed of sound. Once they entered the battlefield, they tore through many of the military structures, destroying the automated weapons, and devoured the humans within cruelly.

When they got close, other than a few elite soldiers, many of the human soldiers would be taken out in an instant.

Under the assault of the alien army, a number of defense posts were slowly defeated, and the aliens were advancing.

In the skies, the Guangxi base also had to deal with the aerial types, with their unmanned drones, Thunder Fighters, aerial Mech Beasts.

However, the aliens continued to match with numbers and relentless attacks, both sides clashing in a frenzy. Every second, things would be falling out of the skies.

With the pressure of the aerial aliens, the Guangxi air force had no choice but to turn back and rely on the anti-air firepower to deal with the aliens.

Inside the command center, everyone could see the reinforcements of the alien army continuing to pour out from the huge mountains, forming a sea of aliens that were rushing towards Guangxi.

Chapter 984: Killing the Aliens!

Chen Yan saw the endless swarm of aliens and could not help but exclaim, "Damn it, the mountain range had already become their nest!! They had been multiplying right under our eyes, and we were unaware! Damn it!!"

Hu Yi also could not help but pipe in, "We need to provide aid, we have to send our forces there! Otherwise, they will only last for another day. The aliens will overrun them! Damn bastards, they're too cunning, to actually reach such numbers before acting. The zombies are nothing compared to them!!"

The combat strength of the aliens was much more terrifying than the zombies, 100,000 aliens would be more than enough to wipe out a million-strong zombie horde. Even if Guangxi was equipped with more advanced technology from other worlds brought by Yue Zhong, they would not be able to deal with such numbers.

If Yue Zhong had not brought back equipment, just 500 aliens would be enough to wipe out everyone in Guangxi.

Suddenly, another officer came running into the command center, his face pale, as he reported, "General!! There are alien sightings all around Sichuan base, Hunan base, Shanghai base, Hubei base, Yunnan base, and even our Capital!! They're currently attacking our military structures."

When this news broke out, everyone's faces fell, "What?!"

Ji Qing Wu waved her hands once more, and the display switched, transmitting the feed from the places specified.

Only to discover that they could see large numbers of aliens swarming all over the various bases in China.

Many of them had already begun to launch their assault, as the whole of China was thrown into a state of warfare.

Under such circumstances, the capital no longer had any

resources to send to Guangxi's aid.

Right at this time, Ji Qing Wu came up to Xing Bing Yun, bowing and pleading her with urgency, "Miss Xing Bing Yun, please, you have to help us!"

Xing Bing Yun had followed Yue Zhong to Earth, residing in China, however, she was still just an ally, and did not truly join China. Ji Qing Wu had no way of ordering her about.

If she did not agree, Ji Qing Wu could do nothing about it. After all, she was the only Type 8 powerhouse on Earth now.

Xing Bing Yun had a strange glint, as she replied, "Not a problem. For humanity, I can act. However, there are so many places in danger, there's only one of me, where do I go?"

Ji Qing Wu was extremely rational, and made the decision immediately, "Guangxi base. Please head there first. As for the other bases, we can still hold out. However, if Guangxi does not receive aid, they would fall within a day, and everyone there will become food for the aliens."

The Guangxi base, Hunan base, the capital, the Mongol Base, the Sichuan Base, had the most people and had undergone many events, thus, they were the most important bases.

Right now, the capital was the headquarters of the New China, and it had the most trump cards, as well as the most elite of soldiers. There were even 12 Protector Battleships and other heavy weapons. Their experts were numerous and were more than enough to fend off against the aliens for a while.

As for the Mongol Base, they were facing relatively lesser aliens than the rest. Hunan and Sichuan could still hold out for a few days, while the situation at Guangxi was direr. Only by having Xing Bing Yun, a Type 8 powerhouse, to intervene, would there be a chance.

Xing Bing Yun replied solemnly, "Not a problem. However, Ji

Qing Wu, I'll make this clear. Even if I provide reinforcements there, with the current situation, Guangxi would at most be able to hold out for another 3 days. Please make the necessary arrangements, and be prepared."

Although she was a Type 8 powerhouse, there were tiers to their strength as well. She was far from comparable to the Holy Daughters of the Holy Heavens, against hundreds of thousands of aliens, she would get tired too.

A Type 8 powerhouse was strong, however, they would get tired and intense battles could wear them out. They would need to retreat and rest after killing a certain number, otherwise, they could also be torn apart by the low-level enemies.

Ji Qing Wu replied, "I understand. Miss Xing Bing Yun, you may choose to retreat anytime you so wish. However, please inform us so that we can make the necessary preparations."

Xing Bing Yun nodded and turned to leave, "Fine!"

After she left, Ji Qing Wu issued a flurry of orders, and the whole of China began to get into action.

In the major cities, many of the reinforcement troops were activated and issued weapons and equipment, as they moved out to their positions.

Huge numbers of Mech Beasts were thrown into the battlefield as per Bai Yi's orders.

The numerous factories in the cities began to go into overdrive, producing more Mech Beasts to send to the frontlines.

The 12 Battleship Protectors, as well as 48 B-Grade Battleships Yue Zhong, obtained from the Mech Kingdom were also mobilized, firing at the aliens down below without mercy.

Luo Qing Qing piloted the Storm Battleship and led the Winged race to take on the aerial aliens in the sky.

With Ji Qing Wu's orders, the whole of China seemed to rise up to take on the alien forces, and in a short time, they managed to forcefully fend them off, resulting in a stalemate.

After 3 days, the aliens outside Guangxi base were charging relentlessly towards the military structures.

Having fought intensely for 3 days, the human soldiers were retreating with bloodshot eyes, taking cover within the bunkers, taking on the aliens with all their might.

As the aliens were being blasted apart, the roads began to corrode due to the blood.

However, their advance was unstoppable, after paying the price of over a dozen aliens, another dozen managed to charge through the defense post.

Just as the humans were about to be slaughtered, a number of powerful constellations struck down on the ground, directly pulverizing the aliens.

"Meteor Fairy!! It's the Meteor Fairy!!"

"The Meteor Fairy is here!"

"..."

Seeing the constellations, the human soldiers all felt revitalized. If it had not been for the Meteor Fairy and the Mech Beasts, these soldiers could not have held out for so long. It was because she was able to kill a large number of aliens that they had held on.

In the air, Xing Bing Yun, who was termed as the Meteor Fairy, had a look of exhaustion on her face. She had already supported the city for 3 days, and in this period, she had acted as a firefighter, flying everywhere to deal with the problems. She had less than 10 hours of rest, and the total number of aliens that had died at her hands was over 600,000.

Although Xing Bing Yun could control the atmospheric energy,

the battles over the 3 days without stop had cost her much of her stamina. Her strength had even dropped to the initial Type 7 realm.

Xing Bing Yun stared at the ocean of aliens, her limpid eyes filled with despair, "Damn it, I can't hold out any longer. The aliens are still incoming, seems like Guangxi will not survive past today."

The aliens had been silent all these while, and the moment they acted, all their hosts had exploded forth. Only a few fortunate life forms had managed to escape a terrible fate, but the result was still a terrifying sea of aliens that could cause even a Type 8 powerhouse dismay.

Right as she was about to despair, there was a sudden tear in space, as a silhouette walked out.

Seeing that, her eyes brightened as she shot towards the owner, "Yue Zhong! He's back!!"

Yue Zhong looked at the sea of aliens, and frowned, "Seems like I was right on time. Had I been slightly later, the aftermath would be unimaginable."

Xing Bing Yun flew beside him, "Yue Zhong, the alien army had already spread throughout China, their numbers of millions."

Yue Zhong looked at the beautiful Xing Bing Yun and nodded, thanking her, "It's been hard on you, Xing Bing You. Thank you for lending a hand. Now, it's my turn."

After that, he waved his hand, and the Devil Domain burst forth, covering an entire area of over a hundred li, enveloping all the aliens within.

At that moment, all of them were instantly sucked dry by the Devil Domain.

By the time the Devil Qi dissipated, there were only corpses of the aliens left, it was a shocking sight.

Xing Bing Yun stared at the millions of dead aliens, her eyes filled with shock, "Strong!! He had just been gone a while, how the hell did he become so strong?! I'm no longer a match for him!"

Chapter 985: Jubilation!

Since reaching the half-step Type 9 realm, Yue Zhong's might could already exceed some half-God characters. It was extremely easy for him to clear a million aliens.

A half-God character could easily wipe out an entire race that had no Type 9 powerhouse, given enough time. Yue Zhong had continuously evolved and finally reached such a level, standing at the peak of this world.

"That's Leader!!"

"He's back!!"

"Holy shit, he actually killed a million zombies in a single move!! What a freak!!"

"..."

When the soldiers saw what Yue Zhong did, they erupted in cheers and exhilaration. Most of the new recruits did not believe the legends of Yue Zhong. However, at this moment, they had thoroughly become his die-hard fans.

"Long live Leader!!"

"Leader is back!!"

"We are saved!!"

"..."

Yue Zhong's act of clearing a million zombies had been picked up by the satellites, and it was broadcasted to all the cities. Seeing how easily Yue Zhong took care of the threat, every single citizen cheered.

In the 3 days of the alien assault, the upper echelon had worked extremely hard and tirelessly, but there had been signs of panic and chaos, as things became even direr.

However, the moment Yue Zhong appeared to slaughter a million aliens so easily, all of the people became reassured, and their faith and reverence for Yue Zhong were renewed.

"That was too insane!! That fellow is no longer mortal!"

"How could a human evolve to such a standard? Is that the peak of power?!"

"..."

There were still a few ambitious fellows biding their time, intending to replace Yue Zhong, upon witnessing this, their hearts were filled with despair. In front of his absolute strength, their schemes and plots counted for nothing. The moment they revealed themselves, they would sacrifice even their families.

These ambitious characters decided to give up any further thoughts of rising to power. They decided to accumulate merits through the government, to build a new path for themselves.

In the capital, Chi Yang had also seen Yue Zhong, and he heaved a sigh of relief, "It's good that he's back! He's finally back!"

With the invasion of the aliens, where danger was rife and present everywhere, there was a chance where things could have been unsalvageable. That sort of pressure caused Chi Yang, Ji Qing Wu, and the rest of the upper echelon to have sleepless nights and low appetite, constantly staying in the command center to deploy troops.

Had Yue Zhong been later by another 5 days, the whole of China would have been swallowed by the alien army. 90% of the humans would have become hosts, incubators, or food for the aliens.

After killing a million aliens, Yue Zhong pulled towards empty space, revealing a large hole, and from within, a torrential number of Mech Beasts poured out.

He continued to tear at space, revealing over a hundred spatial doors, as 300,000 Mech Beasts soared out, turning into 3 different

armies that pounced towards the aliens.

Yue Zhong might have wiped out a million aliens, but there were still large numbers pouring out from the mountain range. In order to deal with those aliens, if it were him alone, it would take at least 10 years. It was not that he could not kill them all, but that they were too dispersed. He had no way of wiping them all out at one go.

After releasing the 300,000 Mech Beasts, Yue Zhong tore through space and stepped in, appearing in front of Sichuan, where there was another intense clash between his forces and the aliens.

The military structures at Sichuan were also surrounded by masses of aliens, as the Mech Beasts and human soldiers were currently taking them on in a bitter fight for survival.

Before Yue Zhong had left, he had set up a number of Mech Beasts as well as some factories to produce more Mech Beasts in each city.

However, due to the lack of resources, the numbers could not be compared to Great Dragon Empire.

However, these Mech Beasts produced on Earth still turned out to be vital against the aliens. If there weren't any Mech Beasts, the human defense lines would have long fallen.

The moment Yue Zhong appeared in front of Sichuan, he waved his hands and activated the Devil Domain to cover an area of over 100 sq km, enveloping the aliens and turning them all into emaciated corpses.

After killing the main force, Yue Zhong did not rest, as he used the Radiant Battleship to tear another hole to appear at the next city and repeated his slaughter.

He continued this until he managed to go through all the other cities within China and wipe out the zombies within using the Devil Domain.

In just three days, all the high-threat cities containing a large number of zombies had been wiped out by Yue Zhong alone.

Of course, he had just dealt with those gathered together, there were many other smaller, scattered groups throughout the country.

At the same time, under Yue Zhong's orders, the Mech Beasts coordinated with the human soldiers, going all out in various directions to deal with the smaller groups of zombies and Mutant Beasts, establishing bases and expanding the areas which humans could once again live.

Currently on Earth, with the aliens present, every alien was strong and considered the largest and most dangerous enemy of the humans.

Due to the threat of these aliens, if humans wanted to expand and conquer the land, they had to build proper military structures and defenses, and with the forts as main centers, they could slowly inch out carefully. There was still no way to traverse around freely.

This point, even Yue Zhong did not have any good ideas. In order to deal with the multiplying nature of the aliens, one was to wipe out them all out before they dispersed. Another was to possess a god-like power, omniscient and omnipotent, to wipe out all the aliens.

Right now, Yue Zhong only had strength at the half-God realm. Unless he reaches the True God realm, there was no way he could wipe out all the aliens yet.

After dealing with the main forces of the zombies, Yue Zhong continued to teleport around freely with the help of the Radiant Battleship, dealing with the zombies, Saint Clan vampires and Flesh-Eaters, the Dino-Race as well as other foreign species all throughout Earth.

Each day, Yue Zhong was killing a large number of life forms and absorbed their life force.

Right now, of the various Mech-manufacturing plant on the Great Dragon Planet, half were controlled by Annie to invade and attack the Holy Race, while the other half was directly sent to Earth through the Radiant Battleship.

The Mech Beasts were continuously being churned out and went all around China to eradicate the aliens, zombies, as well as Mutant Beasts while establishing bases and resource points for China.

After regaining those resource mines, a huge portion was excavated to be sent to the factories to process into Mech Beasts and worker Mechs.

The Mech Beasts were then deployed to battle, while the worker Mechs were sent to establish even more factories.

Under Yue Zhong's constant efforts, China's strength was increasing rapidly.

Initially, the aliens had managed to infiltrate the tunnels of the human bases. However, as Yue Zhong continued to send Mech Beasts into the underground, they managed to clear out the tunnels, and the survivor bases regained some form of peace.

Through the underground battles, the top brass was clear that it was tough for China to regain its territory. There was no way of regaining the previous way of life in the short future.

If they were to revert to the old ways for the towns and neighboring villages, then it was easy for the aliens to hunt them down when they least suspect it and multiply once more.

After dealing with the main threats, Yue Zhong willed it and appeared at the deepest part of the Bermuda Triangle, in front of the half-step Type 9 Wyrms-Dragon Agnis, "Old friend, we meet again."

When Agnis saw Yue Zhong appearing suddenly, his eyes flashed

with shock, however, he quickly regained his calm and smiled shamelessly, "It's you, Yue Zhong, you actually returned from the Great God World. Good, good, good. Your strength has risen tremendously, and you're worthy of being a friend. As for the past, let' them be bygones. We can be friends, I will tell you all about the secrets of the world."

"Very good, once I turn you into my puppet, I will drag it all out from you!!"

There was a chilly light in Yue Zhong's eyes, as he pointed out with the Cosmic Finger, and in a flash, a powerful cosmos energy crushed down towards Agnis.

"Damn brat, the one to die will be you!"

At the same time, the smiling Agnis had a ferocious glint in his eyes, as he burst forth with 9 huge python heads, filled with sharp teeth and wide jaws, snapping viciously towards Yue Zhong while executing true-dragon laws.

Chapter 986: Reaching the Type 9 Realm!

Hong!!

The cosmos energy slammed into the tails of Agnis, causing a powerful shockwave to blast outwards.

Under the shockwave, many of the mountains beneath the sea crumbled, and the on the surface itself, there were terrifying waves that spread outwards, smashing into the islands around.

The powerful Cosmic Finger directly crushed the tail of Agnis, causing blood to flow everywhere.

Agnis was full of shock, as he exclaimed out on fear, "That's a True-God technique!! How did you comprehend it?!"

"You didn't die, seems like you have some ability. Come!!"

Eyeing the tailless Agnis, Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, as he grabbed out with his hands, and the Devil Domain surged forth, enveloping Agnis.

"True Dragon Domain!"

There was a look of shock in Agnis's eyes, as his body twisted, and the accumulated dragonic laws and principles exploded out, allowing him to transform into a true dragon, as he sent his own claw out to attack the Devil Domain.

Wyrms usually comprehended true dragon or dragonic laws, once they could fully internalize the True Dragon Domain, they could become a half-step True Dragon. If they could break through, and reach the Type 10 stage, then they would directly evolve into a real dragon and could take on a True God powerhouse. Aji Hong, whom Yue Zhong had killed, was a half-step True Dragon.

"What a pity, your strength is lacking. Just come in!!" Yue Zhong laughed coldly, and expanded the range of the Devil Domain, and

enveloped Agnis within.

The moment Agnis was sucked into the Devil Domain, he began to struggle madly. Since he had transformed into a dragon, he slashed out with his claws in a bid to get away from the pouncing demons and devils, however, it was truly difficult.

"You can't escape! Just become my puppet obediently!" Yue Zhong flitted about like a ghost within the Domain, slashing out at Agnis every once in a while.

Under the relentless assault, huge chunks of meat were being torn from Agnis' body, before long, he was covered in blood and looked incredibly miserable.

Under the assault of the Devil Qi, Agnis might have a strong regeneration rate, but he was unable to heal properly.

Agnis struggled violently, as he pleaded, "Yue Zhong, please spare me!! I'm willing to be your subordinate!!! I will submit!! Please, spare me!! I don't want to die!!"

"Having been sealed for over 10,000 years, he knew the value of life, and he did not want to die like this."

"You have no choice, only death, or to become my puppet. Speak, where's your life vein? If you say it, I can turn you into my puppet, otherwise, there'll only be death for you!" Yue Zhong teleported in front of his head, and sent out a powerful fist, causing light gold blood to flow.

The 3 remaining Wyrms-Dragon heads had vicious expressions as he roared out violently, "You can forget about it!! I'd rather die than become your puppet!!"

"Then you can die." Yue Zhong did not bother and sent out fists after fists blasting out on Agnis's body, causing more wounds.

Agnis's life force was strong, and under the constant barrage of fists, Agnis still would not die. Even while enveloped by the Devil Domain, he continued to regenerate, it was just that the speed

could not compare to the speed at which Yue Zhong was devastating his body.

"What is that?!"

At the moment Yue Zhong was destroying Agnis's body nearer to the middle area, he caught sight of a gold pearl within him. Countless flesh and veins were embedded on the golden pearl, absorbing its strength.

"NO!!! NO!!!" As Yue Zhong reached out to grab the pear, Agnis began to shriek and scream out in fear.

Yue Zhong tugged it with all his might and plucked it from Agnis's body.

"Ah!!!"

The moment the golden pearl was pulled out from Agnis's body, he let out a loud scream, as an abundant amount of life force surged into Yue Zhong's body, allowing him to evolve once more.

Yue Zhong held up the pearl and looked at it carefully, "What is this pearl?"

Just looking at it, there was nothing special about the pearl. Yue Zhong sent his spirit energy to wrap around it.

As he probed it with his spirit, he realized that there was a huge source of life force within. It was more than a hundred times that of Yue Zhong's accumulated life force.

At this time, the God-Devil Imprint on his right hand glowed, and the enveloped the gold pearl, immediately absorbing it.

The moment the pearl was absorbed into Yue Zhong's body, a huge amount of life force began to surge through him crazily.

As the pearl was absorbed, the life force within him was ignited and sent into the gold God-Devil Nucleus in his consciousness.

The nucleus continued to expand, radiating brightly as though it was a constellation itself.

The life force surged around it and began to transform into a gold, latent power that coursed through his body and strengthening him from within, turning every cell and marrow towards perfection.

By the time the metamorphosis was over, the gold God-Devil Nucleus started to release strands of spatial laws and concepts, as well as domains, into his consciousness.

When he received such a huge amount of information, he immediately sunk into cultivation at the bottom of the sea.

15 days later, at the depths of the seabed, Yue Zhong, who had been immobile and looked as though he had died, suddenly opened his eyes, as 2 bright gleams flashed in his eyes.

"I've finally become a Type 9 expert!" Yue Zhong stood up, his eyes filled with excitement, "That gold pearl should have been the blood essence or life essence of some True-God, and it was obtained by Agnis, helping him achieve an unaging body. Since it was not absorbed fully, it had congealed into a pearl. Thankfully I have the God-Devil Imprint, which can absorb anything that is life force."

Right at that moment, there was a terrifying strength that came pressurizing down, causing even Yue Zhong to tremble from the sheer might, even after he had evolved.

"Final test, the Tower of Babel is opened. All spatial restrictions to Earth shall be removed henceforth. 15 days later, the test of the Tower of Babel will start, and all experts of all the worlds can step into to test themselves."

A resounding voice boomed across Earth, allowing every single sentient being to hear the words.

At the same time, a number of Gates of Hell opened up simultaneously, filling up Earth.

"Test of Tower of Babel" What's that?"

Yue Zhong felt a sense of unease rising in his heart, and quickly

shot out from the bottom of the sea.

The moment he exited the sea, he saw a huge tower made of unknown materials, sitting among clouds, with no end in sight. There were countless runes engraved on it.

Yue Zhong could sense the terrifying pressure from the tower, and recognized that he was nothing but an ant in front of it.

Filled with shock, he thought, "What a powerful aura. This Tower of Babel must be something created by a True-God or above. It could likely be that existence calling himself God. Only someone who can control the 800 worlds could do something like this."

The might of the tower was even more powerful than the Great God World, as well as the Holy Heavens. Even if the Radiant Battleship emitted all its might, there was no way it could compare to the Tower.

Among the Gold-Grade Treasures, there were even tiers, and it was likely that this Tower was one of the highest, possibly being the only peak-grade treasure.

With a thought, Yue Zhong extended his Type 9 perception, and immediately sensed the Gates of Hell.

Initially, there had only been 1 Gate of Hell every few hundred kilometers, now, every 20 kilometers had a gate.

Yue Zhong took a look and frowned, "Damn, the moment this Tower appeared, all the experts from the countless worlds will converge here. By that time, we will be in trouble."

Chapter 987: Guarding Earth!

In the Holy Heavens, the Central Temple, on a floating island that was the most eye-catching and shrouded in a dragon-shaped atmospheric energy, there was a sudden voice exclamation of joy, "The Tower of Babel! It has finally appeared! I've waited thousands of years, and the chance to escape this cage is finally here!"

A man with a shaven head and burly physique, wielding a scarlet red halberd and covered in a scaly armor, flew out of the floating island, his gaze lightning-like, as he headed towards the highest authority of the Holy Heavens.

Inside the Holy Heavens main Temple, atop of high podium, there were 5 gold thrones, representing the highest authority of the Holy Heavens. Only the Heavenly Lords of each Temple could sit here.

Beneath the podium, 2 rows of gold seats filled up the place, where the other Type 9 Holy Lords of the 5 Temple sat.

All the major decision were made in this Holy Heavens temple. Countless decisions in the past that had affected the human race of the Great God World had been passed here.

Only those Type 9 powerhouses were the true top brass of the Holy Heavens, possessing incomparable authority. All the Type 8 powerhouses were just considered in-training to reach the Type 9 realm.

The bald man turned into a beam of light as he shot towards the 5 golden thrones and sat in the middle.

Currently, the other 4 seats were already filled.

The moment the bald man sat down, he spoke, "The Tower of Babel has appeared. In this thousands of years, this is the only chance to leave this world. I must go."

Heavenly Lord Yan Tian from the Western Temple, with a head

of scarlet hair, frowned, "Lei Huang, the Tower of Babel is the only chance for all of us to leave this world. All of us would like to go, but there has to be some of us to protect the Holy Heavens. Otherwise, our human race would be wiped out by the other 2 major races."

Among the 4 races, the Mutant Beasts were the most scattered, and there would be a horde assaulting the other parts of the world every once in a while. Even the Man-Eaters and Devils would become targets.

While the Man-Eaters and Devils have their own disagreements and would slaughter each other whenever they meet, their main targets were still the humans.

If the human bass were empty, they would definitely take the chance to launch an assault to wipe out all the humans.

Heavenly Lord Lu Lie from the Southern Temple, who had gold hair and blue eyes, spoke, "Those old fellows from the Man-Eater Race and Devil Race will not give up this chance as well. Especially those Devils, every single one of them is selfish, they will all enter the Tower of Babel for sure."

The Northern Heavenly Lord, Ogani, who had a tanned body, frowned, "That's true. This Tower of Babel is the only chance for most of us to become a True-God expert. However, the danger is rife as well. There's usually an 80% or 90% casualty rate. Even if they're all at the peak of strength. With the cunning and craftiness of the Devils, as well as their fear of death, they might not necessarily all go to the Tower."

Hearing Ogani's words, the rest of the Heavenly Lords fell silent. With the nature of the Devils, it was likely that they would make that choice. However, no one wanted to give up the chance to enter the Tower of Babel.

After all, the danger in the Tower was not a joke, but there were countless opportunities and Gold-Grade treasures. The treasures

were so precious, and within the entire Holy Heavens, there were only 8 of such treasures.

Most of them were in the hands of the 5 Heavenly Lords, with only 2 in the hands of other experts. Even for the 5 Heavenly Lords, just 1 additional Gold-Grade treasure would boost their prowess.

At this time, the remaining Eastern Temple's Heavenly Lord Zhuo Jian, spoke up slowly, "I'll stay behind."

Lei Huang's brows eased as he revealed a look of happiness, "Good, Zhuo Jian, we'll leave the Holy Heavens to you then. We will make it up to you."

Zhuo Jian nodded slightly and began to discuss the compensation, and the rest quickly came to an agreement about the details.

After that, the entire Holy Heavens began to get into action, as multiple troops were deployed and sent to the Gates of Hell.

As for the Devils and the Man-Eaters, they also got into action, heading towards the Gates of Hell.

All throughout the Holy Heavens, a number of strong auras appeared from the most secretive of places, heading towards the Gates of Hell.

Other than the Great God World, of the rest of the 800 worlds, those that had Type 9 powerhouses also saw their experts heading towards the Gates of Hell towards Earth.

For those that did not have any Type 9 powerhouses, many experts still headed towards Earth, hoping for a chance to evolve further.

There was a particular Gate of Hell about 20km outside of the capital in China. A burly, 3-headed demon suddenly flew out, his expression nasty while his body was covered in spikes.

As the half-step Type 9 demon came out, he took in a deep breath of Earth's atmosphere, his eyes filled with greed, "Great! Great!! This is Earth? This is amazing, seems like this planet is undergoing mutation, the energy here is abundant. It will take me just 10 years to break through the bottleneck and become a true Type 9 powerhouse!"

He turned towards the direction of the capital, a savage glint in his eyes, as he stuck out his tongue to lick his lips, "There seem to be humans there, just nice for me to have my fill!"

"Have your fill? Pity, you won't have the chance."

Following the cold voice, there was a tear in space as Yue Zhong stepped out, staring at the demon coldly, and reached out for him.

"Shit, a Type 9 expert!!" There was a look of shock on the demon's face, as his heads split apart from the body, turning into 3 beams of light, shooting towards different directions at a speed 20 times that of sound.

The Head-Separating Technique was one of the strongest methods of the 3-headed Demon Race, allowing them to split their soul into 3 in each of the different heads. As long as one could survive, after a period of time, they could regenerate a perfect body. Of course, in order to regain their peak strength, they would have to spend time and a huge amount of resources.

"It's useless! Come back!" Yue Zhong grabbed out at thin air, and the atmospheric energy congealed into 3 palms that grabbed the 3 separate heads and forced them back to its body.

Yue Zhong stared at the demon, and his immense will combined with the Art of Fear struck the consciousness of the 3-headed demon, causing his will to dissipate, before he sent a Type 8 Puppet Rune into the demon.

After that, Yue Zhong waved his hands and tore space apart, disappearing.

At another Gate of Hell in front of Sichuan, a number of 1.8m-tall cockroach-men stepped out, their bodies dark and powerful.

These creatures came from a bug-dominated world, and the cockroaches relied on their rate of reproduction and adaptability to overcome the humans on their planets, becoming the rulers. These cockroach-men were the vanguard forces of their race.

The moment they climbed out the gate, 60 Mech Beasts surrounded them, scanning them with their advanced technology, "These life forms are not human, nor human-like creatures. Considered enemies, eliminate immediately."

At that instant, the numerous weapons on the 60 Mech Beasts spewed out intense firepower at the invaders.

Under the fierce firepower, the dozens of cockroach-men were blown to bits, and their blood and innards splattered all over the ground.

After killing those cockroach-men, the 60 Mech Beasts then spat fire, burning the corpses into nothing.

All around China, in front of the numerous Gates of Hell, there were many Mech Beasts standing guard, immediately eliminating low-level creatures. Those above the Type 6 realm were handled by Yue Zhong personally, turned into puppets.

Through China, there were many battles happening.

Fortunately, on the Great Dragon Planet, Annie had already reclaimed many territories and making use of the resources, numerous sentient Mechs were being manufactured and sent to Earth, allowing China to make use of numbers as well as Yue Zhong's effort to hold the fort.

America was unable to hold out much, however, after Yue Zhong provided some aid through a batch of Mech Beasts, many of them retracted their defense lines and hid underground.

Chapter 988: Intense Battle with Type 9 Mech Emperor Zu Yuan Ting!

On the 3rd day after the Tower of Babel appeared, a handsome man appeared together with a 9-headed man with ugly looks, as they walked out from one of the Gates of Hell.

When they walked out, the numerous Mech Beasts crowded over, scanning them and surrounding them.

The handsome man, with blond hair and blue eyes, swept the Mech Beasts a look, as numerous data flashed past his eyes.

In an instant, the Mech Beasts kneeled on the floor, expressing their loyalty, "The target is human and friendly. No. Welcome, esteemed Master!"

The 9-headed man cackled, "Zu Yuan Ting, you truly are the ancestor of these Mechs, seems like we can easily enter the Tower of Babel without alarming anybody. Keke!"

The handsome man was precisely the Mech Emperor Zu Yuan Ting of the Mech Empire.

Zu Yuan Ting shot a look at the skies and laughed lightly, "No! I think we've alerted the inhabitants of this planet, they have a decent A.I."

"Warning! Warning! Yue Zhong, there's a powerful sentient A.I. that had arrived on Earth. I'm not his match, please protect my core well. If we come in contact, he can consume me or wipe me out. All the Mechs under my control would be taken away by him within 30 seconds. He's currently wrestling for control of the satellites. No. 1 has already fallen under his control.

The moment Zu Yuan Ting arrived on Earth, Bai Yi's clone on Yue Zhong's right hand let out a sharp warning.

When Yue Zhong heard that his face fell, "What? Has Mech

Emperor Zu Yuan Ting arrived on Earth? Damn it, he's the fellow I really do not want to meet."

Currently, the humans on Earth could survive and expand because they were relying on the Mech Beasts and Sentient Mechs.

Zu Yuan Ting was the most powerful sentient A.I. that Yue Zhong knew, and his strength far surpassed Bai Yi. If there was no way to stop him, then all of the Mechs on Earth would become his. Whatever Yue Zhong worked hard to obtain and produce would belong to Zu Yuan Ting.

"Since he's here, I have to take him down!"

With a thought, Yue Zhong activated the Radiant Battleship's power, scanning the current position of Zu Yuan Ting.

He ripped a spatial tear and stepped through it.

Zu Yuan Ting, who was trying wrestle control over the satellites from Bai Yi, took a look at the space in front of him, "Oh! He's here! Fast! What an arrogant fellow, to use a spatial tear in front of same-ranked experts."

Every Type 9 powerhouse knew how to control space to a certain extent. Hence, when teleporting to a Type 9 opponent, if one was not careful, the enemy could cause disruptions and send the unfortunate expert into a void where he would die instantly.

Hence, most fights between Type 9 experts would usually be done in flight, and seldom the use of spatial tears. Even if so, they would not do it so brazenly in front of their enemies.

The 9-headed man laughed savagely, "Truly arrogant, let him die in the chaotic space then, Zu Yuan Ting!"

"Sure, get the hell into the void for me!" Zu Yuan Ting stared at the spatial rip and laughed coldly, as he sent out a surge of energy meant to disrupt the spatial laws.

At the point where the spatial laws clashed, there was a door, and

as it appeared, it was struck by Zu Yuan Ting's attack, as it shuddered.

However, it did not go according to their wishes, as the door did not disintegrate. Instead, it shook a while and stabilized.

Yue Zhong stepped out and eyed the 2 invaders coldly, "The 2 of you must be Zu Yuan Ting and the 9-headed Dragonhawk from the Mech Empire. This is Earth, and it does not welcome you. Please return."

Zu Yuan Ting shot Yue Zhong a cold look as he ordered, "You're the top expert of the human race Yue Zhong? Not bad, you actually rose to the Type 9 realm. Kneel and submit to me. I can spare you and the rest of the Earth. Otherwise, my Mech army will come and level your entire planet. The technology you possess is stolen from me, and a far cry from what I can do. If you want to fight against my army, it's practically throwing eggs against a rock. If you were to submit and work for me in the Tower of Babel, I will grant your people a planet for you to rest. As for you, you will be the leader, second only to me."

Under Zu Yuan Ting's command, the Mech Army of the Mech Empire had crushed countless planets, enslaving many civilizations. Even a few Type 9 powerhouses had fallen at his hands. That was why he was so arrogant and domineering. He did not put Yue Zhong in his eyes even at his Type 9 realm.

Yue Zhong sneered, "Just with you? A trash metal like you, even if you offered to be my dog, I would not want you. You had better go back to the furnace and adjust your looks, at least I might reconsider."

"You're courting death!" Zu Yuan Ting flew into a rage, ever since he had reached the Type 9 realm, no one had dared speak like that to him before. Even his enemies would have treated him with respect on the battlefield. No one had cursed at him like that.

"I will saw you alive!!" In his rage, Zu Yuan Ting disappeared and

flickered behind Yue Zhong's back, his five fingers turning into chainsaws as he thrust out towards Yue Zhong.

If a Type 9 expert were to be struck by Zu Yuan Ting in this manner, their flesh would be minced and it would be difficult to regenerate.

"See how I turn you into scrap metal!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and he sent his own fist towards Zu Yuan Ting

With a loud boom, both fists met and the ground shook. Zu Yuan Ting's right hand was actually crushed by Yue Zhong's fist, as countless nano fragments fell apart.

Zu Yuan Ting's eyes flashed with disbelief and he roared out in madness, "Impossible!! My body is made of the world's strongest D-Grade Alloy!! It has almost surpassed a half-God's physique!! How could you beat me?!! How?!"

"There's nothing strange or impossible about it. You're just too weak. You're too ugly, and weak at that. What an utter trash." After destroying Zu Yuan Ting's right fist, Yue Zhong sneered and sent out more fists pummeling into Zu Yuan Ting's body.

In a single mistake, Zu Yuan Ting lost his upper hand and was struck multiple times by Yue Zhong, his body falling apart.

"Stinky brat, did you just tell me to scram? What arrogance, let me teach you in place of your father, you little bastard!"

When the 9-head Dragonhawk saw things were going downhill, he quickly channeled the atmospheric energy to form a dragon claw containing draconic laws, grabbing out at Yue Zhong.

Zu Yuan Ting and the 9-Head Dragonhawk might have unsettled business between them, but because of the Tower of Babel, they had formed an alliance. Before any lack of benefits could tear apart their partnership, they were the most solid of allies. After all, in the Tower, there would be countless experts, and even half-step True God warriors. Only by joining hands could they stand a better

chance at survival.

"Scram, you damn old beast!!" Yue Zhong became furious and sent a fist covered with Devil Qi towards the 9-Head Dragonhawk, instantly tearing the claw apart, as gold blood splattered and the Mutant Beast howled in pain.

"Little bastard, you have some capabilities! However, you will die here today!!"

The attack from the 9-Head Dragonhawk allowed Zu Yuan Ting to escape from Yue Zhong's relentless assault, and that momentarily reprieve allowed it to quickly shed the damaged parts on him, regenerating a body that was good as new.

Zu Yuan Ting was the toughest to kill, as long as his smart chip was not destroyed, even if his body were to suffer powerful spatial attacks, he could abandon the body and make use of the cells to regenerate a new one.

"Come out, my children!!"

Zu Yuan Ting retreated backward, and from his chest, 5,000 Mech Bugs the size of a fist flew out, shooting towards Yue Zhong.

"Bugs? They shall burn!"

Yue Zhong eyed the Mech Bugs and with a wave of his hands, the Devil Domain shrouded all of them, suppressing them within his domain.

After those bugs were enveloped by the Devil Domain, countless devilish manifestations pounced towards the Mech Bugs.

Chapter 989: The Powerful Mech Emperor!

Within the Devil Domain, the manifestations lunged at the Mech Bugs and bit down viciously, however, as their sharp teeth came in contact with the armor of the Mech Bugs, it only caused a loud metallic sound, and no harm came to the Mech Bugs.

The 5,000 Mech Bugs opened their mouths, and the strange runes on their back glowed, as they began to take in the Devil Qi.

These 5,000 Mech Bugs were the result of spending on a whole load of precious D-Grade Alloy, each one powered by a Type 8 Mutant Beast Nucleus. For the sake of these Mech Bugs, Zu Yuan Ting had expended many Type 8 Mutant Beast Nuclei, that was why there had been so little Type 8 Mech Lords that invaded Earth.

Their defenses were incredibly tough, even Type 9 powerhouses might not be able to pierce through. At the same time, they could absorb all sorts of energy.

Yue Zhong's expression turned ugly, as he waved his hand and retracted the Devil Domain.

The 5,000 Mech Bugs then turned into silver beams as they shot towards Yue Zhong.

On the other side, Zu Yuan Ting waved his hands, as a number of nano cells flew out from his body, entering the skies.

Those fist-sized cells quickly transformed as they flew, turning into military satellites equipped with D-Grade particle cannons.

When those military satellites soared up, they began to fire out beams that were 2 fingers-wide, as they transformed into a fire net under Zu Yuan Ting's control, blasting towards Yue Zhong.

The particle beams were not large, but when gathered and focused, they were enough to cause a wound on even a half-step True-God expert.

Under the assault of those beams, Yue Zhong waved his hands, tearing multiple spatial tears that exerted a suction force on those Mech Bugs.

In a flash, hundreds of the particle beams and a dozen Mech Bugs were swallowed up by the spatial tears, not causing Yue Zhong any damage.

A Type 9 powerhouse could utilize spatial laws to his advantage, opening spatial holes as he willed it, and it was one of the strongest trump cards in a Type 9 expert's arsenal.

"Space manipulation? I will seal it!!" The eyes of the 9-head Dragonhawk flashed coldly, as he grabbed out and channeled his own laws, breaking apart the spatial tears caused by Yue Zhong.

As the spatial tears crumbled, the remaining Mech Bugs surged towards Yue Zhong, while numerous D-Grade particle beams continued to fire out.

At the same time, the Mech Emperor Zu Yuan Ting opened up many holes on his body, as Type 7 Mech Beasts flew out, forming a huge army. They activated some energy shield and began to launch into an assault at Yue Zhong.

While a single Type 7 powerhouse would only be killed in a second by a Type 9 expert, numerous Type 7 experts gathered together could get into formation, and make use of circumstances to threaten a Type 9 powerhouse.

Zu Yuan Ting was a Type 9 A.I., and his speed of evolution was much stronger than Bai Yi's. His strength was not in close combat, but in producing numerous Mechs and Mech Beast armies to form a perfect combination to lockdown his enemies before killing them. After he was injured heavily by Yue Zhong in close combat, he immediately adjusted his methods, switching to his common style of fighting.

All around the smart chip of Zu Yuan Ting, there was a precious

constellation space crystal, containing numerous Mech fighters, as well as large amounts of nano cells. It allowed him to produce over 10 million Mechs easily.

Surrounded by such numbers, many Type 9 powerhouses had fallen, turning into Zu Yuan Ting's trophies.

A cloud of black nano cells shot out from Zu Yuan Ting's body, turning into a clone of his, charging through the Gates of Hell that connected the Mech Empire to Earth.

Yue Zhong turned into a shadow, braving the numerous D-Grade particle beams, as he executed the Cosmic Finger, as a large cosmos appeared, slamming into the 5,000 Mech Bugs and particle beams.

Pressured by the cosmos, the 5,000 Mech Bugs withdrew slightly, forming shields on all fronts, spitting out silver energy to link themselves up, as they combined into one body.

The powerful cosmos energy swallowed the D-Grade particle beams and struck the shield in a loud explosion.

The terrifying shockwaves that resulted shot outwards in all directions, directly vaporizing the Type 7 Mech Beasts that were flying out of Zu Yuan Ting's body.

However, before the shockwave dissipated, the joint form of the Mech Bugs released their transformation, as they quickly shot towards Yue Zhong once more.

The military satellites soaring towards the stratosphere continued to fire out at Yue Zhong.

Zu Yuan Ting's body was still churning out numerous Type 7 Mech Beasts that pounced towards Yue Zhong.

At the same time, more Mech Beasts were pouring out from the Gate of Hell.

Even the 9-Head Dragonhawk who was trying to attack Yue Zhong was filled with slight fear, "This Zu Yuan Ting fellow is

truly difficult to deal with. Seems like I'm weaker. However, his base body is weak in terms of combat. I should be able to make use of this in the Tower of Babel."

The 2 Type 9 monsters from the Mech Empire were just making use of each other to enter the Tower of Babel. There was no trust, it was just a temporary alliance. After all, they were still competitors.

Yue Zhong punched out, forcing the 9-head Dragonhawk back, as he frowned and thought, "The Mech Emperor is really strong! Even half-God Aji Hong would not be his match. With the God-Devil Physique, I'm barely forcing a stalemate, it's difficult to defeat him! With 2 half-God powerhouses attacking me, there's a chance of perishing here! I can't drag out anymore."

"Armor!"

With a thought, the radiant Gold Battle Armor appeared on his body, as a holy and archaic aura surged out from him. At that moment, he seemed to have become that powerful True-God expert, invincible and indomitable.

As the numerous D-Grade particle beams from the skies slammed into Yue Zhong, they were deflected towards the 9-head Dragonhawk.

Caught unprepared, the 9-head Dragonhawk was pierced by many beams, and he became grievously injured.

The 9-head Dragonhawk retreated, eyeing the armor on Yue Zhong with shock, "What is that? How come it's so overpowered? Is that one of those legendary Gold-Grade Treasure?"

Yue Zhong swept a cold look at Zu Yuan Ting, and with a flash of his body, he shot towards the Mech Emperor.

The 5,000 Mech Bugs gathered quickly, forming into a huge silver shield, blocking Yue Zhong.

Without pausing, Yue Zhong sent a fist into the silver shield, his

terrifying strength exploding out, blasting out a hole as he continued towards Zu Yuan Ting.

"Gold-Grade Armor, damn bastard!! I will be back!!"

Seeing Yue Zhong shooting over, Zu Yuan Ting's face fell, and he quickly split apart into 2,000 clones that attacked Yue Zhong, while another 2,000 quickly scattered in various directions.

The 4,000 clones all had strength at the Type 8 realm, and Zu Yuan Ting had to expend a huge amount of energy to execute this skill, their combat strength not at the peak.

The 2,000 clones that pounced towards Yue Zhong lit up and exploded.

The self-detonation of 2,000 Type 8 powerhouses was a force to reckon, exceeding even the resulting devastation from 200 million tonnes of nuclear weapons.

The terrifying explosion blasted outwards in all directions, leveling everything in its path. It caused the ground to split apart and shook violently while buildings within the vicinity of 1km collapsed and crumbled.

The blast even enveloped the 5,000 Mech Bugs and the 9-head Dragonhawk.

Faced with that terrifying explosion, the countenance of the 9-head Dragonhawk fell, as he reverted to his original form, a huge Dragonhawk of over 2km in size, his 9 heads snarling, as he activated a green energy to cover himself.

However, his body was still ripped and shredded due to the force, as light-gold blood splattered, and deep gashes and cuts appeared on his body, where the gold bones could be seen.

He screamed out in agony and fury, "Damn you Zu Yuan Ting!! I will not let you off!!"

Zu Yuan Ting's decision to self-explode without caring for his

allies or foes had cost the 9-head Dragonhawk heavily, and he likely needed a few dozens of years to recover to his peak.

Chapter 990: Subduing Zu Yuan Ting!

In the aftermath of the explosion that could heavily injure a Type 9 powerhouse, Yue Zhong shot out, still decked in the Gold Battle Armor, his breath steady and calm, and his vitals still strong. Evidently, he had not been injured.

"This armor is really too sick, if I did not have it, I would have been heavily injured."

Yue Zhong sneered, and swept out with his gaze, instantly locking onto his target. With a flash, he appeared in front of the Gate of Hell, grabbing out at thin air as a transparent ball fell into his palms.

The transparent ball immediately transformed back into a mini-version of the Mech Emperor Zu Yuan ting. However, his current aura was only at the initial-Type 8 realm. He had a look of fear and shock as he shouted, "How is this possible? I had already hidden all traces! No scanners could have picked up my trace, and any divine sense would not be able to detect me! How did you do it?!"

Self-exploding, before making away in stealth, this was the final trump card of Zu Yuan Ting. He had not expected Yue Zhong to see through his real self and grabbed him. This sort of shock was even more than that when he saw Yue Zhong emerge unharmed from the explosion. Since Yue Zhong put on the Gold-Grade Armor, he knew he could not harm him.

A Type 9 expert with a Gold-Grade treasure, allowed Yue Zhong to be almost invincible among all Type 9 powerhouses. Only those with a similar treasure or those old freaks that were half-step True-God experts could possibly harm him.

Yue Zhong spoke indifferently, "To my God-Devil eyes, there's no use employing any illusion or stealth skills. Unless you have a Gold-Grade treasure to hide your aura, otherwise, it would be a waste of effort. Zu Yuan Ting, submit to me and work for me. I can

spare you from death."

He was after all a Type 9 Super A.I., much stronger than Yue Zhong's Bai Yi. Zu Yuan Ting alone could control countless Mech Beasts and Mech fighters, engaging on multiple battlefronts without exhaustion.

In fact, if Yue Zhong did not have the Gold Battle Armor, he would have been defeated by Zu Yuan Ting. This long-time Type 9 Mech Emperor had any means at his disposal and was difficult to deal with. Once Yue Zhong could subdue Zu Yuan Ting, he could control more resources as well as a terrifying Mech army.

Zu Yuan Ting regained his composure in Yue Zhong's hands as he roared out, "Hahaha, Yue Zhong, if you want to subjugate me, you're still lacking! Just kill me, I've lived for over 30,000 years, it's enough!"

"Fine!"

Yue Zhong's voice turned chilly, as he shot towards the 9-head Dragonhawk, and sent out a Cosmic Finger towards the 9-headed beast.

"Yue Zhong!! I've no grievances with you!! Why must we kill each other?! Let me leave I'll head back to Galastar, and as long as you're on Earth, I will never step foot here, nor make you my enemy!"

The 9-head Dragonhawk let out a shrill howl, as he conjured a true-dragon claw out of one hand, the other a hawk, and each of his heads began to spit out 9 different laws. There was darkness, flames, lightning, light, ice, water, poison, destruction, curse, as they all slammed into the cosmos energy.

The 9-head Dragonhawk was also a powerful existence, wielding 9 different types of power. Since reaching the Type 9 realm, he had comprehended 11 different laws and did not fear Zu Yuan Ting until he saw what the Mech Emperor was capable of.

The 2 opposing energies struck each other, and the 9-head

Dragonhawk's attack instantly disintegrated, while the huge cosmos still continued to press down on the body of the Dragonhawk, suppressing his heads and causing his flesh to split and bleed.

After injuring the Type 9 Dragonhawk, Yue Zhong slammed into the body, his right hand like a blade as he slashed out at the body, tearing numerous bloody wounds, as the Dragonhawk bled even more profusely.

He then grabbed out at the Type 9 nucleus within the 9-head Dragonhawk's body, pulling it out with a cold laugh, "Back then, you had treated me like an ant, and almost killed me. Today, you've died at my hands! What a refreshing feeling!"

The life force of a Type 9 powerhouse was extremely strong, even as the source of his life and power had been snatched away, the broken 9-head Dragonhawk continued to stare at Yue Zhong hatefully, gasping weakly, "So it was you! That weak, puny human near the Mech Empire!! Damn it, I regret not squashing you to death!! I curse you, I curse you!!"

Yue Zhong stepped forward coldly onto the remaining head of the Dragonhawk, immediately squashing it in a shower of blood.

With the death of the Dragonhawk, an abundant amount of energy surged through Yue Zhong, helping to accumulate with his body.

Seeing how Yue Zhong slaughtered the Type 9 Dragonhawk without any mercy, the body of Zu Yuan Ting within Yue Zhong's grasp trembled uncontrollably.

As the most outstanding of AIs, Zu Yuan Ting was basically no different from a human. He had the emotions and feelings of humans, and as long as he willed it, he could even copulate and bear children. Likewise, he feared death.

With a thought, a powerful energy shield covered Zu Yuan Ting,

covering all contact between him the outside. He then raised his watch and asked Bai Yi, "Do you have the ability to consume Zu Yuan Ting?"

Bai Yi was the strongest A.I on Yue Zhong's hand, if she could consume Zu Yuan Ting, then she could immediately evolve to the Type 9 realm, and become the strongest sentient A.I. there was.

Bai Yi replied swiftly, "No, my core's potential is too low. If I were to come in contact with him, I would become his puppet in 5 seconds, and become his clone entirely in 30 seconds."

"Since that is the case, although it's somewhat of a pity, you can go and die, Zu Yuan Ting!"

Yue Zhong shook his head, and grabbed out with his right hand, squeezing tightly. The pressure forced the smart chip to be revealed, hidden within 4 Type 9 nuclei, engraved with numerous runes.

This was the true body of Zu Yuan Ting, and on it, were his consciousness, his memories, and the numerous principles and laws that he had comprehended.

The 4 Type 9 nuclei were the power sources, and because of them, Zu Yuan Ting was able to suppress Yue Zhong with his numerous means.

Right under the 4 Type 9 nuclei, there was the constellation space crystal, with the abundant resources and treasures Zu Yuan Ting gathered over the millenniums, and it was much more than what was in the Mech Empire.

At that moment, the cells quickly regathered to form a mini Zu Yuan Ting once more, as he pleaded, "Yue Zhong don't kill me!! I'm willing to submit and work for you!!"

Zu Yuan Ting was pleading on the surface, but he was secretly plotting, "A great man knows when to yield and when not, now I can lie to him first. When the time is right, I will flee. As long as I

can flee back to the Mech Kingdom, he would have no way of capturing me!"

Zu Yuan Ting was the Mech Emperor, and he might be fearful of death, but there was still a pride in him. He would definitely not be willing to be Yue Zhong's subordinate.

Yue Zhong relaxed his grip, revealing a bemused expression, ordering "Oh? You're willing to submit? Fine, open up your chip and let Bai Yi absorb your source code, allow her to evolve."

"Sure! Sure! Yue Zhong, I will open up my source code now." Zu Yuan Ting spoke in a submissive manner, at the same time, his chip began to open up, revealing the important source code within.

Inside the chip, there was a strange structure formed by 8 fine inscriptions intertwined, containing the mysteries and wonders of artificial intelligence.

Yue Zhong looked at it and his eyes brightened, "These Super A.I is truly interesting. It's too bad that I'm not too well-versed in this area. It's impossible for me to replicate such an intricate program."

As Zu Yuan Ting released his source code, he thought viciously, "When the A.I. of yours come in contact with me, I will swallow her and make her my clone, and plant her beside you. Yue Zhong, since you humiliate me to this extent, I will not let you off."

Zu Yuan Ting had come across Bai Yi the moment he descended on Earth and knew Bai Yi's grade. There was no threat from her at all. He was sure he could consume Bai Yi without anyone noticing, turning her into his clone.

"Zu Yuan Ting, you've fallen for it!"

At this time, Yue Zhong shot him a cold laugh, and with a thought, the Radiant Battleship in the void glowed and fired out a beam directly at the source code.

Chapter 991: Gathering of the Various Races!

There was a scream from the chip, "No!! Damn you, Yue Zhong!! You lied to me!!"

The Radiant Battleship was a product of a True-God expert, and the computer on the ship was more powerful than Zu Yuan Ting by many times. However, as the previous intelligence of the ship had been wiped out in the battle between the True Gods, its remaining strength had no way of invading a smart chip of a Super A.I.

However, once Zu Yuan Ting opened up its smart chip, revealing the source code, the Radiant Battleship could directly hack it and control it, laying down all sorts of restrictions.

Under that sort of assault, Zu Yuan Ting struggled maniacally. However, it was barely a short moment before his internal workings were grasped entirely by the battleship, and his resistance became weaker as he finally slipped into peace.

By the time his consciousness was quiet, the Radiant Battleship fired once more into the source code of Zu Yuan Ting before disappearing.

Just as the glow from the Radiant Battleship disappeared, the smart chip closed up once more, as numerous cells poured out, forming a human-shape, without the slightest discourtesy as he bowed, "Your slave Zu Yuan Ting greets Master. In the past, this slave has offended Master, please punish me as you deem fit."

Yue Zhong looked at Zu Yuan Ting and was pleased. He released his grip, "Very good, Zu Yuan Ting, go gather your forces from the Mech Empire and wipe out all enemies of humans on Earth."

"Yes! Master!"

Once his chip landed on the ground, a number of high-quality cells shot out from his constellation space crystal, forming around

the chip and becoming the humanoid shape that he had come to Earth in.

As he was reforming, he grabbed a few Type 8 nuclei and threw them into his mouth, allowing his strength to rise back to the initial Type 9 realm.

Zu Yuan Ting was considered a powerful expert even among those of the Type 9 realm, with numerous means and a powerful combat strength. He was only lacking a Gold-Grade treasure.

"I will now go and gather the forces of the Mech Kingdom and deploy them to Earth." Zu Yuan Ting bowed to Yue Zhong and immediately shot into the Gate of Hell, heading back to Galastar.

Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief. With the Type 9 Mech Emperor defending Earth, even if Yue Zhong were to fail in the Tower of Babel, China would not be wiped out by those foreign species.

The Tower of Babel was the only way one could become a True-God expert, and escape from this cage-like world. Yue Zhong would not give up on it.

With the Mech Emperor Zu Yuan Ting defending, China would be steady as a rock, and the threat of the aliens would decrease.

To humans, the aliens were their strongest and deadliest enemies. However, the Mechs did not have to fear becoming hosts, the aliens were just prey to be hunted down.

The multiplying of the aliens was extremely terrifying, while the Mechs could also be produced on a similar scale. Thus, it was no problem for them to deal with the aliens.

When Zu Yuan Ting returned to Galastar, he sent many Mech Beasts and sentient Mechs towards Earth continuously.

All the Mech Beasts and sentient Mechs were under his orders, and sent to the various battlefields on Earth, fighting against the Mutant Beasts, zombies, aliens, and under enemies of the human

race.

At the same time, many of those sentient Mechs and Mech Beasts were stationed at the Gates of Hell, focusing on dealing with the non-human entities that descended upon Earth.

With such an army guarding the Gates of Hell, any low-level being that tried to invade Earth were instantly taken care of by the Mech army.

Among the 800 worlds, there were strong worlds and weaker ones. Of those strong worlds, they had half-step True Gods guarding their worlds, while the weaker ones were like Earth prior to the Apocalypse.

With the Mech Army guarding the Gates of Hell, all those weaker races would just pass through the Gates of Hell, before being blasted apart.

Since Earth itself was going through a strange mutation, even the weakest human would be able to evolve slightly as long as they survived long enough. There were 800 worlds, and it was no surprise that many of them had their own capabilities. As long as they could enter Earth, then there was a chance to evolve within a short period of time, to a point where they could threaten humans. Thus, Yue Zhong did not permit any low-level races to come and vie for such resources with the human race.

Of course, there were numerous races with Type 9 powerhouses. Yue Zhong had no way of preventing them from descending upon Earth.

After all, there were definitely experts who had their own share of miraculous encounters and possessed Gold-Grade treasures. For the sake of entering the Tower of Babel, many had arrived.

With the flow of time, more races and species were arriving on Earth through the Gates of Hell. Those large races did not seem to have the intention to go to war either, as they all headed for the

Pacific Ocean.

Soon, many strong existences and races were gathered at the Pacific Ocean, some of them causing even Yue Zhong to feel some sense of threat.

With this large gathering, it was inevitable that some savage races and species would be unable to control themselves, as they began to get into fights. However, the Type 9 powerhouses maintained their cool.

All of them were clear, once a Type 9 expert acted, then the 2 races would enter a life-and-death battle, where it would not stop until one of them was wiped out. Furthermore, the main objective of the expedition was to enter the Tower of Babel for a chance to become a True-God existence. No one wanted to waste their strength on in-fighting before entering.

On this day, from a Gate of Hell near Guizhou in China, there was a bright flash of light, as a number of 10,000m-long battleships flew out.

As those battleships flew out from the gate, an even larger fleet of smaller ships followed behind, covering the skies, forming a huge cloud.

Most fleets would only have about 12 battleships, and yet, this fleet exceeded a thousand ships, 90 times that of a normal fleet. Furthermore, they were made out of materials that did not lose out to the Mech Empire and were at the C-Grade at least.

The remaining 36 10,000m-long battleships were actually D-Grade, their main cannons capable of killing a Type 9 Mutant Beast with a single blast.

On these thousand battleships, each and every one of them had the insignia of the Holy Heavens, representing that they were from the Holy Heavens.

If such a fleet were to go all out, they could easily suppress most

of the 800 worlds. Even Yue Zhong would not be able to fend off such a force.

"They've indeed come, the main force of the Holy Heavens." At the moment the fleet arrived on Earth, Yue Zhong had already known.

With a thought, he made his choice, "Since it is unknown what will happen within the Tower of Babel, it's too dangerous for me to act alone. I'd better follow the Holy Heavens in, to be safe."

There were too many experts trying their luck for the Tower of Babel, many of which much stronger than Yue Zhong. Going in with the Holy Heaven's forces would be better than proceeding alone.

In a flash, he charged through the skies and shot towards the fleet.

The fleet, capable of destroying everything in its path, flew directly to the Pacific Ocean, stopping about 5km away from the Tower of Babel.

The moment the Holy Heavens fleet appeared, waves of commotion broke out among the other species and races. Many of them looked at the battleships fearfully, putting as much distance as they could between them.

There was also a number who were not too affected by the appearance of the Holy Heavens battleships.

Not long after they came to a stop, Yue Zhong appeared and flew towards them.

4 silver-armored guards immediately flew out, barking at Yue Zhong with wariness in their eyes, "Halt! Who are you! This is the region of the Holy Heavens, intruders will be eliminated without mercy!"

Yue Zhong waved his hands, throwing his identity card over, "I'm Divine Envoy Yue Zhong from the Central Temple, this is my

identity card!"

The 4 of them took out a scanner, confirming his identity, before throwing it back and replying in neither a servile nor overbearing tone, "You're definitely Yue Zhong. Come with us."

A Divine Envoy's position was high, but it was not high enough for these silver-armored guards to be fawning over him. Unless he was a Holy Son or Holy Lord-level expert, that would make them be respectful.

Yue Zhong responded, "Yes!"

Under their lead, he flew towards the 36 D-Grade Battleships.

The moment he landed on one of them, he could sense incomparable pressure emitting from the battleship. There were actually 6 Type 9 experts and over 200 half-step Type 9 powerhouses.

Chapter 992: Holy Lord Yue Hua!

The might of this D-Grade Battleship was incredibly terrifying, enough to conquer an entire world. The strongest of the humans on the Great God World was truly something else.

Under the lead of the soldiers, Yue Zhong came to a deep hall, and in it, there were 2 people sitting on a sofa. One of them was the Master that Yue Zhong had acknowledged back in the Holy Heavens, the Holy Lord Tian Dou, while the other was Yue Zhong's senior brother, Zhuo Nan.

"Yue Zhong, you're back." Holy Lord Tian Dou saw Yue Zhong walking in, and his eyes were filled with surprise. He scanned once and his face changed, as he exclaimed, "AH! You actually rose to the Type 9 realm!!"

When Zhuo Nan heard that Yue Zhong had broken through, he was thoroughly shocked, "What?! Type 9?! He actually reached the Type 9 realm, in such a short time?! How is that possible?! Are those who can trigger the Tiger-Dragon image this freakish?! Impossible!! Even those existences years ago had to spend decades to break through the Type 9 barrier!! How did he do it?!"

A Type 9 powerhouse could be said to be no longer mortal and was halfway into the God realm. They were typically invincible existences, able to tear through space freely, and even bring about catastrophe upon a world. A person could eradicate an entire race.

A Type 9 expert, in this universe where experts were aplenty, in the human race of the 4 main races in the Great God World, had a high status.

Within the Holy Heavens, the number of half-step Type 9 powerhouses had accumulated over time, reaching over 300,000. However, the true Type 9 powerhouses were little in number. Each of them had high authority and terrifying combat strength.

Although Zhuo Nan had guessed that Yue Zhong would likely rise to the Type 9 realm when he saw the triggered image of the tiger and dragon during Yue Zhong's initiation, he had not expected it to be this fast. Subconsciously, he was filled with envy and jealousy.

Yue Zhong laughed mildly, "I encountered some fortuitous encounters in the Merlot Battlefield, and managed to become a Type 9 powerhouse."

Holy Lord Tian Dou had an appreciative look, "Good, good, Yue Zhong, I was right about you. You have fortune and fate on your side. To be able to reach the Type 9 realm in such a short time, this is the first in our Holy Heavens. I will go report this, and you will soon become a Holy Lord in our Holy Heavens."

After that, Holy Lord Tian Dou pressed a round plate beside him and sent a report towards the rest of the Type 9 powerhouses.

Any Type 9 powerhouse was a huge thing for the human race, thus, all the Type 9 experts had to be notified.

"Yue Zhong? Who is he? A Divine Envoy of the Central Temple? How did a Divine Envoy become a Type 9 powerhouse?"

"Yue Zhong... wasn't this that kid that triggered the tiger-dragon illusion? He had just joined us for a year and already became a Type 9 powerhouse? Terrifying! His latent potential and encounters are truly amazing!"

"..."

A number of those Type 9 powerhouses quickly went to research on Yue Zhong through their means, and when they saw how fast Yue Zhong was, they were thoroughly shocked.

When Holy Lord Yue Hua heard the news, she was filled with regret, "Damn it, if only I had invited him faster, and got him to join the Northern Temple..."

The 5 temples were dedicated to protecting the human race, but internally, they would still compete for resources and prestige.

With an additional Type 9 powerhouse, it would mean that the Temple would be stronger.

Holy Lord Tian Dou then smiled at Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, the Heavenly Lord had decided to organize a banquet for you, and all the Type 9 powerhouses will be there. Go and get to know them."

Yue Zhong replied, "Sure!"

"Come with me!" Holy Lord Tian Dou stood up and headed out.

Yue Zhong followed after Holy Lord Tian Dou out.

Soon, 2 people flew from this D-Grade Battleship and headed to the central one.

Upon entering that ship, Yue Zhong could that even the most ordinary guard was a Type 8 powerhouse, and countless strong auras were abundant on this ship. There was not a single Type 7 expert. Apparently, they did not even have the qualifications to be on board this ship.

As they proceeded along, they came to a lavish palace that was made out of the most exquisite of precious stones. Inside, many good-looking Holy Sons and Maidens wore waiter and waitresses uniforms, handling and serving in a busy manner.

Here, the Type 9 powerhouses were the main characters, and they formed their own cliques as they engaged in private conversations.

To them, such a gathering was extremely rare. Most of the time, they would be cultivating back at their own hideouts, taking advantage of the abundant energy and time. If it was not for the upcoming trial of the Tower of Babel, risking their lives for a chance to become True Gods and obtain treasures, they would not even head out to meet the best of their friends.

"Yue Zhong!!"

As Yue Zhong stepped into the palace, he immediately heard a

surprised cry.

Yue Zhong turned around and noticed 3 of the waiters and waitresses, who were Jody and his siblings.

Seeing familiar faces, Yue Zhong also felt a sense of warmth, as he walked over immediately.

Beside the siblings, there were other Holy Sons and Daughters. When they saw Yue Zhong and Holy Lord Tian Dou walking over, they were slightly nervous.

A Type 9 Holy Lord expert was a huge character of the Holy Heavens. They had unimaginable authority, and these Holy Sons and Daughters were still a long way. Other than a rare few who had heaven-defying talents, most of them felt the distance between themselves and the Holy Lords to be heaven and earth.

Coming to Jody, Yue Zhong asked curiously, "How come you guys are here?"

Inside this palace, the weakest was also a Type 8 powerhouse. Jody and his siblings were as weak as ants, compared to the rest of the service crew.

Jody looked at Yue Zhong with shock in his eyes, as well as a hint of greed and envy, but he quickly dismissed those emotions. He laughed lightly, "We're not too sure ourselves. The upper brass gave some orders and here we are!"

The big-breasted loli Bisiya stared at Yue Zhong with her large eyes, asking curiously, "Big brother Yue Zhong, have you already become a Type 9 expert?"

Hearing that, Jody and Lina also looked at Yue Zhong with a curious gaze. They knew that it had not even been a year since he joined the Holy Heavens, and to think that he would actually break through the barrier of mortal and a half-God, he was truly a freakish existence.

Yue Zhong chuckled, "That's right, I'm already a Type 9

powerhouse."

Although they were already mentally prepared, Jody and Lina could not help but be shocked, their gazes complicated.

The few Holy Sons and Daughters beside Jody and Lina also looked at Yue Zhong with a hint of envy.

Although the difference between a Type 8 and Type 9 was only one realm, it was all the difference between a half-God and human, a truly tough bridge to cross. All the Holy Sons and Daughters of the Holy Heavens were dragons amongst men, yet, those who could truly surpass that limitation, were rare and few.

Bisiya continued to stare at Yue Zhong with her beautiful eyes, as she asked expectantly, "That's great! Big brother Yue Zhong, can you ask for Bisiya to be assigned to you? Bisiya has learned many skills in this period, and is a very good attendant!"

Yue Zhong chuckled, as he waved his hands and handed 3 powerful Mech equipment to them, "Alright! I'll try to think of ways to get you 3 assigned to be with me. These are your gifts!"

Once Yue Zhong became a Holy Lord character, he would be someone with status and authority. It would be easy to arrange for some minor characters to be by his side.

Bisiya played with the Mech equipment, her face full of joy as she exclaimed, "Thank you!"

At this time, there was a soothing female giggling voice that rang out like chimes, as the Holy Lord Yue Hua came over, "Bisiya and the rest are people from our Northern Temple. Yue Zhong, if you want to transfer them, you should let us know, right?"

"Your Highness!!"

Seeing Holy Lord Yue Hua come over, the Holy Sons and Daughters all paid their respect, while Bisiya and her siblings also became solemn and greeted.

Yue Zhong chuckled, "So it was Holy Lord Yue Hua, the 3 of them are my friends, and I hope Holy Lord Yue Hua can bear the pain, to let me have them."

"Alright, alright, I will transfer them to you." She did not make things difficult for Yue Zhong, as she smiled coyly, "Yue Zhong, you actually managed to become a Type 9 expert in such a short time. Truly formidable, your potential is limitless."

Chapter 993: Pledge of Friendship!

Yue Zhong laughed humbly, "You're too kind!"

Holy Lord Yue Hua continued to gaze at him, "Yue Zhong, you've rushed back this time, I'm assuming it is to try the Tower of Babel as well?" Yue Zhong laughed lightly, "That's right, after all, isn't that the goal of every Type 9 powerhouse here?"

If it was not for this mysterious Tower of Babel, there would not be so many Type 9 powerhouse gathered here.

Holy Lord Yue Hua nodded slightly, her face flashing with a serious look, "There indeed is some secret contained within the Tower, allowing us to evolve to a True God. There are many Gold-Grade Treasures as well, but likewise, the risk and danger are extremely real. 90% of experts that enter would fall within. Only a small percentage would survive and make it out alive, or evolve to the True God stage. I hope that we can form a team and help each other out inside the Tower."

Every single Type 9 powerhouse had astonishing capabilities to suppress an entire world. However, the Tower of Babel was truly too terrifying, where even Type 9 powerhouses would fall. Holy Lord Yue Hua had no choice but to be prudent and seek allies.

Holy Lord Tian Dou, who had been silent all these while, spoke up, "Indeed, in order to live within the Tower, not only would we need lucky, but allies as well. Holy Lord Yue Hua, count me in." The Tower of Babel was too dangerous. Those who knew some intel on it would not underestimate it. Therefore, most of them were being careful.

Yue Zhong chuckled, "Count me in as well!"

After the 3 of them came to a consensus, this small group was formed.

With that, Yue Zhong was led by Holy Lord Tian Dou through the

banquet, to meet a number of Type 9 experts of the Holy Heavens.

Every single one of them was interesting characters, a few of them with strange personalities. However, they knew that the journey into the Tower was going to be dangerous, thus, making one more friend was better than one more enemy, thus, they still treated Yue Zhong somewhat friendly.

Time passed, and all of a sudden, the banquet became quiet, as the Central Temple's Heavenly Lord Lei Huang stepped onto the podium.

Yue Zhong gazed at Lei Huang, and was taken aback, "Strong!! This fellow is truly strong!! He's really a half-step True God powerhouse, and I'm not his match right now!"

In Yue Zhong's eyes, he could clearly see numerous strong strands of laws circulating around Lei Huang, dense and impenetrable. Although he just stood there, he was like a fiendgod that exuded a terrifying suppression on all around him.

"Today, our human race has a new Type 9, half-God expert, and he is Yue Zhong from our Central Temple." Lei Huang's gaze swept towards Yue Zhong, with an appreciative look evident in his eyes, "Yue Zhong, come on up."

Yue Zhong walked up and stood beside Lei Huang.

Lei Huang handed a white-gold card to Yue Zhong, and clapped, "From today on, Yue Zhong will be the Dragon-Tiger Holy Lord of our Central Temple. Come, everyone, applaud for our new Dragon-Tiger Holy Lord."

The rest of the Type 9 powerhouses below also wore smiles as they clapped and congratulated Yue Zhong on his appointment.

Lei Huang then smiled at Yue Zhong, and shot him an encouraging glance, "Come, say something to everyone."

Yue Zhong chuckled, and stepped up to the podium, as his face turned solemn, and his voice rang out, "I, Yue Zhong, vow to give

my all for the sake of our human race."

His words were just right, not too outstanding, nor instilled with truths, and the old foxes below only responded mildly, clapping for him. Lei Huang clapped Yue Zhong's shoulder, and gave him another encouraging smile, "Go and relax."

Once Lei Huang left, the rest also did not maintain their attention, immediately separating back into their own groups to exchange treasures and intelligence, preparing for the Tower of Babel.

After Lei Huang left, he stepped through a spatial gate, appearing in another room. There, the other 3 Heavenly Lords were awaiting.

Other than the Holy Lord from the Eastern Temple, the rest of the peak experts in Holy Heavens were gathered here.

At this time, Heavenly Lord Yan Tian frowned, his voice full of displeasure, "Lei Huang, that Yue Zhong was obviously an Oracle of this generation, why did you not bring him over?"

The power of the Holy Heavens was large, and their intelligence network vast. The moment Yue Zhong had shown up on their radar, they had gone to investigate all there was to him.

After all, this was Earth, and he had left so much of his traces here, it was impossible for him to hide his past.

Lei Huang turned solemn, "I know what you mean, Yan Tian. He might be an Oracle, but he's one of us, a human. I'm not going to let you make a move on him."

As the figures of the authority of the Holy Heavens, these 4 knew that Yue Zhong had the God-Devil Imprint, the Nucleus, the Physique, the Blood. These were all precious resources. If a half-step True God expert were to consume Yue Zhong, it would allow them to break through and reach the Type 10 realm, breaking out of the cage.

That was the wish and hope of every single half-God expert. Even

the 4 Heavenly Lords could not resist such an allure.

Heavenly Lord Lu Lie's voice turned frosty, "Are you intending to devour him for yourself?"

The moment Lu Lie spoke, the other 2 Heavenly Lords also turned to look at Lei Huang, their eyes cold. The tension became colder.

"Devour? Myself?" Lei Huang swept them all a gaze, his eyes filled with sarcasm. He sat on the sofa, stretching out his hands to make himself comfortable while laughing, "He's already a Type 9 expert, and has a Gold-Grade armor, who amongst you can kill him? If there's no chance to kill him in one blow, and when he becomes stronger again, we will end up as his prey and food. Haven't the lesson from ten thousand years ago been harsh enough?"

Hearing Lei Huang's words, Lu Lie and the others fell silent, as they reminisced about the past.

They were all clear how strong an Oracle was, one who had reached the Type 9 realm and possessed the God-Devil Physique. It was likely that only the half-step True-God powerhouses like the 4 Heavenly Lords could actually deal with these Oracles. However, against one with a Gold-grade armor, it was likely they could only defeat the party, but not kill for sure.

Furthermore, if a Type 9 Oracle were to flee, the entire Holy Heavens would be a risk.

An Oracle possessed the God-Devil Imprint, a heaven-defying treasure, and was basically Heaven Chosen. Their evolution speed was meteoric, and there had been such a character over thousands of years ago. He had been hunted by the peak experts of the human race, and in his rage, he had retaliated, and within 30 short years, almost all the human experts had been killed. In the end, he evolved into the Type 10 stage and broke through, escaping the confines of the cage.

If that Oracle at that time had not slaughtered the other experts of the other races as well, then the human race in the Holy Heavens and Great God World would have long become the slaves for other races. Heavenly Lord Ogani spoke up after a while, "What's Yue Zhong's attitude toward our human race?"

Lei Huang replied, "He declared that he was willing to give his all to the human race. Based on my judgment, when he spoke this sentence, he meant it."

Heavenly Lord Yan Tian also spoke out, "In that case, forget it. However, I still reckon that we need to keep an eye on him. Before the Tower of Babel opens, nothing else is more important."

The rest nodded silently.

The Tower of Babel was their biggest hope, after all, plotting to take down and devour a type 9 Oracle with a Gold-Grade Treasure was simply too difficult. Even if they did, there was no guarantee of a breakthrough. This was just a legend from thousands of years ago. In comparison, the Tower of Babel had more opportunities for them to break out of the cage and leave the world. After the 4 Heavenly Lords came to a decision, things became peaceful. With the passage of time, there was a dark palace enveloped by Devil Qi, seemingly devouring all light as it burst out of a Gate of Hell. It was over 200,000m in length and soared to the skies quickly.

When the palace shot out, it flew straight for the Pacific Ocean.

The moment it arrived in the airspace above the Pacific Ocean, it began to descend while applying harsh pressure on the weaker races below.

"Damn!!"

"Break for me!!"

"Bastard, break!!"

"...."

A number of soldiers from those races flew out, bellowing with rage as they executed their strongest moves, blasting towards the palace.

Under the pressure of the palace, many of the attacks were just destroyed, and the palace continued to press downwards, directly crushing the camps below, while turning the experts to minced meat.

After that, a huge and terrifying whirlpool appeared, sucking in the experts of these weaker races into the black palace.

Chapter 994: Dragon Mantis Beast Horde!

Seeing how vicious and savage the black palace was, many other races were alarmed and immediately felt hostile and guarded towards it.

"The 10,000-Devil Altar has arrived! The region of 20 li shall be our domain, those who trespass will be killed!!"

At this time, following a cold and insidious voice, the aura of half-step True God experts shot out, filled with violence and savagery.

When the experts heard that voice, many of their faces fell. Some of the weaker races near the 10,000-Devil Altar looked even more horrified as they fled as far as they could.

A half-step True God expert was a mighty character, and it was extremely easy for them to wipe out the weaker races. These weaker races did not want to die.

There were all sorts of races and species that had gathered at the Pacific Ocean, with many half-step True God warriors among them. Many were offended at how the Devils had barged in and acted in such a domineering manner, but no one stood out to challenge them.

The choice of the Devils was also extremely crafty, taking out weaker races, where the strongest were at most Type 8. They did not take on those who had Type 9 powerhouses, and those other races would not fight it out with the Devils for the sake of races different from their own.

After they caused a short commotion, things settled down and went back to normal.

Not too long after the 10,000-Devil Altar arrived, another Gate of Hell flashed, and a huge cocoon soared out, its length over 500,000m and it was a sickly green in color.

The moment this green cocoon soared out, it also shot towards the Pacific Ocean, and in a similar fashion, terrorized some of the weaker races.

This time, the weaker races were prepared, the moment they saw the cocoon, they scattered wildly, and gave up their own positions.

The cocoon descended and exuded a terrifying pressure.

"The Man-Eaters Divine Temple has arrived. The region of 20 li will be our domain, anyone who trespasses will be killed without mercy!"

With that savage roar, a half-step True God's presence exuded out, filling the lower-races around with fear.

As with that, there was no further commotion from them.

A 100,000m-tall pyramid flew out from a Gate of Hell, descending upon the Pacific Ocean.

Following that, a 200,000m-large black nest flew out from another Gate of Hell and landed at the Pacific Ocean as well.

With the passage of time, stronger races were appearing, landing at the Pacific Ocean, and filling up more of it.

There was no lack of enmity between certain races and species, but here, while waiting for the Tower of Babel to open, they maintained control and did not start a wanton slaughter.

Across the Pacific Ocean, there was a strange balance, as everyone waited for the Tower of Babel silently.

Yue Zhong had tried utilizing the satellites he had to observe it, but the result caused him to be astonished. The Tower of Babel actually stretched past the Milky Way, extending for light years to the vast universe way beyond.

As everyone waited expectantly, the day finally arrived, as the huge doors that were the entrance finally opened up.

"It's open!!"

"It's finally open!!"

"Go go go!!"

"..."

Seeing the opening of the entrance, everyone became excited and fought to enter it.

The originally quiet factions also began to move out, getting into their agreed groups as they headed to the huge gates.

Before entering it, all of them did not intend to clash with any of their competitors. "What thick energy!! Is this the Tower of Babel?! Truly a sacred ground! If I just stay here for a year, I can definitely breach the Type 8 realm!"

"That's a True-Dragon Fruit!! Legends have it that it's only found on a true dragon corpse, and it takes over a thousand years to bloom!! Amazing!!"

"..."

Inside the Tower of Babel, the energy was abundant, and rare treasures and herbs could be seen almost immediately upon entering. It was even more magical than Earth, and many of the experts who were at the peak of their own bottlenecks, charged in, took some of the resources and within a day, they had broken through.

Many experts soared through on their various battleships, castles, cocoons, absorbing the energy, fighting for the treasures.

Yue Zhong, Holy Lord Tian Dou, Holy Lord Yue Hua as well as the Holy Lord Yin He, Holy Lord Wu Shuang, and Holy Lord Bing Feng, the 6 of them formed a small team and flew out of the battleship, taking in the abundant energy in the Tower.

With a wave of Yue Zhong's hands, countless Mechs flew out and began to harvest the numerous precious fruits, delivering them to his hand. The other Holy Lords also had their own means to pick

up and keep the treasures.

At the entrance of the Tower, most of these precious herbs and fruits were also beneficial to Type 9 powerhouses. These Type 9 experts would naturally not pass over them.

Yue Zhong frowned slightly, as he asked, "Is the Tower of Babel like this?"

Holy Lord Yue Hua had a similar expression, as she chuckled bitterly, "The Tower is extremely mysterious, each time, the experience is different. Our previous experience was not like this."

All of a sudden, there was a cry of shock, "Mutant Beast horde!! It's a Beast horde!!"

Yue Zhong's heart turned cold, as he channeled his vision, activating his God-Devil Eyes to observe ahead.

About 10 li away, there was a huge horde of Mutant Beasts flying over. They were 2m in size, each of them possessing dinosaur heads, huge wings, front limbs resembling praying mantises, and powerful velociraptor-like hind legs.

"Type 8 Mutant Beasts, Dragon Mantis Beast, a terrifying fast creature, the innate attribute is speed. Its destructive abilities can even cause spatial tears. The only weakness is low defense. A horde of 3,000 beasts could easily surround and kill a Type 9 powerhouse."

The moment Yue Zhong saw those beasts, the information flowed to his consciousness, and he knew all there was to know about them. The 3,000 Dragon Mantis Beasts had the ability to slaughter a Type 9 powerhouse. They were rushing over both in the skies and on the land, their numbers endless. Even if a half-step True God were to barge through, he or she might not survive.

The speed of those Type 8 Dragon Mantis Beast was extremely terrifying, even exceeding that of some weaker Type 9 powerhouses.

A Type 7 expert had just turned around when a Dragon Mantis Beast shot past, and the front limbs slashed out, slicing him into multiple pieces. Behind, the other beasts lunged at the corpse and gobbled up the pieces within an instant.

The terrifying beast horde surged forwards, and any expert of the Type 8 realm and below were instantly eliminated, without being able to resist.

The countless Type 8 experts of other species tried to retaliate, some of them even activating their domains, but they were also killed without putting much of a resistance.

By now, many Type 9 experts had already rushed in, and they all operated their powerful domains towards the Dragon Mantis Beast Horde.

Faced with the numerous domains, many of the Dragon Mantis Beasts immediately burst apart in a shower of flesh and blood.

However, the beasts were formidable, their front claws containing some principles of Slashing, and they continued to surge towards the Type 9 powerhouses, their claws slicing out.

With the relentless assault, some initial-Type 9 experts were also sliced apart, and even when they tore open space to swallow these beasts, they would be sliced by the retaliating forces. Soon, they fell into a disadvantageous situation as well.

Under the assault of the Dragon Mantis Beast horde, many life forms were sliced apart amidst screams of pain and agony, which rang throughout the first level of the Tower.

"Ah!!! How could this be?! How could I be killed by these lowly beasts?! They're just Type 8 Mutant Beasts!! I'm a half-God expert!!"

Near a mountain of Dragon Mantis corpses, one Type 9 creature that looked similar to a Dino-warrior had countless wounds, his body bleeding profusely with gold blood. His legs had been sliced

off, and he was roaring with unwillingness.

Before he finished, numerous Dragon Mantis Beasts pounced onto him, and sliced him apart in a second, before proceeding to consume him.

"A Type 9 expert had actually fallen!!"

Seeing that, many were shocked and felt a chill. A Type 9 powerhouse could easily be an overlord of a world. And yet, one had been killed in this horde. The Dragon Mantis Beasts were truly terrifying.

When the first Type 9 expert died, before long, more began to fall under the constant barrage and unending numbers.

Chapter 995: Fight!

Seeing the terrifying horde of Dragon Mantis Beasts, everyone's countenance turned ugly as they retreated madly

"Ah!!"

"We can't go out!!"

"Shit, we can't go out!!"

"..."

Many of the weaker races tried to leave the Tower of Babel, however, when they slammed into the energy shield, they were immediately vaporized, leaving behind screams of misery and unwillingness. Those human experts who were still picking up the precious fruits outside were horrified and fled back to their battleships. From the human battleships, Heavenly Lord Lei Huang's voice rang out, "Attack, kill our way in!!" The thousand-strong fleet immediately got into action, maintaining a steady speed as they opened their throttles and headed towards the swarm of Dragon Mantis Beasts.

In that instant, countless beams of lights blasted out at the Mutant Beasts. With the joint effort of the humans, over thousands were being slaughtered every second, and pieces of flesh and blood splattered all over the ground below, nourishing the soil. The horde of Dragon Mantis Beasts was being cleared in large numbers, however, there were still groups of them that managed to weave through the rain of firepower, flying towards the battleships. At that moment, the Type 8 Holy Sons and Daughters appeared, donning their enhanced armor, as they clashed against the Dragon Mantis Beasts.

The human fleet was in a formation, with every battleship being the nucleus, with numerous experts providing constant support, cursing and weakening the Dragon Mantis Beasts, while blessing

and buffing the Holy Sons and Daughters. With their support, the gap between the two sides was gradually widened, and the Dragon Mantis Beasts were being taken down easily. However, due to the ferocious nature of those beasts, in their retaliation, there would be unfortunate human experts that got torn apart.

Witnessing the might of the battleship fleet, many of the experts of the other races and species quickly gathered near the formation, in order to live on, as they resisted the beasts with their own formations and arrays as well.

Likewise, the human fleet needed the foreign races to help take on some of the pressure, hence, they did not act against the foreign races.

"Chance!!" Yue Zhong took a look at the Dragon Mantis Beasts and felt excited. He flew out of the battleship, and grabbed out at thin air, as the atmospheric energy congealed to form a huge claw, and squashed 10 Dragon Mantis Beasts in a flash.

The pure streams of life force surged into his body, refreshing his Spirit, and he grabbed at the 10 nuclei as well. The Dragon Mantis Beasts had high offense and low defense, with Yue Zhong's current strength, he could easily take out 10 in one go.

After that, he waved his hands, and the 5,000 Mech Bugs that he obtained from Zu Yuan Ting flew out, pouncing towards the Dragon Mantis Beasts.

As the 5,000 Mech Bugs clashed against the Dragon Mantis Beasts, they began to devour the Mutant Beasts, leaving not even any nuclei behind. The Dragon Mantis Beasts were savage as well. Their blades were incredibly sharp, capable of even ripping space, and many Mech Bugs were torn apart. When Yue Zhong released the Mech Bugs, he waved his hands and revealed another 105 Fighter Mechs, equipped with C-Grade particle cannons, which immediately began firing at the Dragon Mantis Beasts in the sky, tearing them apart.

After he had deployed the Mech army, Yue Zhong started to grab out at thin air, congealing multiple claws that grabbed out at patches of the Mutant Beasts, crushing their bodies, and keeping their corpses as well as nuclei into his Storage Ring.

As the horde of Dragon Mantis Beasts was being wiped out, Yue Zhong's accumulated Life Force was also growing rapidly. These Dragon Mantis Beasts might be nightmares to other powerhouses, but to Yue Zhong, they were a treasure trove for him to increase his strength.

If it were outside, other than the Holy Heavens, it was impossible for so many Type 8 Mutant Beasts to appear. Furthermore, it was likely that other Type 9 experts might be aggravated outside, causing an all-out war between the humans and Mutant Beasts. However, there was no problem slaughtering so many Type 8 Dragon Mantis Beast, nor any consequences that he would have to worry about. Holy Lord Yin He, who was surrounded by what seemed like a replica of the Milky Way, eyed Yue Zhong's slaughter of the Dragon Mantis Beasts and frowned, "Does this fellow not know how to conserve some energy? This is just the first level, and if he were to expend all his stamina, what will he do later?"

Holy Lord Yue Hua laughed in a charming manner, "I think he knows what he's doing. Look, he hasn't even activated his domain yet." The strongest trump card of most Type 9 powerhouses was usually their domain, once activated, most life forms within the domain would be slaughtered.

However, with the spatial laws on the blades of the Dragon Mantis Beasts, while the domains might be able to eliminate many of them, the domains stood the risk of being sliced apart by these Beasts.

Once a Type 9 powerhouse's domain was sliced or damaged, their strength would suffer a drop for a short period. Hence, other than those who were caught in a swarm of the beasts, few would actually utilize their domains to deal with these Dragon Mantis

Beasts.

A single Type 8 might not mean much to a Type 9 powerhouse, but with enough numbers, a Type 9 powerhouse would have to be careful.

As the human fleet of battleships charged through the Dragon Mantis Beasts, their cannons fired out constantly, while the experts constantly executed their techniques to take out as many as they could.

With every second passed in this chaotic battleground, many experts fell due to the savage and vicious nature of the Dragon Mantis Beasts. "What is this?!" "Ah!!" "Help!!"

"..."

There were still experts from the other worlds entering the Tower of Babel, however, before they could even pluck any fruits on the ground, they would be torn apart by the Dragon Mantis Beasts that had swarmed at the entrance.

One black-caped man who was shrouded in dark qi stepped into the Tower of Babel and was instantly met with the assault of 10 Dragon Mantis Beasts.

The black-caped man swept them a gaze, his brows furrowing slightly as he muttered, "Damn, so many Dragon Mantis Beasts. Seems like if I don't expend some energy to take care of them, I can't pass through."

The Dragon Mantis Beasts had gotten to within 20m of the black-caped man, when their bodies started to rot, melting into puddles on the ground.

With a wave of his hands, a golden flag, engraved with a true dragon, qilin, and a vermillion bird, 3 mythical beasts, appeared. He waved it, causing it to glow, and a True Dragon emerged from the flag, roaring to life as it pounced into the horde of Dragon Mantis Beasts, exuding a powerful might, tearing apart the weaker

Mutant Beasts into pieces.

The black-robed man flashed, and stepped on the head of the golden true dragon, channeling his energy as the beast slaughtered the Dragon Mantis Beasts in its way.

Initially, there were some experts lying in wait, hoping to fish in muddied waters, had no choice but to release their techniques and charged at the Dragon Mantis Beasts horde. The only way to survive was to attack and proceed.

On the other side, although the Dragon Beast Horde was still terrifying, their numbers were diminishing.

The fleet of battleships had paid the price of 5 ships, forcefully forging ahead for over 10,000 li, slaughtering a bloody path out, before they came to another domain, filled with countless precious fruits, their fragrance thick and heavy, and the atmospheric energy abundant. "Those are Dragons of Vitality! It's rumored that only sacred grounds where energy was thick enough could produce such items!! To think there're so many here!!"

"That's a 9-Leaf Primordial Fruit! Eating one can increase the chance of a half-step Type 9 powerhouse breaking through by 0.1%! There are so many!! There's at least a 100 of them just over there!! They're mine!!" "..."

Inside this region, the thick Dragons of Vitality floated through the air, while precious herbs and fruits could be seen everywhere on the ground. These were world-shaking items, empowering half-step Type 9 characters. Not even the Holy Heavens had so many resources.

Many people turned mad with glee and greed at the sight of those precious resources. They quickly soared out, pouncing towards the items they liked. These were important items for their breakthrough. It was precise because of such opportunities that many Holy Sons and Daughters were willing to risk their lives.

Even the Type 9 powerhouses, including Yue Zhong, were extremely moved when they caught sight of the treasures and resources. They quickly soared out and helped themselves to the collection as well.

There were many other fruits that were beneficial to those of the Type 9 realm as well. At one particular patch, there was 10 9-Leaf Primordial Fruit, and a Type 8 Goose-man flew over, waving his hands and kept the fruits. Another Holy Son dressed in a silver battle armor landed in front of the Goose-man and barked out, "Hand over those 9-Leaf Primordial Fruits!"

The Type 8 Goose-man snapped back, "Why should I? I obtained those first!"

Chapter 996: Bull-head Dragon Devil!

The human Holy Son had an icy look, "Lowly mutant life forms if it was not for our human race, you guys would be dead. You still dare to snatch resources, are you looking to die?"

Many foreign races viewed the human race as pigs and dogs, treating them as one of the lowest life forms. As for the human race, many of them also looked down upon the foreign races.

The Type 8 Gooseman surveyed the surroundings, and held back his fury, "The items here belong to no one. Whoever is capable enough to obtain them deserves so. Your human race might be powerful now, but you cannot be unreasonable."

Here, the human race with their fleets and arrays were the strongest. As for the foreign species, they were like scattered sand grains, although they had the numbers, if they were to fight against humans, they would be wiped out 9 times out of 10.

"Hong Ji, why bother wasting your breath with this type of trash? Since he's not willing to hand it over, just kill him."

There was a sound of light laughter, as a flash of light appeared, and the Type 8 Gooseman was sliced in many parts. In the middle of the gory scene, was a golden-hair man with a huge blade. Hong Ji's eyes also flashed, as he laughed savagely, "I got it, this trash are enemies of our human race, it's best to wipe them out."

The young man then held up the storage bag of the Gooseman, and offered it to Hong Ji, "Shall we share?" Hong Ji nodded, "Sure!"

From afar, 5 Goosemen saw all that had transpired, and they were filled with rage as they lunged over, "Bastards!! Go to hell!!" Hong Ji's eyes flashed with a look of viciousness, as he charged towards the 5 Goosemen, "A few more have come looking for death!"

The young man with the gold hair also laughed out, flying beside Hong Ji.

Although there were many precious fruits over here, to the huge crowd of people, it was not enough. Thus, the situation quickly escalated to a fight for resources, with many slaughtering their competitors.

Those foreign species and races that had followed behind the humans to enter this land were also quickly dragged into the brawl, as both sides became even more savage.

With Hong Ji and the gold-haired fellow being the ignition spark, the entire situation escalated quickly.

Yue Zhong stood to one side, frowning as he observed their slaughter. He had no intention nor wished to see both sides engaging in a slaughter.

The fact that the humans could push through the horde of Dragon Mantis Beasts, was partly due to the efforts of the foreign races as well. It was because many of them were cannon fodder, that the fleet of battleships could proceed with lower casualties. Without the cannon fodder, the humans would have suffered a greater loss.

"Courting death!" All of a sudden, Yue Zhong frowned, and barked out furiously, as he sent a fist towards a patch of space.

At that instant, there was a sudden shower of blood, as a humanoid-chameleon corpse fell out of space, hurtling towards the ground.

Yue Zhong swept the corpse a glance, and made his decision, "Seems like I have to make my move!!"

Currently, the conflict was extremely brutal, with both sides red-eyed from the killing, as though they would not rest till the other side was wiped out. Even if Yue Zhong did not attack the foreign races, they would not hesitate to attack him. With a thought, Yue

Zhong waved his hands, and the remaining 4,000 Mech Bugs soared out, pouncing towards the foreign species. The 4,000 Mechs were impervious to normal melee attacks, as well as most elemental attacks. Furthermore, when they consumed their prey, there would be nothing left. As the foreign races were being killed one after another, their life force would be absorbed by Yue Zhong, consolidating within him.

Having made his choice, Yue Zhong charged into the midst of the foreign races, blasting outward with his palms, blasting a number of them. At the same time, he continued to consume many of the precious herbs and treasures that he swept up. The countless treasures here were extremely beneficial to Yue Zhong. He had harvested quite a number, thus allowing him to fight and eat at the same time.

"Go to hell!!"

When Yue Zhong had just killed a half-step Type 9 Devil-head and absorbed his life force, it ignited the rest of the accumulated energy, and they surged through his golden nucleus, turning into a golden color.

As the gold energy surged through his consciousness, it formed into a golden child, who looked identical to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong looked at the kid, and had an understanding, "This is the Nascent Soul formed by my soul. When it has evolved into an indestructible soul, I will be able to become a True God warrior.

Most Type 9 half-step experts would have condensed the golden blood and bone marrows, and the only step left for the final breakthrough was the soul. A True God who possessed an indestructible soul would be able to recover his body even if there was only a sliver of will left.

With an indestructible soul, a True God had much more control of the energy around them, together with the higher laws and principles comprehended, a Type 9 basically had no chance in

front of a True God.

At the moment when Yue Zhong congealed his Nascent Soul, Yue Zhong finally broke through to the mid-stage of the Type 9 realm.

It was a tough journey for Type 9 experts, most stuck at the initial-Type 9 realm. If it were outside, for Yue Zhong to reach this stage, it would have been an arduous journey as well. However, with the abundant energy here, together with the life force and resources he was sweeping up, he had evolved once again, increasing his strength.

When he reached this stage, he kept silent, pressing his power level down back to the initial-Type 9 realm, as he continued on his slaughter and obtained many precious fruits.

Even if he did not need them, He could give them to Luo Qing Qing, Yin Shuang, Ji Qing Wu, Chi Yang, Hu Yi and the rest, helping them to improve faster.

As the slaughter continued, all of a sudden, the ground shook, as a 100m-tall Bull-head Dragon Devil appeared, his hands wielding a golden ax, and his body covered with scales. Each step he took caused the ground to rumble. "Are you all damn intruders?! You can go to hell for me!!"

The half-step True God Bull-head Dragon Devil's eyes were bloodshot, as he roared out and channeled a powerful energy into his ax.

At that moment, the surrounding seemed to change, as the atmospheric energy gathered on the ax in his hands, as it burst forth with an intense, destructive aura.

"Die!"

He roared out, and sliced out, as the green aura around his ax formed into a lightning web that shot towards Yue Zhong and the rest of the tower challengers.

The lightning web seemed to have materialized out of nowhere,

catching many of the Holy Sons, Daughters, as well as the experts of the foreign races, by surprising, vaporizing them.

"Damn it!!"

"Bastard!!"

"..."

Many of the Type 9 human experts that could not resist the allure of the resources below and had flown down below, when faced with this sudden, destructive force, immediately channeled their shields, domains and all sorts of defensive abilities.

"Ah! Save me!!"

Under the assault of the green thunder, one particular Type 9 expert had his energy shield, Qi shield, and even his domain, broken through, and his body was blitzed by the thunder, turning into a golden skeleton, as it fell and became nourishment for the herbs and flowers below.

"No!! Ah!!"

"Help!!"

"..."

As the miserable screams rang out, 7 initial-Type 9 human experts, as well as 4 Type 9 experts of the foreign races all turned to dust.

The thunder net was mainly cast in the direction of the human fleet of battleships, and under that assault, a number of C-Grade Battleships and their shields disintegrated immediately, while the people within died.

A single strike from this 100m-tall Bull-head Dragon Devil had cost 11 Type 9 experts and over 2 million lives, be it from the humans or the foreign races, as well as 200 C-Grade Battleships.

"That's a Gold-Grade Axe!!"

"Damn it!! A half-step True God, with a Gold-Grade Battle Axe, this is basically an invincible existence!"

"How do we defeat such a thing?!"

"..."

Turning to look at that Bull-head Dragon Devil, the expressions of the numerous experts turned into despair.

A half-step True God expert, coupled with a Gold-Grade weapon, was already a peak-existence on this plane, and could easily devastate many of the powerhouses present.

An even more terrifying scene then occurred. Behind that Bull-head Dragon Devil, another 99 similar monsters of varying heights all appeared, each of them wielding a silver ax. They were all exuding an aura at the Type 9 realm.

The moment the other Bull-head Dragon Devils appeared, they joined the half-step True God powerhouse leader of theirs, charging straight for the humans.

Chapter 997: Bull-Crusher Devil!

The might of these Type 9 Bull-head Dragon Devils were terrifying. In an instant, they had charged into the fray and were slashing out with their axes at the humans and foreign species alike.

Under their assault, a huge number of human experts and foreign species powerhouse were sliced apart, their blood splattering everywhere.

"Damn it!!"

"Everyone, let's join forces to defeat these freaks!!"

"..." Forced by the Type 9 Bull-head Dragon Devils, the conflict between the humans and foreign races were discarded, and they joined hands once more to clash against the Bull-head Dragon Devils.

However, the strength of the half-step True God was no joke, as he waved the gold ax about, slicing out in a frenzy, channeling the thunder and vaporizing many experts in an instant.

Faced with those devastating attacks, many initial-Type 9 experts could not withstand them and were wiped out.

"Beast, I'll take you down!!"

At this moment, Heavenly Lord Lei Huang wielded his Gold-Grade Scarlet Halberd, charging through the skies. His half-step True God aura exuded out, and the Halberd also consumed the surrounding qi, forming a small, dark whirlpool, as he thrust out at the Bull-head Dragon Devil. "Right on time!!"

The Bull-head Dragon Devil let out a sharp howl, raising his own Gold Battle Axe, and fired out numerous lightning strikes at the whirlpool.

Hong!

Following a loud, earth-shaking roar, the ground split apart, and a powerful shockwave shot outwards in all directions.

Under the terrifying shockwave, a number of Type 6 experts who had followed the main force in, hoping to fish in muddied waters, were instantly jolted dead due to the powerful vibrations coursing through their bodies.

Although many knew that the Tower of Babel was dangerous, even so, many were willing to take the risk in the hopes of ascending beyond their current strength. However, just the shockwaves from the battle between 2 peak experts were enough to kill them.

Many Type 7 powerhouses were also affected by the terrifying blast, as they spat out blood, their body in disarray, and they almost lost control of their bodies.

After that initial clash, Heavenly Lord Lei Huang immediately charged at the half-step True God Bull-head Dragon Devil.

Both of them were half-step True God experts, using Gold-Grade treasures. Both sides engaged in a tough clash, causing the space to rock itself.

With Heavenly Lord Lei Huang holding off the Bull-head Dragon Devil, the battleships took the chance to soar up into the air, firing at the group of Bull-head Dragon Devils.

There were a number of D-Grade Battleships, with their cannons capable of taking out many of those Type 9 monsters.

However, the retaliation of the Bull-head Dragon Devils was also swift, as they charged and destroyed whatever ships they could lay their hands on. Under the assault of the group of Bull-head Dragon Devils, many of the human battleships exploded and the human experts within were vaporized as well.

Facing the Bull-head Dragon Devils, the human side sent out many Type 9 experts to clash against them.

Hong!!

A loud explosion occurred, as a Type 9 Bull-head Dragon Devil waved his ax, cleaving out at a C-Grade Battleship.

The C-Grade Battleships was instantly sliced in two, causing a terrifying explosion, which instantly consumed everything around it.

Watching the explosion, the Bull-head Dragon Devil revealed a cruel and savage smile.

Suddenly, he felt a sense of danger, and swung his battle ax as he turned, slashing out at the void.

"You're too slow!"

There was a cold voice, as Yue Zhong appeared on top of the Bull-head Dragon Devil like a ghost, his fist swinging out with a radiant gold light, slamming into the devil's head.

With a loud blast, Yue Zhong's strength burst out, instantly crushing the head of the devil into bits. Holy Lord Yue Hua, who was taking on a Type 9 Bull-head Dragon Devil with her moonlight techniques, saw how Yue Zhong took down one with shock in her heart, "What a terrifying fellow, the physique of the Bull-head Dragon Devil is so tough, yet he actually destroyed it with a single punch. What a freak! The time he took to evolve was short, how is he even stronger than me?!"

After killing that Bull-head Dragon Devil, Yue Zhong dug out the Type 9 nucleus in the head, and immediately used his Stealth, disappearing entirely.

In a frontal clash, the Stealth Armor was not of much use to a Type 9 expert, however, combined with Yue Zhong's own Stealth ability, in this chaotic battlefield, he was like a fish in water.

As he continued to weave through the area, more Type 9 Bull-head Dragon Devils fell at his hands. The abundant life force coursed through him, accumulating within his body.

Each time he killed one, the benefits that he obtained was a hundred times better than swallowing a hundred tonnes of the treasures below. After all, a Type 9 expert was a half-step True God expert, their life force extremely close to God, and was the best nourishment for Yue Zhong.

After 20 of the Type 9 Bull-head Dragon Devils were killed by Yue Zhong, he finally attracted the attention of the rest of the group.

"Human, die!!"

One of the 80m-tall devils, with a peak-Type 9 realm flapped his wings and appeared in front of Yue Zhong. The silver ax in his hands glowed brightly with the thunder energy their race was proficient in and sliced out viciously at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong frowned, and pulled out a silver ax himself, channeling the powerful might of his God-Devil Physique, slashing back at the Bull-head Dragon Devil.

With a loud blast, the peak-Type 9 Bull-head Dragon Devil was knocked back a few steps, each of his footstep causing a deep indent in the ground.

Yue Zhong was also sent flying a few hundred meters by the rebound.

There was shock and disbelief on the face of the devil, as he thought, "What terrifying strength, he's just an initial-realm Type 9 expert, how is he capable of such might?!"

The Bull-head Dragon Devil were known for their tyrannical physique and strength, and of those in the same realms, few could take them on. That was why he was so shocked when he was knocked back by Yue Zhong's blow.

"Damn it, it's not good to engage too long with this freak!"

Yue Zhong swept the peak-Type 9 Bull-head Dragon Devil a look and frowned. He then flickered and disappeared, not willing to engage with the monster.

The Bull-head Dragon Devil was enraged, as he roared out madly while chasing after Yue Zhong, "Where do you think you're escaping to?! Human!! I will tear you apart!!" As he ran, Yue Zhong continued to observe his surroundings. Suddenly, his eyes brightened, "That's the Devil Clan, they're engaged with the monsters of the Tower as well. Good, time to unleash a massacre!!"

About a thousand li away from the human battlefield, the 10,000-Devil Altar experts were similarly engaged with a bunch of spear-wielding Goat-head Dragon Devils.

The strength of the Goat-head Dragon Devils was not far off from the Bull-head Dragon Devils, thus, when they surrounded the Devils of the 10,000-Devil Altar, the slaughter was one-sided.

With a thought, Yue Zhong opened up his Wings of Hope, flapping his wings and charging right towards the 10,000-Devil Altar experts.

The Bull-head Dragon Devil continued to chase after Yue Zhong.

When Yue Zhong shot forward without holding back, he quickly traversed the distance of a thousand li like a meteor, slamming into a Type 9 Black Rip Devil, whose body was covered in thick Devil Qi.

The Black Rip Devil had also sensed Yue Zhong, instantly opening up a spatial tear in front of him to divert Yue Zhong's attack.

Yue Zhong grabbed out, instantly dispersing the tear, while his body slammed into the Black Rip Devil like a shooting star.

The impact caused the Type 9 Black Rip Devil to split apart, as blood flowed everywhere.

"Damn human!! I will drain you of your blood!!"

Seeing that scene, a Type 9 Blood-sucking Devil, whose looks were handsome, roared out in rage, and channeled his blood energy, shooting towards Yue Zhong with a specter-like speed,

slashing out at Yue Zhong's heart.

"I'm sorry, you don't have that ability, break for me!!"

Yue Zhong laughed coldly, his fist containing a terrifying might as he punched out. At that moment, the Type 9 Blood-sucking Devil's Blood Law disintegrated, while the expert himself became a corpse that hurtled to the ground. The God-Devil Physique evolved from the system was the strongest physique in the world. After Yue Zhong reached the Type 9 realm, his physique alone had even surpassed some weaker True God experts. His body was his strongest weapon, and unless the opponent of the same rank had a Gold-Grade weapon, they would not be able to take on a single fist from him.

"Lie Hong is dead!"

"He was actually killed by that human!!" "Damn it!!! Kill him!! Kill that damn human!"

"..."

Seeing the Blood-sucking Devil killed by Yue Zhong in a single fist, the savage Devils did not shudder not shrink away with fear, instead, they pounced towards Yue Zhong, fueled by their intense desire to kill.

Chapter 998: Red Jade Mantis Horde!

Yue Zhong had an icy and cruel look, his fists slamming out at those Type 9 Devils.

Those who were at the initial-Type 9 and mid-Type 9 realms, as long as they got struck by Yue Zhong's fist, their bodies would burst apart.

After 4 of their experts fell under Yue Zhong's hands, none of them got close to Yue Zhong any further. Instead, they channeled their laws and began to execute their techniques from afar. At that instant, numerous black beams containing laws struck towards Yue Zhong. Right behind Yue Zhong, the peak-Type 9 Bull-head Dragon Devil also roared out furiously, the silver ax in his hands covered with countless green lightning bolts, striking at Yue Zhong as well.

"Armor!"

Yue Zhong barked out coldly, and the Gold-Grade Battle Armor covered his body, radiating brightly while the 9 Type 9 nuclei behind shone, and a powerful strength coursed through him, pushing his strength to the peak of the Type 9-realm. After obtaining that fearsome strength, Yue Zhong charged through the sky, dodging most of the lightning, while some struck his armor, and bounced off, striking the Devils.

The attacks of the Devils slammed into Yue Zhong and was also deflected off to hit the other Devils by the side.

The lightning attack of the Bull-head Dragon Demon was extremely powerful, striking the Devils, immediately causing them to go numb, and they went into shock.

At that instant, Yue Zhong charged through the Devils, punching out like he was passing judgment, immediately blasting their bodies apart.

As for the attacks of those Type 9 Devils, when they were deflected off, they did not manage to harm Yue Zhong much.

The peak-Type 9 Bull-head Dragon Demon was like an assistant to Yue Zhong, his lightning attacks completely bouncing off Yue Zhong, striking the rest of the Devils, causing them to be stunned momentarily before Yue Zhong finished them.

The Gold-Grade Armor was able to reflect most Type 9 attacks, and in such a chaotic battlefield, it was extremely effective. Yue Zhong continued to weave through the battlefield, invincible and everywhere he went, the Devils would be killed, heavily injured, and those who could flee far to avoid him. Following Yue Zhong's wanton slaughter of the Devils, the inner life force in him was accumulating swiftly. The life force of the Type 9 experts were the most precious ingredients.

"Audacious human!!"

As Yue Zhong was going on a slaughter, the half-step True God experts hidden with the Heavenly Devil Palace let out an enraged roar. A burst of Devil Qi churned out, as it reformed into a hideous-looking expert, who had deep-set eyes, a hooked nose, and 8 spider legs behind his back. This was an expert from the Heavenly Spider Devil race.

The Heavenly Spider Devil race had a terrifying strength and loved to devour all sorts of life forms. There were some who were even able to take on and consume Type 9 powerhouses while they were still at the half-step Type 9 realm. Their combat strength was formidable. Of course, they were low in numbers, with only a few hundred, however, each and every single member of their race was a terrifying existence. The half-step True God expert began to threaten Yue Zhong, "Human, hand over that armor to the mighty King Jeffery. I can pardon your offenses and take you in as my servant. You will be allowed to reign over 150 million people, and become their king, and partake in the pleasures of life. Furthermore, as long as I can break through this cage and escape

from the world, I will help you to become a true Devil-level expert, immortal and invincible!! If you choose to decline, when I capture you, I will tear you limb from limb, sinew from your tendons, and throw you into a pit of worms, to be fed to those bugs!"

When the human race broke through this cage, they would consider the Type 10 experts as True God warriors. However, to the Devil Race, they called them the True Devil warriors.

"Oh! I choose to take down your head and flush it down the toilet bowl." Yue Zhong chuckled coldly, and his body flickered, transcending space as he made for the half-step True God Jeffery.

"Fool! The might of a half-step True Devil expert is nothing the likes of an ant like you can understand!! I shall show you the distance between the both of us!!"

Jeffery shot into the sky, eyeing Yue Zhong as he laughed coldly. With his fingers outstretched, black lines containing laws shot out, assaulting Yue Zhong.

Facing those countless lines, Yue Zhong directly executed his strongest technique, the Cosmic Finger, as a cosmos suddenly appeared and pressed down on the lines.

"A True-God technique eh? It might be powerful, but you are still too weak!! You can't even bring out 30% of its power!! What a waste! Let me show you how I'll break it!!"

Jeffery looked at the cosmos and laughed coldly. His black lines trembled slightly, and stuck onto the cosmos before a huge suction began to exert through them. The cosmos then began to shrink at a pace visible to the eye, before finally disappearing.

At the same time, the lines continued to surge forwards at a frenzied speed, spinning around Yue Zhong.

The black lines did not specifically attack Yue Zhong, instead, they stuck onto him with some strange sticky law, and wrapped around him, turning into a black cocoon.

There was no offensive strength in those lines, thus, the Gold Battle Armor had no way of reflecting anything, and could only allow the strings to wrap around Yue Zhong.

Inside the cocoon, Yue Zhong's face fell as he struggled. The lines seemed to have a life of their own, continuing to wrap around him. At the same time, they exuded a sweet scent, causing one to slowly go into a stupor.

Yue Zhong only took a whiff and he was starting to become drowsy. His thoughts slowed slightly before he regained clarity, and he was taken aback, "Not good!! What a terrifying half-step True God expert. This fellow did not even utilize any Gold-Grade treasure, and I almost fell at his hands. If it was not for the Battle Armor, I would have been captured!"

A single second to a Type 9 powerhouse was enough to let them execute over 100,000 fits, and capture Yue Zhong a hundred times over. If it was not for the Battle Armor still protecting Yue Zhong, he would truly be ensnared.

These black lines were called the Black Devil Silk, and one of Jeffery's strongest techniques. Once caught, a half-step True God expert would lose control over his body, and be captured.

"Burn for me!!"

With a thought, Yue Zhong channeled his Flame Domain with all his might, and the terrifying God-Devil Flames burst out with him at the center, incinerating everything in its path, burning up the Black Devil Silk as well.

The Flame Domain was the bane of all silk and strings-related domains. Under the burning of the God-Devil Flames, the Black Devil Silk around Yue Zhong began to disintegrate, turning into flames as they floated away.

At the same time that the silk was burning up, Yue Zhong charged through the broken cocoon and retreated explosively.

In this battle with Jeffery, Yue Zhong had seen clearly the difference in strength. Even if he had the Gold-Grade Battle Armor, against a half-step True God-expert, it was still possible to be defeated. He had killed many Type 9 Devils and had earned plenty of life force. A retreat was the best option for him right now.

If all the half-step True Devil-experts of the 10,000-Devil Altar were to act, then Yue Zhong might not even be able to escape.

"Fleeing?"

Jeffery had not expected Yue Zhong to actually escape from his Black Devil Silk and he was full of shock. With a flash, he immediately turned into a beam of light that chased after Yue Zhong.

After equipping the Battle Armor, Yue Zhong pushed with all his speed, even surpassing some half-step True God experts. Jeffery went all out but was unable to close the distance between the both of them.

Yue Zhong chose to head towards the direction of the Goat-head Dragon Devils and Bull-head Dragon Devils. After more than 50,000 li, there was a huge black nest on the ground, reaching over 500m in height, and there was a powerful ring of light that seemed to radiate outwards, containing spatial laws.

Yue Zhong stared at that huge ring of light and sensing the pursuit of Jeffery, he gritted his teeth and shot towards the light, "That is the definitely the door to the next level of the Tower of Babel!! There's no time to think, I'd better head up first!"

Just as Yue Zhong was nearing that huge nest, out flew numerous Type 9 Red Jade Mantises, each of them looking like scarlet crystals, shooting towards Yue Zhong with insane speed.

In an instant, over 50,000 of them had flown out, lunging for both Yue Zhong and Jeffery.

"Damn it!!"

Seeing the 50,000 Type 9 Red Jade Mantises, Jeffery's face fell, and he quickly retreated.

As a half-step True God expert, he could easily kill 10 of them. However, faced with a figure of 50,000, it was definitely impossible for him to make it out alive.

"Chance!!"

Yue Zhong was not afraid, instead, he charged right through, and started to pummel them one by one, absorbing their life force.

Chapter 999: The Dao of Fire!

The Red Jade Mantises also made use of their blade-like arms to slice at Yue Zhong, however, their attacks were all repelled by the Battle Armor, bouncing off and slicing their own comrades.

In the middle of the horde of Red Jade Mantises, Yue Zhong continued to punch out in a frenzy, blasting to pieces, absorbing a huge amount of life force.

When dozens of them had been killed, the remaining Red Jade Mantises no longer dared to get closer. Instead, their eyes flashed with fury, and a bright red light shot out from them and slammed into Yue Zhong.

Struck by these beams, Yue Zhong felt his body sinking slightly. Over thousands of red beams caused his back to feel as though he was weighing a mountain.

A Type 9 Mutant Beast was extremely terrifying, regardless of the species. Other than the blades of these Red Jade Mantises that contain the laws of Slashing, they had other abilities, one of them being the Red Jade Holy Beam.

As long as this beam hit, even a Type 9 powerhouse would feel as though there was a heavy mountain on his back. Under countless similar beams, the intense gravity and weight could even squash someone to death.

These Red Jade Mantises had intelligence as well, seeing as they were at the Type 9 realm. Although they might have been kept and reared here by some unknown, terrifying force, they still had superior battle instinct, not losing out to humans, and could swiftly adjust their tactics to attack their enemies.

"No, I have to flee, otherwise, I will really be buried here." Yue Zhong frowned, and with a flash of his figure, he charged right at the ring of light that was likely to lead to the 2nd level. The Red

Jade Mantises immediately gave chase, while he charged right through them and knocked them away.

Within a few breaths, he managed to reach the ring of light.

The moment he stepped through the ring, he disappeared from his current location.

As the Red Jade Mantises got close to the ring of light, their bodies shuddered as they stared at the ring, their eyes filled with terror.

When the light subsided, Yue Zhong noticed that he was standing in a world that was full of energy, and the ground was covered with all sorts of precious fruits.

The fruits were even more abundant than those on the first level. There were strength-enhancing ones, recovery ones, soul-nourishing ones, and many others. Many of them were heavenly and were considered rare even on the Great God World. They contained principles and laws of the world. If a half-type Type 9 expert were to eat a few of these fruits, and cultivated for a short time, refining the properties, they could instantly leap into the Type 9 realm.

Yue Zhong stared at the ground, and sighed in his heart, "My goodness. This Tower of Babel is filled with treasures! No wonder everyone wants to enter this. However, the levels of danger are truly high. If one is not careful, they would truly fall." The danger was rife in the Tower of Babel, where 9 out of 10 would perish. Still, many would fight to enter, just because of a chance for a breakthrough and a chance at evolution. Entering the Tower of Babel, if one survived, they would definitely be able to break through and reach the Type 9 expert, lording over many worlds. However, each time the Tower was open, many would perish, and only a small handful would walk out.

Yue Zhong waved his hands, and countless Mechs flew out from his Universe Ring, and soared everywhere, harvesting all the good

stuff on the ground.

He surveyed his surroundings, and a glint appeared in his eyes, as he headed towards the west. About 3,000 li away from the entrance of the 2nd level, there were 365 sacred pillars that reached the clouds, radiating might, and a sacred aura, at the same time, they contained a terrifying energy within.

"Those sacred pillars are scary. It's definitely not made by some Type 9 expert. These are items surpassing the Gold-Grade realm! Who knows who came up with this..." Yue Zhong flew to one of the pillars and discovered that he was basically an ant in front of it. He looked up and could see that the pillar went on for miles, but no end in sight. At the same time, they were constantly emitting a terrifying strength that was more than a thousand times stronger than him.

As he came to about a region 30km away from the pillar, he noticed a sense of summoning from it.

Under that mysterious beckoning, Yue Zhong walked over slowly and reached out to touch the pillar.

When he came in contact with the pillar, numerous golden silk shot out from the pillar and wrapped around him.

The moment the strings appeared, Yue Zhong was shocked and tried his best to retreat. Unfortunately, his actions were too slow, and the silk immediately wrapped him up into a golden cocoon. The moment the cocoon was formed, a powerful strength poured out from the sacred pillar, coursing through his body, and nourished his God-Devil Nucleus, as well as his soul.

At the same time, all sorts of mysteries, laws, truths of the universe, as well as knowledge, poured into his consciousness, giving him an increased sense of clarity. He had seen the path to evolution, "So it was like this! In order to become a True God warrior, one has to possess the knowledge and comprehend the universal truths, developing an indestructible godly soul, before

finally becoming a True God, lasting for eternity, and omnipotent."

"The fact that I could evolve constantly to reach where I am, and to the True God level in the future, is because of this perfect physique of mine. As long as I absorb enough strength, I will constantly evolve. However, that would cause me to lose my sense of the Dao, and it would be cleaved off, and all that I have would end up in someone else's hands."

"I need to obtain knowledge, in order to truly break free, and gain the Dao to my own evolution."

When Yue Zhong thought up to this point, his soul calmed down and began absorbing the knowledge from the sacred pillar like a parched person coming in contact with water.

From the boundless knowledge passed by the sacred pillar, Yue Zhong could see the rise of numerous weak civilizations, till their peaks, before their annihilation.

As he watched, Yue Zhong was also beginning to understand, as he cultivated bitterly, creating his own Dao of evolution. From the moment Earth changed, Yue Zhong had been constantly fighting, slaughtering, and facing all sorts of challenges. Other than fighting, he had to consider his expansion, protecting even more people. As for his own evolution, he had never considered too much about it.

However, within the golden cocoon, time seemed to stop, allowing Yue Zhong to sink into the new perspectives and knowledge he gained. He contemplated silently, slowly forging his own Dao. "Civilizations can rise, grow and expand, because of fire. With fire, biological life forms can obtain food, strengthening their bodies, and evolve constantly."

"Fire is the starting point of everything. Even in the myths and legends of gods, it was because Prometheus had given fire to humans that allowed humankind to grow."

"The God-Devil Domain is the perfect Domain from the God-Devil Physique, and the physique itself contains the strongest mysteries and knowledge. This sort of strength was not comprehended by myself, and its origins are unknown. If I do not comprehend everything about the God-Devil Physique, it would not be possible for me to proceed to the next step. As for the Flame Domain, it was something I relied on the God-Devil Physique to help myself comprehend. Thus, there's a part that belongs to me. The source of its evolution comes from me, thus, its future is dependable on me, only then would it truly be mine."

"Fire, can burn everything, wipe out the evil in the world, and contain boundless power, as well as the potential to evolve. With it as the start, even if I reach the True God level, I will be able to continue evolving." The moment he had this comprehension, he began to use the Flame Domain as the foundation, absorbing the knowledge from the sacred pillar, further comprehending the laws of Fire.

If it were outside, in order to understand a law or principle, it would take an incredible amount of time. One would have to read a lot and possess enough wisdom, coupled with experience in the most dangerous of places, coming in contact with the different flames of the world, in order to comprehend the laws of Fire. Within this golden cocoon, Yue Zhong just had to will it and control the knowledge to form into all types of flames, observing their origins and forge his own laws of Fire.

As he continued to contemplate, he was undergoing a metamorphosis, comprehending his own Dao of Fire.

After some time since Yue Zhong entered, a transparent figure also flew out from the entrance of the 2nd level.

The silhouette took a look at the barren ground, and frowned, "Did someone arrive before?! Damn it!"

Soon, this figure also discovered the 365 pillars, and his eyes

brightened up. He swiftly soared towards the pillar and came in contact with one, forming into a golden cocoon as well.

Chapter 1000: Breaking out of the Cocoon!

With the passage of time, more experts were arriving at the 2nd Level, flying towards the 365 sacred pillars, forming into golden cocoons as they began their own evolution.

All of a sudden, the entrance shuddered, as numerous human experts poured out, and there was not a battleship in sight.

At almost the same time, numerous Devils and Man-Eaters, as well as the experts of the other worlds, also soared out from the entrance.

Although the Red Jade Mantises were savage, in front of those human battleships, as well as the countless half-step True God experts, they were all wiped out.

When the different races and species flew out, they immediately separated, forming their own groups.

Heavenly Lord Lei Huang stood in mid-air, brooding, "Damn, the battleships could not pass. If I had known, I would not have brought them into the Tower of Babel." Those powerful D-Grade battleships that were able to kill Type 9 powerhouses instantly could not be brought through the 2nd level, thus, they were left in the 1st level, causing the powers of the human faction to feel heartache. After all, a single D-Grade battleship possessed more strength than a few Type 9 experts, and having to abandon so many at one go, it was not possible to replenish the fleet even in a hundred years for the Holy Heavens.

Heavenly Lord Yan Tian spoke indifferently, "So what? If we can rise to the True God realm, everything will be fine. If we have no way of breaking through, and could only perish here, then those D-Grade battleships will also be destroyed here. There's no point getting too attached."

If they could reach the True God realm, then the Great God

World would be under the rule of humans, and they could easily produce many D-Grade battleships.

Bu Lie pointed to the front, his voice sinking, "Look!" The few Heavenly Lords turned to look and saw the numerous sacred pillars emitting radiance.

"This should be the largest treasure of the 2nd level!!"

Lei Huang and the rest gazed at the pillars, their eyes lit with greed. With a flash, they hurried towards the pillars.

Unfortunately, when they came in front of the 365 pillars, they discovered that every single pillar had already been taken, with numerous large gold cocoons stuck on them.

"Damn it!! It's full!!!" Lei Huang was enraged and he roared, stretching out to grab at one of the gold cocoons, "Scram!!"

Lei Huang wanted to grab the person within the cocoon and enter it to receive the benefits.

Bu Lie and the rest watched silently. If he was successful, they would do the same.

These 4 Heavenly Lords had been trapped at the half-step True God realm for eons, and their biggest wish was to take that step and become a True God, breaking out of the cage and be free.

Lei Huang's energy claw grabbed onto the cocoon, but it did not move. Instead, a golden sacred beam shot out at Lei Huang.

When Lei Huang was shot, he let out a piercing scream, a huge hole in his chest, as large amounts of gold blood flowed down. He fell out of the sky.

Yan Tian was shocked, and he hurried over, "Lei Huang, how're you?!"

Lei Huang, whose mouth had blood and his face pale, gritted and said, "I've suffered some law-filled attack. If I don't consume some of the precious fruits, it would take me a month to recover. These

365 pillars are definitely something from a True God! Damn it! We were too slow and missed the opportunity!!"

Bu Lie and the rest also looked at the pillars with a look of remorse. Had they entered and received the benefits of the pillars, it was likely that they could have made the step to become True Gods.

Although they had dealt with the Bull-head Dragon Devil and obtained a Gold-Grade Axe, killing over thousands of Type 9 Mutant Beasts, and obtained so many nuclei, compared to the chance of becoming a True God, those items were like trash.

Yan Tian studied the surroundings, and spoke slowly, "I think, that those who progressed through the trials and tests of the Tower the fastest, would obtain the most benefits. Those who go through slowly would gain lesser."

The rest pondered over the words and nodded in agreement.

Currently, the entire 2nd level was barren, as all the precious fruits had already been swept up by Yue Zhong and those who had arrived early.

However, there were still a few precious herbs hidden in the ground. The moment they surfaced, the scuffle over them broke out again.

Those who had joined hands to get through the entrance for the 2nd level suddenly separated and became competitors once more, going all out in their slaughter. Within these people, there were a few who had obtained many benefits at the first level. They had managed to avoid most of the conflict, and consumed their harvest and focused on absorbing the energy in the 2nd level, to break the Type 9 bottleneck. The 2nd level of the Tower of Babel had more than 100 times the energy of the 1st level, and cultivating one day in the 2nd level was as effective as cultivating a few years outside. Furthermore, it was the best environment to attempt breakthroughs.

On the third day of Yue Zhong's entrance into the 2nd level, all 365 cocoons split open, and the tyrannical Type 9 auras spilled out from all of them, shocking all the experts within the 2nd level.

Lei Huang and the rest opened their eyes, scanning with their perception and immediately discovered Yue Zhong.

"High-Type 9 realm!! How the hell?! How could he evolve so fast?! The Tower of Babel is truly too miraculous!! He actually evolved so fast!! If only I had received the inheritance of the sacred pillars!!!"

When Lei Huang and the rest scanned Yue Zhong's cultivation stage, their faces changed, and their eyes were filled with envy. When they had just met Yue Zhong, he was only an initial-Type 9 powerhouse. However, he had already reached the high-Type 9 realms since then. This speed was simply heaven-defying and far exceeded their expectations.

Each evolution further down the line was increasingly difficult.

Countless experts were stuck at the initial-Type 9 realm. Lei Huang himself had been a heaven-defying genius who triggered the Tiger-Dragon image, and it took him 50 years from the initial-Type 9 to the mid-Type 9 realm. He had taken 300 years since then to reach the high-Type 9 realm. Such a speed was already considered fast in the Great God World, but compared to Yue Zhong, it was practically like a snail. They felt unfair.

At the moment when Yue Zhong broke out of his cocoon, a peak-Type 9 Formless Blade Devil appeared noiselessly behind him, his eyes flashing with a cruel light, as he intended to slash out at Yue Zhong's heart.

The Formless Blade Devil race was one of the rarest amongst the Devils, and they could hide their aura easily. If a peak-Type 9 Formless Blade Devil were to activate his innate stealth, even a half-step True God might not be able to detect them without being on guard.

They were the most powerful assassins among the Devils, and this particular Formless Blade Devil had even assassinated a half-step True God expert before. "Trying to assassinate me?! Courting death!" Yue Zhong snorted and turned around, throwing a punch right at the devil.

After reaching the high-Type 9 realm, Yue Zhong had reached a high level of attenuation with his body, allowing him to exhibit even more terrifying strength.

Under that fist, the claws of the Formless Blade Devil were crushed, and his body also began to split apart due to Yue Zhong's force.

"Holy shit! That fellow is strong!!"

"How the hell? Isn't he just a high-Type 9 human expert? How is he so strong?!"

"This fellow! Seems like he's not someone to offend!"

"..."

Seeing Yue Zhong taking out the peak-Type 9 Formless Blade Devil in a single fist, a number of experts looked on with trepidation.

The half-step expert Jeffery stared at Yue Zhong, before he turned to the half-step True God-expert of the Man-Eater race, who was covered in red scales, his face savage and muscles taut, wielding a huge, golden bone, "Charoman! That human has to die!! Otherwise, with his evolution speed, both our races would be wiped out by him!! Let's join forces and kill all the humans!!"

Charoman swept Yue Zhong a gaze, his eyes also filled with a savage glint. He passed the message through his divine sense, and quickly responded, "Fine!"

Chapter 1001: Defeating Jeffery!

Yue Zhong's evolution speed was simply too terrifying. Furthermore, his current performance was threatening to the Devil Race and Man-Eater Race.

Furthermore, if Yue Zhong did reach the True God realm, then because of the hatred among the 3 races, the Devils and Man-Eaters would definitely suffer. Jeffery swept out with his divine sense, issuing an order to all the Devils, "Everyone, attack all humans!"

Hearing that order, those who were hidden and focusing on cultivation immediately stirred, and pounced towards the nearby humans. Charoman also had a savage glint in his eyes, as he ordered, "Devour all humans!! They shall become our nutrients to evolve!" The eyes of the Man-Eater Race flashed savagely, as they broke out in cruel smiles, and lunged for the human experts. The sudden attack of the 2 races caught many human experts off-guard, and within an instant, many Type 8 human powerhouses fell.

In the outside world, a single Type 8 powerhouse could be the ruler of a kingdom or empire, but inside the Tower of Babel, they were just cannon fodder.

Lei Huang saw the deaths of the many humans, and his countenance turned ugly, as he ordered, "Damn it!! Gather into formation!!"

Those humans who were still cultivating also quickly gathered and formed their arrays, executing techniques at the Devils and Man-Eaters. The 3 great races then began a slaughter within the 2nd level, while the other races watched at the sides. There were some who could not hold it in any longer as well, and acted against their own enemies. The entire Tower of Babel became chaotic.

3 Type 9 Golden Man-Eating Lizards, who had lizard heads, their bodies entirely golden, with powerful hind legs and thunder runes on their foreheads, shot towards Yue Zhong.

These Golden Man-Eating Lizards were mutants even within the Man-Eater Race, with the ability to control thunder. Once they went all out, they had lightning-quick speed, and their attacks contained thunder, causing their enemies to be shocked.

In just an instant, the 3 Golden Man-Eating Lizards appeared mysteriously from 3 different directions, slashing out at Yue Zhong's heart.

"Bunch of beasts, go die!"

Yue Zhong's eyes were cold, and he sent out 3 punches, slamming into their bodies like meteors. The 3 Golden Man-Eating Lizards were instantly blasted apart, their blood and flesh splattering everywhere. "Flames of Desolation!!"

After punching out and killing the 3 Golden Lizards, Yue Zhong flickered and appeared on top of a 150m-tall Type 9 Golden Giant, his fist shrouded with the Dao of Fire as he punched out at the giant.

"Golden Shield!"

There was a look of shock in the eyes of the peak-Type 9 Golden Giant, and with a thought, he quickly gathered his Golden Law above his head, forming a powerful shield.

When Yue Zhong's fist slammed into the shield, the Dao of Fire that had transcended numerous civilizations and eons exploded out, instantly causing a large hole.

Yue Zhong's fist pierced through and slammed into the head of the Golden Giant viciously, and the flames exploded out, enveloping the giant's head, incinerating everything into a pile of liquid. After killing that Type 9 Golden Giant, 2 Baby-Faced Lizards of over 5m in length crawled over, their faces resembling human toddlers, while their bodies were powerful lizards. Their jaws opened up, revealing rows of sharp teeth, and they let out a earth-shaking scream.

Soundwaves that could cause a half-step True God to collapse reverberated out, slamming onto Yue Zhong's body.

The Golden Battle Armor on Yue Zhong's body lit up, and immediately reflected the soundwaves onto 2 half-step Type 9 Man-Eaters.

Under that terrifying soundwave attack, the 2 Man-Eaters shuddered, their orifices bleeding while their soul suffered damage. Even their sense of hearing was cleaved.

Yue Zhong then retaliated, slapping out onto their bodies, causing their heads to explode.

After killing those two half-step Type 9 Man-Eaters, Yue Zhong shot forwards, stepping through space and punched out at the 2 Baby-Faced Lizards, instantly decimating their heads while absorbing their life force.

Yue Zhong continued to weave in and out of the group, and no one below the high-Type 9 realm was his match. In just a few breaths, he had already taken out over a dozen experts who could have terrorized worlds outside.

His shocking performance also attracted the ire and fury of the peak experts of both the Man-Eater Race and Devil Race.

The half-step True God Jeffery roared out in rage, his palm stretching out, causing numerous Black Devil Silk to descend from the sky, aiming at Yue Zhong, "Bastard!! I will skin you!!" "You don't have that capability!!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a glint, and he charged towards Jeffery. "Fool!!"

Jeffery stared at Yue Zhong, laughing coldly, as he closed his fists and controlled the Black Devil Silk to wrap around Yue Zhong. At the same time, the silk was filled with adhesive Laws, and could stick on to anything, even Gold-Grade Treasures.

"Flames of Desolation!"

The moment the Black Devil Silk came together, Yue Zhong's

eyes flashed dangerously, and the golden God-Devil Flames enveloped his body, as he punched out, and executed his strongest Flame technique that he had comprehended.

At that instant, the God-Devil Flames congealed, and blasted out, causing all the Black Devil Silk to incinerate and burn away. He tore through the weakened cocoon and charged at Jeffery.

"Damn it!! How are his flames so strong?!" Jeffery's face fell, however, his right hand whisked out a black box that seemed to be carved with numerous skeletons. It was a White-silver Grade treasure, the Yin-Devil Water Body, where a single strand of water could easily extinguish any fire. He shot the water out at Yue Zhong. Faced with that terrifying Yin-Devil Water, Yue Zhong's God-Devil Flames were being extinguished. However, in just an instant, Yue Zhong had already appeared in front of Jeffery and threw a punch at his head.

There was a look of shock in Jeffery's eyes, as countless silk congealed in front of him and formed a black shield.

"Flames of Desolation!"

Yue Zhong roared out in rage, and channeled his Dao of Fire once more, as the terrifying flames burst forth, and slammed into Jeffery's head.

The immense force burst out, blasting Jeffery's head apart. Even a half-step True God expert was unable to withstand Yue Zhong's God-Devil Physique.

When Jeffery's brain was blasted into pieces by Yue Zhong, his headless body then twisted, causing numerous Black Devil Silk to shoot out from the neck, aiming for Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong punched out, and his flames enveloped the silk, burning them all into a puff of smoke. He then shot forwards, stepping through space as he shot out from the surrounding silk.

As for Jeffery's headless body, it quickly fled towards the Devil

Race's encampment, while the broken brain began to regenerate swiftly.

A half-step True God was vastly different from a Type 9 powerhouse. They had already comprehended the indestructible divine soul, and there was no one weak spot. In order to truly kill them, one had to destroy their entire body.

"What!! Sir Jeffery was actually defeated!"

"What joke is this? That human could actually defeat Sir Jeffery?!"

"..."

The numerous Devil experts stared at Yue Zhong, their eyes filled with shock. It was the same for the Man-Eaters.

A half-step True God expert had already come in contact with the true invincibility of the True God realm, and could easily take down peak-Type 9 powerhouses. Yet, such an expert could actually fall in the hands of Yue Zhong it was truly shocking.

Many Type 9 experts of the Man-Eater race quickly fell back, unwilling to engage with Yue Zhong further. They were fearless, but not stupid. "Strong!! His rate of growth is truly too shocking!! Thankfully we didn't try anything funny, otherwise, he would have been a fearsome opponent."

Among the human race, Bu Lie was filled with shock when he extended his perception out while fighting a Devil Race expert.

Yue Hua was also filled with shock as she stared at Yue Zhong, "Unbelievable, he's just a high-Type 9 expert, and yet, he could defeat a half-step True God expert. His strength is terrifying."

The rest of the human experts were also eyeing Yue Zhong with the same astonishment.

Just then, a hole opened up in the sky, and out flew a transportation radiance.

Chapter 1002: The Giant on the Throne!

"This is the teleportation array to the 3rd Level!" Seeing the sudden appearance of the light, everyone had this thought. At that moment, everyone channeled all their abilities and charged right towards the light.

Everyone present knew that the early bird catches the worm, those who got to the higher levels faster would obtain more benefits. No one was willing to stay here and fight with their lives.

Especially so for the Devil experts. The moment they saw the ring of light, they lost their will to fight and immediately charged for the exit.

The Devils prioritized self-preservation and their own benefits. In order to become stronger, they were willing to kill everything else. Now that there was a chance to become stronger, they would not let it up.

Having lost the support of the Devil Clan, the Man-Eaters also quickly flew out of the region, fleeing elsewhere.

With the Devils and Man-Eaters gone, the humans had no reason to stay any longer, as they scrambled to head towards the 3rd level as well.

Yue Zhong had also unleashed a pair of golden wings the moment he saw the ring of light, shooting straight into the 3rd level.

When he entered the 3rd level, what greeted him was a barren land, the ground was dark red, and there were countless low shrubs bunched together densely. On top of them, there were many precious Type 9 nuclei. These Type 9 nuclei could only be obtained by killing Type 9 experts, thus, each one was precious, an incredible resource for evolution and energy.

Outside, each nucleus had a sky-high price and was difficult to obtain. Even half-step True God experts would not have many.

However, right now in the 3rd level, they were literally everywhere.

Seeing those nuclei, everyone fell into madness due to their greed again and fought to obtain those nuclei.

Yue Zhong immediately congealed a number of energy palms, sweeping up numerous nuclei.

To him, these Type 9 nuclei were extremely useful, be it his Gold Battle Armor or the Radiant Battleship, in order to exhibit their might, he would need a huge number of such nuclei.

Furthermore, if he could transport a huge amount of them back to Earth, the Mech Emperor Zu Yuan Ting could produce even more powerful Fighter Mechs, above the initial-Type 9 realm.

As he continued to grab the nuclei, he swiftly made his way towards the central part of the 3rd level, intending to be the first to reach the 4th level.

There were many who had similar thoughts, as they soared towards the central location of the 3rd level.

After about a few thousand li, all of a sudden, the dark, red ground split apart, as numerous skeletons whose bones were all gold, and wielding large sickles crawled up from underground.

These golden skeletons had burning flames in their eyes, emitting a terrifying and cold aura from their bodies, and immediately charged towards Yue Zhong and the rest the moment they left the ground.

Yue Zhong shot forwards and punched out at a golden skeleton, causing it to crumble into bits.

As the Type 9 Golden Skeleton crumbled, the dark soul flames within were also destroyed by Yue Zhong.

After killing that Type 9 Golden Skeleton, Yue Zhong did not manage to get any life force, it was obvious that these were not live

beings.

Although they could be taken out by Yue Zhong in one punch and looked to be weak, they were still powerful Type 9 beings that emitted a terrifying aura.

They continued to slash out with their sickles, slicing up the various experts of the numerous races amidst cries of misery.

More Golden Skeletons were appearing, clashing together with the experts, as all sorts of techniques and treasures appeared, cast at the undead.

"There's a huge energy fluctuation over there! It must be a Gold-Grade Treasure!!"

As the Golden Skeletons continued to crawl out, there were powerful energy fluctuations in the distance. All the Type 9 powerhouses felt it at the same time.

"It's mine!!"

The moment Yue Zhong felt that energy wave, his heart skipped a beat and his Golden Wings extended, as the Type 9 nuclei on his Gold Battle Armor radiated. He soared towards the direction with golden beams trailing behind. Inside the Tower of Babel, space was extremely stable. Even with the various Type 9 powerhouses present, they could not tear apart spatial tears to teleport, hence they could only fly.

Only those who had comprehended spatial laws to a certain extent could make use of its power to travel. However, they would still not be able to pass through the walls of the Tower.

The Golden Skeletons poured out unceasingly, pouncing towards Yue Zhong in a bid to prevent him from going further. However, as soon as they appeared, he would blast them apart with a single fist.

After a dozen of them had been destroyed, the rest did not get closer, instead, they opened their mouths to spit out some nether chains, containing laws of the undead. As long as one was able

to lock on to Yue Zhong, the rest would be able to seal him immediately.

Even a half-step True God expert would be sealed and dragged through the ground when faced with these nether chains.

"Extinguish!"

With a cold glint in his eyes, Yue Zhong channeled the Dao of Fire, causing numerous flame dragons to meet the nether chains in retaliation, breaking them apart.

He then took the opportunity to charge forward in a frenzy.

Seeing how Yue Zhong broke past the barricade, the experts behind all had ugly expressions. If Yue Zhong were to reach the treasure before them, then there would be nothing left.

One expert who had deep insights into spatial laws gritted his teeth and waved his hands. He ripped a hole in space and charged through, in a bid to appear in front of Yue Zhong.

In the midst of those Golden Skeletons, one particular skeleton soldier sliced out with his sickle at the void.

"Ah!!" Following a cry of anguish, the Type 9 expert reappeared, however, his body had been sliced in two. He then burst apart due to the strange nether force and became a pile of blood and flesh.

Seeing the miserable plight, everyone felt a chill in their hearts, no longer daring to utilize spatial tears to travel.

"Damn it!!"

One half-step True God powerhouse who had been hidden among the humans waved his hands and summoned a 100m-long golden train, that was embedded with countless nuclei.

The powerhouse stepped into the golden train and urged his treasure to catch up with Yue Zhong.

Spewing hot steam, the golden train charged forward at a

terrifying speed, emitting a powerful aura as it slammed through the numerous golden skeletons trying to attack the expert.

As the train smashed forward, many of the Type 9 Golden Skeletons burst apart, with their soul flames dissipating as well.

The attacks of those skeletons were knocked back, not causing a single scratch on the golden train.

When this particular half-step True God took out his trump card, the rest who had Gold-Grade Treasures could not wait any longer, and took out their own treasures, chasing after Yue Zhong with all their might.

Since all of the experts were going all out now, the Type 9 Golden Skeletons that tried to impede them were sent flying, their bodies breaking into a pile of bones.

Yue Zhong continued to charge forward before a blue crystal throne of over a 100 meters in height appeared in his eyes. On top of it, there was a huge giant, whose eyes were shut tight, and his body wrapped in numerous gold chains. Floating in front of the giant, there were 6 pure white wings, a golden shield that had many Type 9 nuclei embedded, an incredibly dark blade, a golden box, as well as a golden seed.

The 5 treasures formed a mysterious seal, floating in the air as they emitted an aura, powering the chains that were sealing the giant. The giant seemed dead, without a breath, and there were no energy fluctuations as well.

"Seems like it's a seal. Once I take these items, the seal will be broken. What do I do?" Yue Zhong swept a gaze, and with a thought, he could swiftly guess the usage of the golden treasures. However, he did not hesitate to reach out and grab the 6-winged item.

Speed was Yue Zhong's goal, with enough speed, he could obtain even more benefits.

The moment his hands came in contact with the pure-white wings, the seal broke apart, and the remaining 4 items shot off into the distance.

Chapter 1003: The Awe-Inspiring Might of the Radiant Battleship!

Yue Zhong was taken aback and hurried to grab out, as 4 energy palms appeared and grabbed hold of the 4 escaping treasures.

In the distance, there was an expert with a pair of golden wings and an eagle-head. His eyes flashed and immediately readied his bow to aim at Yue Zhong. There was an intense bout of energy gathering at the head of the bow, as though it could pierce through anything in the world.

The next moment, he released a sun-like energy bolt that shot towards Yue Zhong.

There was an incredible sense of danger that welled up in Yue Zhong's mind. He had no way to handle those 4 escaping treasures anymore, as he released them, and twisted his body while urging the Battle Armor to form his defense.

The bright golden arrow slammed into Yue Zhong's shield, piercing it and striking Yue Zhong's armor like a meteor.

In an instant, Yue Zhong's Battle Armor radiated with a powerful energy fluctuation to block the golden arrow.

However, the golden arrow was designed to pierce and penetrate, and it brought a terrifying strength as it pierced the armor and slammed through Yue Zhong's heart, pinning him to the throne.

The Radiant Battle Armor was sick, capable of blocking even the attacks of a half-step True God. However, it was actually unable to defend against that golden arrow, purely because it was of a same-grade treasure. Thus, it had failed.

The eagle-head warrior snarled out at the surroundings in dominance and viciousness, "Hmph, lowly human, Gold-Grade Treasures are not something you worthless pieces of shit can hope to touch. Only the Golden Eagle Race's leader Delsas is the true

owner of these treasures. Whoever dares to touch, I will kill them!"

Seeing how Yue Zhong, who had been able to defeat half-step True Gods, pinned to the blue crystal throne, everyone was shocked, their eyes filled with caution.

Deltas was a half-step True God and coupled with his Gold-Grade Battle Bow, he was able to slaughter other half-step True Gods in an instant.

Just as the other experts were stepping back slightly, the Golden Train managed to slam towards the Gold Seed, and a huge hand formed out and grabbed it.

Another gold dragon appeared from the sky, stretching out its powerful claws to grab the deadly-looking, pitch-black blade.

A golden hand of over a 100m shot out from the ground, grabbing the box.

Numerous chains descended from the skies, coiling around the Golden Shield, pulling it up.

The Golden Eagle Race's Deltas might possess powerful combat strength, and a character that could terrorize even the 5 Heavenly Lords of the Great God World, however, within this Tower of Babel, there were many other experts that did not fear him.

Deltas looked at the many energy hands, and his gaze turned cold, as he fired out 5 arrows at those experts.

"Hmph, Deltas, do you truly think that you're invincible?"

With that cold snort, a number of powerful experts all acted and smashed the arrows to bits.

The Golden Battle Bow had to match the Golden Battle Arrows to tear apart anything, with nothing capable of stopping them. As for energy arrows, while they were enough to deal with some initial-Type 9 realm experts, they could not harm half-step True Gods.

The 4 energy beams were crushed by the half-step True Gods,

while the 5th beam slammed into a Type 9 devil, causing the devil that was reaching out for the white wings to be killed instantly.

After killing that Type 9 Devil, Delsas snorted coldly, patting his wings and he shot towards Yue Zhong's position.

He had executed that move to express his dominance and claim over the white wings in Yue Zhong's hands. Seeing this, those who had designs on the wings had no choice but to retreat.

Just as Delsas was about 500m away from Yue Zhong who had laid slumped, looking as though he was dead, he suddenly opened his eyes, and his gaze was staring fixedly at Delsas, "Radiant Cannon fire!!"

At this time, the Radiant Battleship, who had been following Yue Zhong while hidden in the void, flashed brightly, and a number of Type 9 nuclei burst apart, turning into energy. Over 200 broke, and the energy was absorbed by the cannon.

The next moment, there was a huge spatial tear that appeared in front of Yue Zhong, as the cannon that had absorbed over 200 Type 9 nuclei fired out a blue beam at Delsas.

There were tiers to the Gold-Grade Treasures as well. The Radiant Battleship was a tool capable of even challenging God. Among Gold-Grade Treasures, it was considered one of the top. With enough Type 9 nuclei, a True God expert could also be shot dead.

After absorbing the 200 nuclei, the might of the Radiant Battleship was at its peak. It was capable of harming, if not kill, a True God powerhouse.

Faced with the devastating blue beam, there was a look of despair on Delsas's face as he saw what was incoming, screaming, "NO!!!!"

At that instant, a number of golden shields appeared in front of him. The 81 shields fed off each other, combining to form a huge array.

These 81 shields could link with each other to multiply their power, absorb any incoming attacks. Even if 10 half-step True Gods were to attack it simultaneously, it could last for 5 minutes.

The blue beam slammed into the shields, easily piercing through them and enveloped the whole of Delsas' body.

The might did not diminished as it continued past Delsas, extending for some range behind, wiping out another 3 Devil Race Type 9 experts.

When the blue beam dispersed, there was only a golden bow, 8 golden arrows, as well as a Type 9 nucleus that was floating in mid-air.

After reaching the Type 9 stage, most life forms would have congealed a Type 9 nucleus in their head, containing all their strength and energy.

Among the 800 worlds, nucleus condensation was one of the main evolution paths, only a few special cases or variants would not require one.

Even for the humans, after reaching the Type 9 realm, they would have a nucleus just like Yue Zhong. Of course, the difference was that the quality of their nucleus could not compare to Yue Zhong's God-Devil Nucleus.

In the sky, the Type 9 nucleus of Delsas glowed, as it flew into its remaining arm, and the muscles started to regrow rapidly.

"You still want to live? You're looking down on me, eh? Delsas, this time next year will be your death memorial!!"

Yue Zhong's eyes turned cold as he ripped out the golden arrow in his right chest, causing gold blood to splatter. With a flash, he appeared in front of the golden bow and grabbed out. Channeling his golden God-Devil Flames, he enveloped the remainder of Delsas. He wanted him to burn, both in body and spirit.

"NO!! DON'T KILL ME!! I DON'T WANT TO DIE!! I'D SUFFERED

FOR OVER 10,000 YEARS JUST TO REACH THIS POINT!! I DON'T WANT TO DIE!! NO!!! Let me go, human! Please!!! I'm willing to give all I have to you, in exchange for my life and freedom!!! In my world, I have 500 million humans!! I can hand them over to you!! Don't kill me, I don't want to die!!"

On top of the bow, what was left of Delsas' body squirmed, as it transformed into a miniature version of him that screamed out and begged for mercy.

He had been through countless battles, miraculous and fortuitous encounters, together with his arduous cultivation, before reaching this realm, ruling over a world. He had not enjoyed himself enough.

"The moment you acted to kill me, you're doomed to fall here! Die!!"

Yue Zhong did not relent, his gaze cold as he urged his flames on.

"AH!!! IT HURTS!! IT HURTS!! I CURSE YOU HUMAN!!! YOU WILL NOT HAVE GOOD ENDING, AND YOU'LL BE SUFFERING IN HELL FOR ETERNITY!!! AH!!! AH!!!!"

Delsas continued to scream out within the flames, his miniature body burning up before the remainder of his body turned entirely into smoke.

Unfortunately, because he had already comprehended some law into Indestructibility, even Yue Zhong's God-Devil Flames could not burn him completely.

Chapter 1004: Surrounded by 8 Devil Lords!

A half-step True God expert could easily be a peak expert of any race and suppress many worlds. One of the many abilities they had, that placed them above ordinary Type 9 powerhouses was their vitality. Even if they were flattened to a meat paste, as long as there was still something, they could easily regenerate an entire body.

Such a terrifying survivability meant that most half-step True Gods were impossible to kill. It was because of this, that most factions would not dare provoke a faction that had such an expert.

Yue Zhong's God-Devil Flames were devastating, but to kill a half-step True God, he would still need to spend some time.

Jeffery eyed Yue Zhong with a cold glint, and screamed out, "Kill him!! We cannot let him gain the Golden Bow!! Otherwise, we will all die here with a burial!"

"En, this human is too dangerous! We need to kill him!!"

"We definitely cannot let him keep on growing!"

"..."

The physiques of the Devil Race were strong, hence, the overall quality of the experts of the Devil Race was above the Human Race. This time, of the peak experts among the Devil Race, there were 8 half-step True Devil-class overlords.

The 8 Devil Lords swept Yue Zhong a look, their eyes filled with killing intent.

Earlier, Yue Zhong's Radiant Battleship had fired a powerful beam that a half-step True God could not even withstand. If he was allowed to grow, they would all definitely be slaughtered.

In truth, most of them had already harbored killing intent towards Yue Zhong since the 2nd Level.

"Lowly human, let go of the nobility in your hands."

Following an enraged roar, the earth split apart, as Devil Qi surged, forming a huge Devil hand that grabbed out at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong frowned and his silhouette flashed. With the Golden Bow in one hand, his right hand was shrouded in golden light as it slammed into the huge Devil hand, causing it to dissipate.

When Delsas saw this, there was a look of joy in his eyes, as he screamed out frantically, "Save me!! As long as you save me, I will give you benefits!!"

Yue Zhong had just destroyed the huge Devil hand, when all of a sudden, a silhouette that was hidden in the shadows behind him thrust out with a transparent dagger.

This expert that was trying to sneak up on Yue Zhong was the Shadow Devil Lord. he was a half-step True God, with the Gold-Grade weapon Dark Shadow Blades in his hands. Other than gold-grade shields, nothing else could withstand those blades. Furthermore, they had the additional property of poisoning the soul, thus, even if a True-God warrior were to be pierced by it, their indestructible soul would still be affected, corroding away until their death.

Yue Zhong's God-Devil Physique was currently shrouded by a later of the Devil=Domain. The moment he felt the Shadow Devil Lord appear, he had already channeled his Domain, allowing him to deal with the sudden variable. With the perception of the Devil Domain, it was as though Yue Zhong had a thousand eyes, and could capture every single movement of the Shadow Devil Lord clearly.

"Scram!!"

Yue Zhong's body twisted strangely, slamming a fist at the Shadow Devil Lord. A terrifying strength burst forth, causing a huge, bloody hole in the Devil's body, as fresh blood flowed.

Heavily injured, the Shadow Devil Lord turned around, and leaped towards the shadow of another Devil expert, his face full of shock and fear.

"Sky Devil 9-Slashes!"

Just as Yue Zhong was about to give chase to the Shadow Devil Lord, there was a loud roar from the skies, and a Bull-head Evil Devil Lord, wielding a pitch-black Devil Battleaxe, descended from the skies, cleaving towards Yue Zhong.

This was one of the strongest moves of the Bull-head Evil Devil Race, comprising of 9 instantaneous slashes, and each adding on to the might exponentially. The laws within would also be stronger by a fold each time, and at the end, when all 9 slashes become one, even a half-step True God could be killed.

It was a terrifying power, as the energy all around gathered at it, forming a large ax shadow, cleaving towards Yue Zhong. The suppression was already causing Yue Zhong's skin to tingle.

Each of these 8 Devil Lords had heaven-defying capabilities, even Silk Devil Lord Jeffery, they were not simple characters.

Facing that cleave, Yue Zhong could only give up on chasing the Shadow Devil Lord, his eyes narrowing. He then whipped out the Golden Battle Bow and one Golden Arrow, facing the Bull-head Evil Devil Lord and shot it.

A powerful arrow bathed in golden sacred light shot through the skies, slamming into the huge ax in the sky after piercing the humongous ax shadow, causing a terrifying blast.

With a loud boom, the arrow was knocked away towards Yue Zhong.

The Bull-head Devil Lord was also knocked back a dozen li, together with his massive Devil Battleaxe.

This gold-grade Battleaxe was his treasure, and he would never ever let go of it, otherwise, he would not be sent flying like this.

Just as the Bull-head Evil Devil Lord was knocked away, countless Black Devil Silk shot out from both sides towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong waved his hands, as the God-Devil Flames around him burst forth, landing on the silk and incinerating them.

"Keke, little human brother, do you think I'm pretty?" At this time, an extremely alluring voice, one that could sway even the toughest of minds, resounded beside Yue Zhong.

Under that soul-enchancing voice, Yue Zhong could not help but turn towards it, only to see an extremely beautiful woman, who had a single horn on her forehead, her hair long, lush, and black. Her skin was extremely fair, like jade, and her features were exquisite, coupled with her explosively stunning body, it was truly a spectacle. She was smiling towards Yue Zhong devilishly.

This extreme beauty was the Charming Devil Lord, she had the innate ability to entice and attract, giving one a favorable feeling. Furthermore, her Charming Devil Technique had reached a high state. With a single look, she could ensnare countless Type 9 experts to be willing to die for her. Even some half-step True God experts could not resist.

Among the 8 Devil Lords, this Charming Devil Lord had the lowest combat power, but her support was extremely valuable. 4 of the Devil Lords were her admirers and were head over heels for her.

She smiled at Yue Zhong, as though she was a fairy immortal descended upon Earth. Even Yue Zhong's state of mind was affected slightly.

"Shit!"

Yue Zhong was, after all, someone with high willpower and a resolute heart. Yet, the charms of this Devil Lord was capable of stunning him for a moment, and by the time he stirred awake, he

could sense the sound of a void space breaking beside him.

He immediately sent a fist toward the right side.

Due to his hasty reaction, the person attempting to sneak on him flipped around lightly, sending a kick towards Yue Zhong's head.

With a loud blast, the terrifying strength of the assailant passed through the Golden Battle Armor, directly aiming for Yue Zhong.

At that moment, Yue Zhong could sense that the assailant was one of the 8 Devil Lords, the Combat Devil Lord. He had a long tail, with countless spikes, and his body was covered in black scales, while his head looked like a kangaroo.

The Combat Devil Lord immediately changed into a beam of light and charged back straight at Yue Zhong, assaulting him with countless blows.

He was, after all, the top close-combatant of the 8 Devil Lords. His combat experience was rich, and potential was even higher than Yue Zhong.

The moment both sides came in contact, Yue Zhong was swamped by his blows. They were extremely vicious, and in a manner of seconds, Yue Zhong had been attacked a few hundred times.

If it was not for the defense of the Gold Battle Armor, Yue Zhong would have already been blasted apart by the Combat Devil Lord.

The Combat Devil Lord's strength was tyrannical and could see that it was impossible to kill Yue Zhong with the Gold Battle Armor, thus, he focused his blows on disrupting the critical points of Yue Zhong, preventing him from exerting and strength or countering, forcing him to retreat.

All 8 Devil Lords were experienced fighters, and while they seldom joined hands, they were clear about their strengths and weaknesses. The Combat Devil Lord's role was to hold Yue Zhong down, disrupting his rhythm, while providing opportunities for

the rest to kill Yue Zhong with their gold-grade treasures.

Being harassed by Yue Zhong for barely a second, there was an intense sense of crisis in Yue Zhong's mind, and he hurried to twist his body to the side.

The fist of the Combat Devil Lord slammed into Yue Zhong, cutting off his rhythm and path of retreat.

The Blade Devil Lord, whose body was covered in sharp blades, and a pair of blade wings on his back, appeared like a flash in front of Yue Zhong. Channeling his blade Laws, he began to slash out at Yue Zhong, slicing through the Gold Armor, and into his body, breaking a few of his bones as gold blood splattered out.

Deltas, the Golden Eagle, who saw how Yue Zhong was being surrounded, his face broke out in schadenfreude, as he laughed madly, "Good!! Good!!! Kill him!! Work hard and kill that damn human!! Haha!! HAHA!!"

Chapter 1005: Gold Giant God Amano!

With the joint forces of the 8 Devil Lords, even someone like Yue Zhong would be beaten up mercilessly.

The rest of the experts were also fighting it out among themselves over the 4 Gold-grade treasures, and the entire region was rocked by intense power fluctuations.

Countless shockwaves slammed into the strange giant on the throne.

As the shock waves continued to hit the body of the giant, they were absorbed mysteriously.

All of a sudden, the giant opened his eyes and reached out to grab a Type 9 Wyrms-Dragon.

The Type 9 Wyrms-Dragon was shocked and opened its jaws hastily to fire out a dragon's breath at the giant.

The dragon's breath contained laws of corrosion, and even a half-step True God expert would not be willing to let the breath come in contact.

The giant on the throne did not even evade, as he allowed the breath to touch his body, letting out sizzling sounds, and part of his body started rotting.

He then used both his hands to rip the Type 9 Wyrms-Dragon violently, as gold blood splattered everywhere.

The Type 9 Wyrms-Dragon let out an agonized scream.

In the midst of its howl, the giant stuffed both ends of the Type 9 Wyrms-Dragon into his mouth and chomped down savagely. In less than 2 breaths, he had already consumed the Type 9 beast.

After that, he seemed to have recovered some strength, and with a vicious glint in his eyes, he looked at the numerous experts clashing in the sky above him. Waving his hands, he sent the

golden chains around him blasting out.

In an instant, the 20 gold chains pierced through 20 Type 9 experts who were battling, penetrating their bodies.

"Help!!"

"Save me!!"

"..."

The Type 9 experts who had their bodies pierced had expressions of shock as they roared out in pain and fear. Their bodies started to wither, as though their life was being sucked out of them before they finally became emaciated corpses that fell out of the sky.

Seeing this terrifying scene, everyone who had been slaughtering madly came to their senses and scattered, staring at the Golden Giant on the throne with fear and wariness.

The 8 Devil Lords who were going all out to kill Yue Zhong also stopped, standing afar, watching the Golden Giant in trepidation. They could sense the terror that this monster was capable of.

On the seat, the giant was staring at everyone coldly, with a disdainful and prideful gaze. "I've finally awakened from my slumber. Are you all the new challengers of the Tower of Babel? I'm the guardian of the 3rd level, Golden Giant God Amano. Here, half of you have to die, before I open up the 4th level for you. Furthermore, only those who had killed would be allowed to leave. The rest, would turn into corpses and nourish the land here."

There was an insidious glint in his eyes, as he spoke coldly, "The more you kill, the stronger your placing in the 4th level. The one who kills the most would be the first to enter the 4th level. The next highest would be the second, so on and forth. Let the slaughter begin! Entertain me, ants!"

Hearing those words, the experts were all shocked as they retreated a few steps.

Only those who had kept quiet and were the furthest from the battlefield were all thoroughly fearful now. They were the lowest existences and would become the prey for the stronger existences.

After just barely a second, a half-step True God Peacock expert opened its tails and fired out numerous golden beams at the Type 7 and 8 experts.

Under the blasts of those golden beams, many of the Type 7 and 8 experts were vaporized.

The Peacock continued to hunt the low-level experts. Once they were all wiped out, then the rest of the Type 9 powerhouses had no choice but to fight among themselves.

Once the Peacock acted, the rest of the half-step True God experts could no longer wait, as they hurried to act against the lower-leveled powerhouses.

No one knew what treasures there were in the 4th level, however, being the first to enter would definitely get the most benefits. This was the general understanding.

Even the 8 Devil Lords who wanted to kill Yue Zhong separated, utilizing their abilities to slaughter the low-leveled powerhouses around them. Under the allure of becoming a True God expert, the 8 Devil Lords no longer had the intentions to bother with Yue Zhong. As long as they could become a True God, they could easily slap Yue Zhong to death.

In that short span of time, the power surges in the entire region had intensified by over 10 times. As the countless experts were slaughtering among themselves, even those who had tried to act like pigs to eat tigers, and stayed far from the battlefield, were all drawn into the massacre inevitably.

At every second, there were many Type 9 experts who fell from the skies, their blood dyeing the ground red.

Amidst the mad slaughter, many half-step True God experts were

heavily injured, their bodies broken After all, under the countless of attacks that contained principles and laws, those who did not have any Gold-Grade armors could not withstand. However, half-step True God experts were tough to kill, and even if their bodies were broken, they could regenerate quickly.

The massacre got even more intense due to the overpowering greed in everybody's hearts, their eyes filled with violence and killing intent.

No one had noticed that amidst the slaughter, a number of gold chains were squirming under the ground, piercing into those broken Type 9 bodies, and absorbing their life force.

As the absorption amount grew, the stern and quiet Golden Giant God Amano's eyes seemed to grow brighter.

Yue Zhong was extremely clear that he was slightly behind, thus, becoming the 1st to enter the 4th level was somewhat impossible. He did not partake in the mad slaughter, instead, he observed the giant who called himself the Golden Giant God Amano. He had not yet seen a live True God expert.

After Yue Zhong killed a few Type 9 experts, he flew to one side and stared at Amano with a doubtful gaze, "Golden Giant God? A True God expert? Not right... he's not exuding the sort of pressure a True God warrior should be emitting. However, it is definitely much stronger than normal half-step True God experts. What monster is this?"

Suddenly, a blood-soaked Type 9 Lizard Dragon Devil, whose eyes were bloodshot, flew towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong slapped out casually, and its body burst apart, while its nucleus shot towards Yue Zhong.

When the dismembered corpse fell to the ground, one golden chain pierced into the parts and quickly sucked it dry.

Yue Zhong's eyes widened in shock, "not good, that fellow is

lying!!"

There were many experts of the world within this 3rd level, although many had become blinded by greed there were also a few who had maintained their caution and tore themselves away from the slaughter, staring at Amano suspiciously.

The might of a True God warrior was overwhelming, and slapping a half-step True God expert was as easy as killing an ant. While the might of the Golden Giant God was above ordinary half-step True God experts, it was not at the overwhelming and suppressing level of a True God.

All of a sudden, a half-step True God Dino-Beast expert who had a dinosaur head, a pair of black dragon wings, and a half-man, half-beast body, roared out loudly, "Everyone!! This Amano is lying!! In order to reach the 4th level, we have to kill him!! He's trying to drive us to kill ourselves!"

The roar of that expert carried a slight energy wave to clear their minds, causing many of them to come to their senses.

They were not stupid, they had just been blinded temporarily by greed. After regaining their clarity, they were shocked, and quickly separated, clashing with the Golden Skeletons from behind.

Many Type 9 experts observed their surroundings and noticed that everyone was either heavily injured or dead. All the low-level experts were already killed, and those that were left were the Type 9 experts of the various races.

They were only at the 3rd level, but around 90% of the experts had already fallen along the way.

However, many Type 8 experts had also attained some breakthroughs, reaching the Type 9 realm. Many Type 9 experts gained benefits as well, allowing themselves to hit the next tier within the Type 9 realm.

Amano swept the Dino-Beast expert a furious gaze as he roared

out, "Audacious, you dare to accuse a True God! It's an unpardonable crime! Kill this person! Whoever kills him first would get the chance to reach the 4th Level!! Inside the 4th Level, there are secrets to reaching the True God realm! The first one to enter would stand a higher chance to reach the True God realm!"

Hearing those words, many were ready to act. However, they were all long-time crafty foxes and had just been blinded earlier. Now, although they were sorely tempted, they did not act out so hastily.

Chapter 1006: The Cunning Amano!?

One particularly good-looking half-step True God expert with a red crystal pearl on her forehead spoke out, "Your Eminence Amano, we have already accomplished our task, the people remaining here are less than half. Please open the way to the 4th Level."

By now, everyone was already suspicious. Due to the wave of slaughter earlier, all the low-level experts had been killed, and over half of the experts present had already died. They had cleared the objectives of entering the 4th Level.

Amano stared at the Dino-Beast expert that had expressed his doubts and spoke solemnly, "The authority of a True God can never be blasphemed! Kill him! As long as you kill him, the Great Amano will open the way to the 4th Level."

The Dino-Beast expert had a sunken expression, as he roared out while flapping his wings in order to escape, "He's a liar!! We have to join hands and kill him to open the way to the 4th Level!"

When they heard Amano's words, many of the experts who had enmity with the Dino-Beast expert quickly chased after him.

Some of those Type 9 powerhouses that had racked up the most kills hesitated a moment before they also joined forces against the Dino-Beast experts.

Although they could not be sure that Amano was speaking the truth, killing one half-step True God expert meant one less enemy in the Tower of Babel, to them, it was definitely a worthy trade-off.

Under the joint forces of those Type 9 experts, the half-step Type 9 Dino-Beast was mercilessly blasted apart, his corpse desecrated, without even the slightest hint of life.

"Very good, you have accomplished what the Great Amano has decreed, now Amano will open up the spatial gateway to the 4th

level for you."

Amano saw the half-step True God slaughtered under the joint efforts of those Type 9 experts, and with a strange glint in his eyes, he stretched out with his arms, and a massive surge of spatial laws churned, causing a pitch-black hole to open up.

Amano spoke, "Please enter in an orderly fashion, it will only remain open for 30 seconds. After that, it will close, and it would need another round of blood sacrifice to open."

Before his words had even finished, many figures shot toward the spatial gate.

Being the 1st to enter the 4th Level was too enticing for anyone, even if they had their suspicions at first, the moment they saw the gate opened, their reason had flown out the window.

"Get lost!!"

"Those who get in my way shall die!"

"..."

The numerous silhouettes sent out their strongest attacks madly at the entrance.

Due to the overwhelming attacks and laws, many experts were heavily injured.

At this time, no one had the intention to line up according to whoever killed more, as everyone fought to fly into the black space.

The first one to enter let out a maniacal laughter, "HAHAHA!!! I, Nisimu, am the first to reach the 4th Level!! I will be the one to reach the True God realm!!"

As he barged through, the rest also continued without care for anything else in the world.

Seeing the powerhouses charge through the black tunnel, the eyes of the Golden Giant had a hint of amusement and ridicule.

Yue Zhong stared at the spatial tunnel, his eyes fixed. However, he could not shake off that doubt towards Amano, thus, he did not charge straight into space, instead, staying where he was, quiet.

In the 3rd level, not everyone was blinded by greed. There were some long-time experts who also continued to watch as the low-level, blinded experts charged into the black hole.

Amano looked at those powerhouses who were just floating there without moving, his face not betraying any emotions. After 30 seconds, he lowered his hands and closed the spatial hole, before announcing impassively, "The spatial gate has closed, in order to open it once more, there have to be enough sacrifices. This time, only a certain number can enter, the other half will become the offerings for the entrance to the 4th level."

He was expressionless, and all the half-step True God experts were not able to discern if he was speaking the truth or not.

This time, the experts all exchanged looks, and communicated secretly, not acting impulsively.

All of a sudden, there was a divine sense transmission to Yue Zhong, "Human, this Amano fellow is crafty and dangerous. Let's have a truce until we enter the 4th level for real."

Yue Zhong swept out and discovered that it was Jeffery who was communicating with him. He did not hesitate to reply swiftly, "Alright, let's put off our enmity till we enter the 4th level."

The Golden Giant Amano was not only strong but truly cunning, knowing to utilize the hatred and conflict between the various experts to drive further wedges. It was even more difficult to deal with compared to the endless Type 9 Red Jade Mantises on the 1st Level. Just a few words from this Amano was enough to send many experts to their doom. It was cruel.

The number of Type 9 experts that had fallen due to Amano's instigation was more than a few times that of those who died to the

beast hordes.

One half-step True God Octopus-man, whose body was over 80m in length, and had over a hundred tentacles asked, "Great Amano, just now, when the spatial gate was opened, why wasn't the order according to the number of kills?"

There was a cold glint in Amano's eyes, as he pointed at that half-step True God Octopus-man, and his voice rang out with pressure and authority, "You dare question the mighty God, you deserve death!! Kill him! Whoever kills him first, the Great Amano will open the spatial gate once more, and allow you through to the 4th Level."

However, this time, no one responded. Everyone was involved with dealing with the Type 9 Golden Skeletons behind, while the rest were watching Amano's 'performance' coldly.

One particular expert whose body was covered in thin dark Dou qi spoke out coldly, "This fellow is definitely a fake he can only defend this place by goading us to kill among ourselves. Guys, let's all kill him. Based on the past experiences, once he's dead, we will definitely be able to go to the 4th Level."

After that, the expert waved his hands, and caused numerous Type 8 Fighter Mechs to appear, directly assaulting Amano.

The moment he acted, the rest of the experts also had icy gazes as they channeled their laws and executed their techniques towards Amano.

"Despicable lowlives!! You dare attack the great True God Amano, it is a crime punishable death!! Surrender now and I might spare you yet!!" Amano's eyes flashed dangerously as he let out a loud roar, pointing towards the sky. A surge of energy blasted out, meeting the incoming attacks.

Once he broke those attacks from the Type 9 experts, there was a cold beam that shot out of his chest, as it transformed into a golden

shield that formed around him.

Most of the attacks of the half-step True Gods were stopped by the shield, causing a look of shock on the faces of all the half-step True God experts.

"Is he really a True God expert?"

After all, the half-God True God experts gathered here were all the peak experts from the 800 worlds. Their joint force could easily wipe out anything lower than a True God existence. Thus, they were naturally shocked when their attacks were blocked.

One expert roared out in anger, "No! He might not be! Otherwise, he would not be trying to pressure us! Furthermore, since we have already acted, if he really is a True God expert, we have already offended him, and he will still kill us anyway. Since we've been forced to this point, we can only kill him!!"

Hearing that enraged roar, the rest all became resolute and continued sending their attacks towards Amano.

The expressionless Amano finally had a change in expression, as he stood up, and turned to flee.

If one was not a True God, no matter how strong one was, it was impossible to keep blocking the attacks of an entire group of half-step True Gods. Especially when they had Gold-Grade treasures as well.

Even a weaker True God would not be able to remain standing when surrounded by a bunch of half-step True Gods with Gold-Grade treasures.

The moment Amano fled, the throne he was on split apart, and a bright white beam of light shot towards the sky, forming a spatial gate that was identical to the ones that had appeared in the 1st and 2nd Levels.

"It's out!! This is the true entrance to the 4th level!!!"

Seeing that, all of the experts became excited, and charged towards the gate, vying to enter the 4th level.

Chapter 1007: Insta-kill Half-step True God Experts!

Yue Zhong could also sense the power emitting from the spatial gate, and could not help but feel his heart quicken. He flew towards the gate while thinking, "This spatial gate is real!"

In a few breaths, most of the experts had passed through the gates, and only 6 were floating where they stood.

One, who was covered entirely in black, swept out with his divine sense, "They have all left!"

"Time to implement our plan!"

"Move out!"

"..."

The 6 black-clothed experts then shot towards the direction of the Golden Giant.

In a few breaths, they managed to catch with the Golden Giant who had fled a dozen kilometers.

"Greetings Master!"

As they came up to Amano, they immediately kneeled and spoke respectfully.

Amano's gaze was cold as he looked at them and spoke solemnly, "Very good, you guys have come. The things I require, have you brought them?"

"Master, we have gathered all the things you need." Each of the 6 experts then brought out a gold bottle, placing them on the ground.

Amano reached out and grabbed all 6 bottles. With a wave, he opened them and looked in, his eyes filled with joy, "True God Blood, True God Will, True God Lingering Will, True God Bones,

True God Heart Essence, and True God Fruit Sap! Well done. With these treasures, as well as the 10,000 years of accumulated experience here, I can finally make the step and become a True God."

"The 6 of you, well done. When the Great Amano becomes a True God, I will not mistreat you."

Amano laughed out arrogantly and dumped the contents of the 6 golden bottle into his mouth.

The moment he absorbed the contents, he shot out a number of golden chains that began to drag all the Type 9 Golden Skeletons around towards himself.

In an instant, over a dozen Type 9 Golden Skeletons had become stuck on him.

From Amano's mouth, silk shot out, wrapping around himself, and he became a huge golden cocoon.

The golden cocoon emitted a strange fluctuation, controlling countless golden chains to pull the numerous Golden Skeletons, Type 9 nuclei towards itself.

Very soon, all that left was left on the 3rd Level was the golden cocoon, which was constantly throbbing and evolving.

The moment Yue Zhong entered the 4th Level, he saw a shocking scene.

There was a single golden river, only about a hundred kilometers in length, and about 5 kilometers wide. However, it contained an abundant source of strength.

Yue Zhong could sense that there were fluctuations of the True God realm within, and he was filled with shock, "This is the blood essence of a True God expert!! Holy!! This golden river is actually the remnants of True Gods after they fell. Unbelievable! How many deaths would it take to form such a river?"

Floating on top of the golden river, there were many 1,000-year God Blood Lotuses.

These 1,000 God Blood Lotuses were formed after absorbing the Blood Essence from True Gods over a period of 1,000 years, each one of them incredibly precious. Outside, a single one could help a Type 6 powerhouse evolve to the Type 8 realm within a few days.

If a half-step Type 9 expert were to take one, he or she could instantly become a half-step True God.

There were even benefits for Type 9 powerhouses. If a half-step True God expert were to take one consistently while training for 10,000 years, there was a 40% chance of breaking through to the True God stage.

After all, it was incredibly difficult for a half-step True God to make that final leap. In the past millennium, the total number of True Gods could be counted on one hand. Thus, the usage of those God Blood Lotuses was enough to drive a half-step True God mad with greed.

Without any hesitation, every single expert immediately pounced towards the lotuses. Even Yue Zhong was no exception. They were truly too precious. 2 of them could easily produce a Type 9 powerhouse, naturally, Yue Zhong desired them as well.

A number of hands formed from qi were sent towards the lotuses.

"Scram, bunch of ants!"

Following a roar of rage, a number of Blood Snakes shot out from the golden river of blood, containing the principles and laws of blood, as they destroyed the incoming hands.

At the same time, the blood river churned, and powerful blood arrows shot out from the surface, aiming for the experts in the sky.

Under the barrage of the blood arrows, the Combat Devil Lord that had suppressed Yue Zhong earlier was pierced and screamed out, "Ah!! Save me!!"

Pierced by the Combat Devil Lord, his blood began to flow towards the river below, as his body became withered at an extremely fast pace, and his strength was sapped. He was soon devoid of the strength to even pull out the arrow, as his corpse fell towards the blood river below.

Seeing this, the rest of the 7 Devil Lords had ugly countenances, as they hurried to execute their techniques to save the Combat Devil Lord.

The speed of the Shadow Devil Lord was the fastest and insidious, in a flash, he had already leaped towards the shadow of the Combat Devil Lord, reaching out to pull out the golden arrow.

"Just nice, the two of you can go to hell!"

Suddenly, there was a mysterious voice that sounded out of nowhere, as Yue Zhong, who had been in stealth, appeared and sent a fist at a meteor-like speed towards the body of the Shadow Devil Lord.

With a loud blast, the Shadow Devil Lord's body split apart once more, as fresh blood splattered. The remaining figure quickly disappeared and appeared behind another Devil Lord.

The Shadow Devil Lord was one of the toughest to kill. Yue Zhong's sneak attack could only injure him heavily, and not take him out in one shot. One had to destroy all physical aspects of a half-step True God in order to kill them. Otherwise, even the smallest bit of flesh left could regenerate.

Flames of Desolation!

After injuring the Shadow Devil Lord heavily, Yue Zhong's eyes turned cold and slammed a fist into the Combat Devil Lord. The terrifying God-Devil Flames burst forth, directly enveloping the rest of the Combat Devil Lord in flames.

Currently, the Combat Devil Lord was heavily injured from the golden arrow, and his resistance was at its weakest. As he screamed

out in misery, he quickly turned into a pile of ash, leaving behind of a Type 9 nucleus.

At the point of his death, a thick and abundant life force, containing a strand of indestructible soul force entered Yue Zhong's body.

In Yue Zhong's consciousness, there was a loud explosion, as though something had broken, and he stepped into the peak-Type 9 realm. His Nascent Soul seemed to grow bigger as well, floating in his consciousness.

"No!!"

"Damn human!!"

"Kill him!!"

"..."

Seeing how the Combat Devil Lord had been turned to ash, the remaining 7 Devil Lords were all red-eyed, as they screamed out in fury, and charged towards Yue Zhong.

The 8 Devil Lords had their own conflicts within the Great God World and would fight among themselves. However, in the Tower of Babel, they were the only trusted partners, now that Yue Zhong had killed one of them, they were naturally full of rage.

"Haha!! I've just broken through another small tier, and am in need of some opponents. Your timing is right!! You can become stepping stones for me!!"

Yue Zhong eyed the remaining 7 Devil Lords, laughing coldly as he executed his Shadow Clone technique, as numerous Yue Zhongs appeared, and soared towards the 7 Devil Lords.

Right now, his clones were no longer those weak copies that would dissipate after a single hit. In order to deal with them, the 7 Devil Lords had to exert some strength.

"Bunch of trash!! Break for me!"

The Bull-head Evil Devil Lord urged his huge Devil Battleaxe to slice down, slamming towards the numerous copies of Yue Zhong.

Under the frightful image of the Devil Battleaxe, many of the clones vanished.

"What a pity, you're too late! Die!"

At that instant, Yue Zhong appeared in front of that Bull-head Evil Devil Lord and sent a fist covered with the Flames of Desolation at the head of the Bull-head Evil Devil Lord.

With a loud explosion, Yue Zhong's fist slammed into the body of the devil, and the God-Devil Flame was more than 4 times stronger than before, instantly incinerating the Bull-head Evil Devil Lord, including his soul, leaving nothing behind.

Seeing that instant kill, the remaining 6 Devil Lords were all shocked and felt despair for the first time.

Chapter 1008: River of Golden Blood!

Jeffery saw how Yue Zhong slaughtered the Bull-head Evil Devil Lord with a single fist, and his eyes almost popped out, "How is this possible?! His evolving speed is simply too quick!! He was just an ordinary Type 9 expert just recently, how could he improve so fast?!"

Not too long ago, Jeffery was still able to suppress Yue Zhong completely, forcing him to flee. However, in just a few days, Yue Zhong already become even stronger than the Bull-head Evil Devil Lord, whose prowess was way above Jeffery. He was simply overwhelmed by this sort of monstrous existence.

All of a sudden, the face of the Charming Devil Lord changed, as she screamed, "He's an Oracle!! He's an Oracle!!"

Hearing those words, other than the humans, most of the half-step True God experts of the various races were shocked.

An Oracle would possess the God-Devil Imprint, and receive the favor of the heavens, allowing them to absorb life force and evolve quickly.

To most of the races, an Oracle would be the most delicious prey, but also the most dangerous threat. If they could swallow a weak one, then they could easily evolve to the next realm. However, they could also become the stepping stones for the Oracle to evolve.

All sorts of gazes filled with animosity, greed, and envy fell upon Yue Zhong.

Many experts even began to channel their energy and qi, dodging the attacks from below, while planning their moves against Yue Zhong.

Heavenly Lord Lei Huang stared at Yue Zhong with a complicated gaze, "This secret is finally out of the bag!!"

Yue Zhong's evolution speed was incredibly fast, surpassing the expectations of the Heavenly Lords. Currently, Yue Zhong was even stronger than Lei Huang himself, and the Heavenly Lord could not help but be jealous.

Bu Lie also had a complicated gaze as he sighed, "It's already good enough that this was hidden for so long. Now, it will be a critical moment for him. If he can get through this, he will definitely be the True God of our human race, otherwise, he would perish and become food for others to evolve."

Bu Lie was also filled with envy and jealousy towards Yue Zhong's speed of improvement. However, he knew that if Yue Zhong could truly become a True God expert, then, there would be no one who could be his match among the 800 worlds. Yue Zhong would then become the True God of the Holy Heavens, wielding great authority.

Yan Tian suddenly asked, "Should we help him then?"

Lei Huang swept those experts a look and chuckled bitterly, "It's useless! He's now everybody's target, once we go over, we would just suffer and die at the hands of these mad fools."

Currently, within the 4th level, the eyes of the various species and races were all bloodshot. Yue Zhong was like a huge tonic for them and was the most threatening existence to their own race. If they could kill Yue Zhong, the benefits would be immeasurable.

Some of the half-step True Gods even stared at the other human experts with undisguised animosity, the moment the humans tried anything, they would attack.

The Charming Devil Lord screamed out loud, "Everyone, attack!! Kill him!! He's a mature Oracle, whoever gets to devour him would obtain all that he has!! The chances of reaching the True God stage would also increase multi folds!"

"Want to kill me?! Then you can die first!!"

Yue Zhong's gaze turned cold and he extended the white wings he obtained from the 3rd Level, and with a bright, holy radiance, he appeared in front of the Charming Devil Lord, a fist covered with the Flames of Desolation punching out at her.

"No!! Don't kill me!! I can be your slave!!" There was a look of fear and despair in her eyes, as she immediately channeled her innate art, putting on a pitiful expression as she pleaded.

"Die!"

Yue Zhong did not have any intention to be chivalrous, instead, his fist slammed through all of her defenses, causing the devastating flames to incinerate her at one go, leaving nothing except a pitch-black mirror behind.

"Mei-er!!"

"Bastard!!! You dare kill my beloved Mei-er!! I will tear you apart!!"

"Beast!! Damn beast!! I will cook you alive!!!"

"..."

The 5 remaining Devil Lords burst forth in their anguish and fury, charging at Yue Zhong.

The Charming Devil Lord had attracted all 5 of these Devil Lords, thus, when she was killed, they were naturally enraged.

"Haha!! A bunch of fellows looking to die!! Become my nourishment!!"

The cold glint in Yue Zhong's eyes intensified, as he roared out with laughter, and the white wings on his back flapped. He charged through the 5 Devils and blasted out with his fists and Flames of Desolation.

The Holy Light Wings that he obtained were considered a speed-type Gold-Grade treasure. With his current peak-Type 9 strength, he was even faster than a few weaker True Gods. The 5 Devil Lords

were unable to catch his movements, and in a blink, 3 of them were annihilated by Yue Zhong, turning into dust.

The remaining Shadow Devil Lord and Silk Devil Lord Jeffery saw that things were not good, and had already urged their treasures and their potential to the best they could to flee.

Within the Black Devil Silk, Jeffery's terrified voice rang out, "Everyone!! Attack together!! If we can't kill him, we would become his food!!"

"Everybody, let's go!! We cannot let this human evolve any further!!"

"Kill him!! Devour everything of his!!"

"..."

Seeing how Yue Zhong was able to kill 3 half-step True Gods without any resistance and could absorb their life force, the rest of the experts could not wait any longer.

A huge golden train charged out from the ground, bringing with it hot, billowing steam and golden tracks, intending to slam into Yue Zhong.

The moment that train appeared, the tracks seemed to be fixed on Yue Zhong, and before the train had reached, nothing could change its trajectory, until it could hit Yue Zhong.

One expert in black clothes caused dark Qi to surround himself, like a huge black box shot out, emitting powerful spatial fluctuations as they formed a seal around Yue Zhong.

A beauty in red blew once on her golden conch, causing a terrifying soundwave to blast out at Yue Zhong.

Numerous experts acted out, exhibiting their abilities, and attacking Yue Zhong.

Such a huge bunch of half-step True Gods acting together, even a True God expert would not be able to handle it easily.

Facing that sort of assault, Yue Zhong laughed coldly, his Holy Light Wings flapped, and he charged straight into the River of Golden Blood.

The attacks of those powerhouses also slammed into the river.

As the River was made out of the Blood Essence of countless fallen True Gods, it contained incredible might and powerful laws. No matter how the attacks struck the surface, the River would consume it all, igniting some parts of the river.

"Damn you!! Ants, go to hell!"

A roar of rage sounded out, as numerous golden arrows shot towards the experts in the skies, piercing another 4 Type 9 powerhouses.

The 4 of them screamed out in misery and fell into the River.

As they fell into the river, they were instantly sucked dry and became 4 emaciated corpses.

One half-step True God expert roared in rage, "Destroy this river!! Only by doing it we can go to the next level!!"

There was only this River of Golden Blood, as well as the dense clumps of God Blood Lotuses. The Type 9 powerhouses knew clearly that they had to destroy this river to proceed.

The experts began to channel their attacks, containing laws and principles as they slammed into the river, causing some parts to sizzle and turn into vapor.

If it were an ordinary river, any one of those attacks could have easily destroyed the entire river. However, as this river was formed from the blood of countless True Gods, they could only chip away at it slowly. Only those with flame-based abilities had the advantage of burning through the blood slightly faster.

Under their joint attacks, the blood began to boil, and the number of golden arrows was starting to decrease, both in strength

and numbers.

"Damn bastards, the Great Camok is enraged. You shall all die!!"

There were roars of rage sounding from within the river of blood. Just then, the water began to churn, and numerous corpses charged out from within, pouncing at the Type 9 powerhouses in the skies.

They all had the insane speed of the high-Type 9 realm, and it was such a dense horde of corpses assaulting the experts in the air. Although many of them were destroyed by the half-step True Gods while flying halfway, many others managed to reach in front of those powerhouses and tore the weaker beings apart, throwing their corpses into the river of blood.

The corpses and the experts of the races began to slaughter each other in a cruel fashion.

On the other side, when Yue Zhong dropped into the river, there was a terrifying suction force from within, pulling him to the depths of the river.

Chapter 1009: Sacred Temple of Laws!

The evil energy all around burrowed into Yue Zhong's body, attempting to suck him dry as well. However, they were all dispelled by the Golden Battle Armor on him.

After rising to the peak-Type 9 realm, Yue Zhong's combat strength and sense had increased greatly, reaching that of a True God.

As an invincible and perfect being, a True God expert could use the same amount of strength to defeat a half-step True God. One of the main reason was that of the God-type combat sense, allowing the powerhouse to make the most accurate response.

Although Yue Zhong's combat sense had not reached that of a True God expert, he was already able to discern that the River of Golden Blood could not break through his Golden Battle Armor.

"The blood is that of True Gods. I can make use of the strength within to cultivate my Blood Manipulation ability." With a thought, Yue Zhong executed the technique, and the blood radiance came out, entering the river.

Immediately, the river trembled, and a surge of evil intent blasted out, immediately disintegrating the blood radiance.

The long River of Golden Blood had been formed through countless True Gods and had become a strange existence itself.

Its strength was even above some True God expert, however, it did not possess an indestructible True God soul, nor the perfect combat sense, and did not grasp laws or principles perfectly. That was why it could not wipe out the powerhouses above in a single move. Even so, it was not something so easily absorbed by Yue Zhong.

"Seems like the Blood Manipulation is still some ways off. However, with this much blood, it is truly a treasure trove. I can

use my flames to refine them, and retrieve the purest power." With a thought, his near-True God combat sense immediately gave him the solution.

The God-Devil Physique and the near-perfect combat sense were just a few of the gifts of being an Oracle, which could easily strike fear in experts of the 800 worlds.

An Oracle with the God-Devil Imprint would meet the hostility and animosity of various experts, having to deal with their attacks, attempts to devour them, and it was tough to grow and mature. However, if one was able to surpass all this, then the Oracle would become a heaven-defying existence. Because of this, all the experts of the various race would want to attack Yue Zhong the moment they found out.

Yue Zhong became calm and grabbed a handful of blood, and starting to burn it. In the process, the strand of will and insidious energy within were immolated away, forming a pure-white divine energy, entering his body.

Such a method of refining the True God's energy was imprinted within Yue Zhong's consciousness, a sort of precious method not everyone knew.

After he absorbed that amount of blood, numerous golden axes and swords were formed within the blood, slicing at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong sat within the River of Golden Blood, allowing those attacks to slam into his armor, not harming him in the slightest, instead, he used them to train his physique, causing it to become even stronger.

No matter what form the River took, it was unable to tear through the armor on Yue Zhong. A number of high-Type 9 corpses also swam out, launching attacks on Yue Zhong, but to no avail.

The Golden Battle Armor was truly one of the strongest defense-

related treasures, in order to break through it, it would take a True God to act, or a similar-grade treasure.

Right at this moment, there was an unfathomable intent that transmitted over, "Human, the Great Xue Man is willing to join forces with you, and wipe out those damned races. Please stop destroying my body! They are our common enemy, let's work together to eliminate them."

When Yue Zhong heard those words, he stopped refining the river, after all, he had the same killing intent towards those damned foreign races.

Yue Zhong replied, "Hand me all the God Blood Lotuses on you. I will work with you to wipe out that trash."

The will within the river replied swiftly, "Fine!"

This strange existence Xue Man that was formed from the blood essence of the True Gods did not lack strength. After all, its body was the blood of True Gods, containing boundless strength. The God Blood Lotuses were items that it could do without, thus, it had no qualms gifting them to Yue Zhong.

Soon, there was a pile of God Blood Lotuses in front of Yue Zhong. He did not hesitate, sweeping them into his Universe Ring, and the same time, he grabbed a handful to stuff into his mouth.

The moment he swallowed them, they turned into a powerful and cooling divine strength, nourishing his body and soul, enhancing him once again.

In his joy, he continued to consume another stalk. However, this time, the effects were muted, he could only sense a cooling sensation, but there was not much change to his strength.

Yue Zhong looked at the pile of God Blood Lotus and sighed, "What a pity, these items are getting less effective for me."

Towards the later stages of evolution, these precious resources would become decreasingly effective the more they were used. Due

to this, Yue Zhong's God-Devil Imprint was extremely valuable.

As long as Yue Zhong absorbed enough life force, he could break through bottlenecks with no problems. Such a heaven-defying talent was naturally the target of envy and jealousy.

Yue Zhong thought for a while before asking, "Xue Man, if I help you get rid of those people, are you able to open the entrance to the 5th Level for me?"

Xue Man asked, "What's that? Is it this?"

As he spoke, there was a bright light, and a pure white door opened out of thin air.

"It's open!!"

"It's actually open?!"

"Go!!"

"..."

Seeing the gate opened, every single powerhouse was taken aback, before charging straight for the entrance with joy. No one was willing to stay behind and get involved with the River.

Yue Zhong was also shocked, before his silhouette flickered and dashed out of the River of Golden Blood, entering the space.

"They've all left! Bunch of fools that are seeking death. At least, I managed to sift out a decent number here, it should be enough." Seeing everyone disappear, the voice from the river resounded solemnly.

The moment Yue Zhong entered the 5th level, he saw numerous floating crystal prisms, each of them engraved with laws and secret techniques.

In front of one prism, Jeffery had one hand on it, while muttering in a trance, "So it was like that!! The principle of silk can still evolve!! Unbelievable!! I was truly a frog in a well, no wonder I could not break through to the True God stage!"

Other than Jeffery, many other experts were also frantically finding a crystal prism for their own, absorbing the knowledge greedily, every single one of them in a trance-like state as their bodies emitted powerful fluctuations.

Yue Zhong looked at those engrossed in comprehension and his killing intent billowed. If he took the chance to act now, he could definitely eliminate many Type 9 powerhouses.

However, the moment his killing intent soared, there was a message in his mind, "This is the Sacred Temple of Laws, no one is to kill here, offenders will be wiped out."

Yue Zhong took a deep breath and swiftly went in front of a Fire-based crystal pillar, reaching out to touch it.

The moment his hand came in contact with the crystal pillar, he felt a rush of insight into fire directly swarming his consciousness, increasing his understanding of it.

As he absorbed the knowledge, he soon had a similar trance-like expression, "So this was the case, I was truly ignorant about the Dao of Fire! This is the true crux of it!"

While everyone was comprehending the laws, a pure atmospheric energy permeated the area, entering everyone, strengthening them continuously.

At the same time, there was a strange clock that appeared within this Sacred Temple, the time needle continuously moving.

"It's done! I've comprehended the crux of the Dao of Fire, I can now refine that damn soul imprint of that True God!!"

After a long period, that no one knew how long they had cultivated for, Yue Zhong suddenly opened his eyes, and he reached out into his consciousness, congealing an avatar shrouded in flames.

The indestructible soul imprint encaged within his consciousness also revealed himself.

The soul imprint took a look at Yue Zhong and was thoroughly shocked, stammering, "Peak-Type 9... how did you evolve so fast?! How did you become a peak-Type 9 powerhouse?! How could you be so fast?!"

"You will become my stepping stone!"

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed coldly, and he immediately reached out with a fiery palm towards the True God's soul imprint, grabbing him viciously.

As the flames danced, the soul imprint began to burn away in the midst of screams.

Chapter 1010: Invincible!

After dealing with that soul imprint, the immense and pure soul force was directly absorbed by Yue Zhong, finally allowing him to break through once more. His understanding of the indestructible realm of the soul increased, and he finally reached the half-step True God realm.

When he stepped into the realm, an intense amount of energy gushed into his body frantically, as though a huge whirlpool was formed, pushing his strength higher and higher.

"The time in the Sacred Temple of Laws has ended, the entrance to the 6th Level is now open."

At this time, a voice resounded within everyone's minds, and the crystal pillars no longer provided any insight into the laws.

A pure-white spatial door opened up, appearing in thin air.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed open, and he immediately charged through the entrance.

The rest of the experts began to open their eyes as well, their bodies flying towards the entrance to the 6th level.

After a bright flash of light, Yue Zhong appeared in a grand, white hall.

Lights continued to flash, as the numerous Type 9 experts also appeared, looking around warily.

"Kill the Oracle!!"

The moment Jeffery appeared in the hall, he roared out with rage, waving his hands to send numerous Black Devil Silk out at Yue Zhong. This time, the might of his silk had increased by more than 3 times.

There was the chugging of the golden train, that aimed right for Yue Zhong, intending to slam into him viciously.

A 60m-tall Scarlet Mantis Ghost opened its huge mouth, firing a scarlet beam at Yue Zhong.

In just a blink of an eye, over a dozen experts had already channeled their attacks towards Yue Zhong.

"Courting death!!"

There was a killing intent in his eyes, as the Holy Light Wings flapped, and he shot towards Jeffery in a flash, his fist punching towards the Devil mercilessly.

'Black Devil Cocoon!'

Jeffery's face fell, and his body began to break apart into countless lines, reforming into a huge cocoon.

The Black Devil Cocoon was the strongest technique of Jeffery's and it could withstand all sorts of attacks, even if 5 half-step True Gods were to surround him, he could hold out for a few minutes.

Yue Zhong's palm struck the huge Black Devil Cocoon, as the flames blazed all around, burning through and directly striking Jeffery.

With a loud blast, Jeffery's body was blasted into different pieces, his blood spraying everywhere, while his body parts were incinerated by Yue Zhong's God-Devil Flames. Even the indestructible soul was burned away, as the powerful life force entered Yue Zhong's body.

After killing Jeffery in an instant, the golden train struck Yue Zhong viciously.

It was a Gold-Grade treasure, and incredibly resilient. It was able to smash a half-step True God into pieces as well. Once it locked on to a target, unless the owner released it, otherwise, the train would chase all the way till the ends of the world, to strike its enemy.

"Break for me!"

Facing the incoming golden train, there was a cold glint in Yue

Zhong's eyes, and the atmospheric energy surged, slamming into the train.

With a loud blast, the golden train that was billowing with steam and shrouded in laws was actually dented in by Yue Zhong's fist, before it was sent flying away.

"Impossible!!"

"That's a golden train! How could it be knocked away by a person?! He's just a half-step True God, how could he do this?!"

"..."

Seeing Yue Zhong's fist slamming the train away, there was a look of shock in the eyes of all the experts present.

The golden train had been renowned over a few worlds and had killed a number of half-step True God experts under the control of its owner. Only other Gold-Grade Treasures could withstand it. Yet, Yue Zhong had sent it flying, and it was evident that his strength had already surpassed that of those legendary True God powerhouses.

After sending the golden train away, Yue Zhong's Cosmic Finger came smashing down towards the group of experts.

As the image of the cosmos came down, it contained laws and truths of the universe, suppressing the attacks of many of the half-step True Gods, directly dispersing them, before the Cosmic Finger itself also dissipated.

"Save me!! I don't want to die!!"

At the moment when the cosmos disintegrated, Yue Zhong had appeared in front of a half-step True God who was wielding a Golden Combat Blade, directly punching out at him. Immediately, the powerhouse was blasted apart, and the terrifying God-Devil Flames seared out to incinerate everything, while the expert only had time to let out that one last scream.

With that, Yue Zhong's Holy Light Wings then flapped and he disappeared from the senses of the experts.

The next instant, he had appeared beside a half-step True God, punching out once more, and incinerating the corpse.

Since Yue Zhong reached the half-step True God realm, his God-Devil Physique was incredibly powerful, a single fist was enough to break apart other same-realm powerhouses. With his God-Devil Flames taking care of the aftermath, even the souls were not let off, as everything burned.

Yue Zhong then reappeared behind the Shadow Devil Lord, grabbing out at him, and channeling his God-Devil Flames, which shrouded the entire body of the Shadow Devil Lord, burning him away.

Under the constant flames, the Shadow Devil Lord let out a miserable scream, "No!!! Don't kill me!! I'm willing to submit, and work for you!! I'm willing to give you all the treasures that I've accumulated! Please!! Don't kill me!!! I'm just short of a step from the True God realm!!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and his God-Devil Flames burst forth mercilessly, "It's useless! Turn to ash!!"

The Shadow Devil Lord was a powerful ruler-class character, and even the Puppet Runes would not be able to do anything to them, thus, Yue Zhong could not control nor subdue them, the only way was to eliminate them.

"Ah!! I'm not willing!! I'm not willing!!"

In the golden flames, the Shadow Devil Lord continued to scream out in agony, before turning into ashes.

After he killed the Shadow Devil Lord, Yue Zhong then flickered through the crowd like a specter, while reaping the lives of the powerhouses as though he was the Death Reaper himself. Each time he punched out, an expert would die, and be incinerated.

Lei Huang stared at the speed Yue Zhong was slaughtering the experts, and his eyes flashed with one-part joy, one-part envy, "Strong!!"

Yan Tian's expression also changed, his heart filled with thankfulness, "His improvement is really too fast!! Fortunately, we did not do anything to him, otherwise, we would have become his targets!!"

Bu Lie was also filled with the same sentiments, "Yes, that's right! Now, once we can return to the outside world, our human race will become the strongest race!"

Holy Lord Yue Hua saw how Yue Zhong slaughtered those foreign experts as easily as killing chickens and was filled with shock, "Terrifying! An Oracle is truly a freakish existence! To think he evolved so quickly. Thankfully I did not offend him, otherwise, he could just slap me to death!"

"Stop!"

At this time, there was a roar of rage from the skies, and a terrifying pressure bore down on everybody.

"True God expert?"

Yue Zhong could sense the vastness of that energy fluctuations, and with a flash, he shot out from the group of experts, floating in mid-air as he looked towards the direction where the voice came from.

He immediately caught sight of 3 experts of unknown origins, emitting terrifying auras. From each of them, Yue Zhong could sense that they were all at least even stronger than the absolute peak of the half-step True God realm. The leader had a face full of scars, and a thick beard, emitting the pressure of a True God warrior.

"Die human!!"

One half-step True God expert below, with the head of a dragon

and body of a man, with mantis blades for arms, charged towards Yue Zhong with bloodshot eyes, intending to slash at him. He was already beyond rationality and was only focused on killing Yue Zhong.

"Stupid trash!! You dare disobey my orders. Die!"

The human expert frowned and pointed out, as a terrifying beam shot out, blasting the head of the half-step True God half-dragon, half-man. His head burst apart, and the headless corpse fell to the ground with no further signs of life.

Yue Zhong watched the dragon-man die, his pupils narrowing, "Strong!!"

This attack of the newcomer had thoroughly dispersed the soul of the dragon-man, even though his body was still present, his soul had already been extinguished. Such a terrifying method, even Yue Zhong was not capable of it.

Chapter 1011: Tentacular Beast!

At this place where all the peak experts of the various worlds were gathered, when they all saw the methods of that human expert, their faces fell and were filled with fear and wariness.

A True God expert was practically invincible, with an indestructible soul, and compared to ordinary half-step True God warriors, it was like a moon compared to fireflies. There was simply too wide a gap. One True God was enough to wipe out all the people within. The human True God expert swept them all a cold gaze, "I'm Harlem, a Type 10 powerhouse. All you crows, from now on, you are my troops. If you don't want to die, pick up your weapons and prepare for battle. Come with me." Hearing those words, everyone had a terrible expression, as they felt a bad premonition. One of the half-step True Gods, a being with a dino-head, covered in black scales and sharp blades on his limbs, asked with respect, "Sir Harlem, may I ask where is this place?"

"A bunch of fools that are trying to escape the cage, this is the 6th Level of the Tower of Babel and it is the last level. It can be said that you guys can go out now. However, this is not some saint land or heaven. In fact, it is a huge battlefield, in order to live, you have to fight on, and kill your enemies!" Harlem stared at the powerhouses with a look of ridicule. He had also been someone who had believed in the Tower of Babel, thus killing his way over. Who would have thought, that by the time he passed through, he had arrived at a hell-like, cruel world? Suddenly, his brows furrowed as he turned around and spoke, "They're coming, make your preparations now! Fight to live!! Don't die!"

On the huge field, all of the powerhouses swept out their divine senses, and immediately discovered a bunch of monsters charging towards them, emitting a terrifying aura.

Some of them soared to the skies and looked out at the distance. All around them, there were many strange monsters of about 5m

in length, their bodies covered in a black husk, with 8 tentacles around, moving like they were spiders. At various places on their bodies, there were spikes, and their numbers were terrifying. Harlem, who had gotten to the ground, looked up at the experts who had flown to the sky, and shook his head as he sighed, "Bunch of idiots!"

At that instant, those strange monsters opened their mandibles, filled with countless sharp blades, and fired out blue beams at the skies.

Immediately, 6 of the half-step True God experts were struck, 2 of them losing their heads instantly, 1 had his heart burst, and the remaining 3 were struck someplace else.

The 2 experts who had their heads blasted apart directly fell to the ground, devoid of signs of life. As for the one who was struck in the heart, he fell as well, his countenance pale as he spat out blood.

As for the remaining 3 who had been struck elsewhere, they shouted out in shock, "What's going on?! How come my body isn't healing?! What's going on?!"

The body of a half-step True God was powerful, capable of regenerating even when they had their heads removed. This was the basis of their confidence and unbridled behavior. However, they had suddenly lost 2 powerhouses instantly, while the rest were unable to heal. It caused the rest to feel a tinge of fear.

"These monsters are called Tentacular Beasts, they are the monsters produced by this planet. They are capable of firing out light that could destroy laws, called God-Slaying Beams. Those who are struck by those God-Slaying Beams, even if they were True Gods, would require at least 2 or 3 days to recover fully. You guys are just half-step True God experts. The moment you're struck, there's no way to recover. Follow me, we'll break out and when we reach the base, we will find some way to heal you guys. Follow close, I won't stay to wait for any of you."

Harlem swept a gaze, before turning around, and immediately began to leap and move like an agile monkey, not daring to fly into the sky.

The other 2 experts who had come with Harlem also followed, swiftly fleeing towards the distance.

The experts on the field all exchanged looks and quickly followed.

An expert who had a round body and 6 limbs, who hailed from the Taga Race, laughed coldly in his heart, "Hmph, fools, our Taga Race can communicate with any being, and turn them into our friends. Even plants can be made into our friends!"

With a thought, the Taga Race expert radiated brightly, and sent out his will towards those Tentacular Beasts, "How do you do. I'm Ta Xi from the Taga Race, I have no ill intentions. I would like to become friends!"

Feeling the will of the Taga Race expert, the Tentacular Beasts increased their speed, turning into flashes of light as they pounced towards him.

"No!! I'm a friend!!" The Taga Race expert could feel the killing intent radiating from those Tentacular Beasts, and sent out his own tentacles to slap out at the Tentacular Beasts, trying to retract his will and sever the connections.

The eyes of the Tentacular Beasts shone viciously, as they pounced and opened their jaws, biting on the Taga Race expert, immediately tearing him apart.

A few more also pounced over and began to devour him.

"Ta Xi is finished!!" "Damn it, looks like those beasts cannot be communicated with."

"..." Many experts had some bonds with the expert from the Taga Race and knew how strong their ability to converse with other species was. Now that Ta Xi was killed, this meant that those

beasts could not be reasoned with, and if they went over, they would definitely die.

All of a sudden, Harlem cursed, "Damn it, we're surrounded. This time's mission of receiving these newcomers is truly not nice to deal with. You guys prepare, we're going to break through."

Yue Zhong swept out with his perception and instantly saw a huge horde of those Tentacular Beasts crawling towards them, already encircling the group.

"I'll bust a route out for everyone!" At this time, the expert who was seated in the Golden Train, spoke out.

In an instant, the Golden Train charged out with billowing speed, smashing into those Tentacular Beasts.

The resilient Gold-Grade treasure was able to cause the Tentacular Beast that it crashed into to be blasted into pieces, as fresh blue blood flowed.

Harlem roared out at that time, charging towards the Tentacular Beasts, "Decent treasure! Everyone, attack! Otherwise, we will die!!"

Harlem wielded a huge Golden Combat Blade that had a 20m-long blade radiance. Each time he slashed out, a Tentacular Beast would be sliced in two.

"Why so troublesome, watch me!" One icy demoness spoke softly, her eyes gleaming with an iciness, as she blew out at those Tentacular Beasts.

Her breath carried laws and principles of ice, assailing the Tentacular Beasts.

Harlem's face fell as he roared out, "Do not use any law-based attacks!! These beasts can devour all energy, principle, and laws. Do not even activate your domains!! They can continue to feed and grow off your domains. They can also consume spatial laws, so spatial attacks are useless!"

At this moment, the incoming Tentacular Beasts opened their sharp mandibles and sucked in, immediately taking in the ice-powered attacks. When they absorbed the attacks, 3 of them immediately grew large and spat back out the icy powers at a Type 9 powerhouse, who was instantly turned into chunks of ice and broke apart.

Seeing this, everyone felt their hearts turn cold. When at the Type 9 realm, half-step True God characters could rely on their spatial powers and wills to attack. In terms of close combat, they were also much stronger than Type 8 experts.

However, against these cruel and vicious Tentacular Beasts, they could not help but enter the fray and engaged in close combat.

The Tentacular Beasts were vicious, that most of the Type 9 powerhouses were feeling fear. Some of them were almost taken out immediately when they charged close enough.

Each expert that came in contact with those tentacles would burst apart, before being absorbed by those beasts, consumed in front of everyone else.

"No!!"

Holy Lord Yin He, who had teamed up with Yue Hua, had an expression of despair as he screamed out.

3 Tentacular Beasts pounced towards him, their tentacles smashing into his body, and directly blasting his body apart, before consuming his flesh.

Chapter 1012: Fort of Hope!

With Yin He's death, Yue Hua's small group only had herself, Tian Dou, and Bing Feng. Holy Lord Wu Yin had already fallen at the 3rd level, while Yue Zhong had begun to move on his own, thus, the overall strength of this group had diminished greatly.

"Damn beast!!" Bing Feng stared at the Tentacular Beasts and cursed through gritted teeth.

Without any law-based attacks, many of the Type 9 powerhouses were not comfortable. After all, they had lived for thousands of years, and to kill their enemies, they just had to point out and use the atmospheric energy to crush them into minced meat. They had neglected their close-combat skills for a long time.

"I'll kill you!!"

Bing Feng flashed out, wielding a 10m-long Ice Blade, slashing down at one of the Tentacular Beast. When the blade came slicing down on the armor, it caused a loud 'dang', and a 13cm-deep gash was seen. His Ice blade also broke apart.

The body of the Tentacular Beast shuddered, its eight tentacles slapping towards Bing Feng Holy Lord.

As for Bing Feng, the moment his strike failed, he had immediately retreated backward, dodging that dangerous strike.

After dodging that attack, Bing Feng had a look of shock as he stared at it, "That defense is too freaking strong!! I can't kill it in a single strike! Damn it, it's supposed to be an ordinary monster!!"

Bing Feng was also after all a powerful character and had killed his fair share of monsters. It was the first time he had seen something with such an obscene defense as the Tentacular Beasts. He finally understood why the True God Harlem would be so cautious of them. It was because they were simply too tough to deal with.

"Be careful!!"

While Bing Feng was collecting his thoughts, there was a sudden burst of blue light from the horde, striking Bing Feng cleanly on the forehead, blasting his head off.

Yue Hua, who had just shouted out, could only stare wide-eyed as Bing Feng was then pounced on and devoured cleanly.

Yue Hua used moon-related abilities, augmenting her attacks, and was well-known for her techniques. However, now that she was restricted, her abilities were lacking, and could only wave her silver Moon Whip to hit the Tentacular Beasts.

As her weapon continued to strike the Tentacular Beasts, they only served to cause loud sound, but not dealing any true damage.

Suddenly, 3 Tentacular Beasts burst forth, charging right at her, as 18 tentacles struck towards her.

"No!!"

Her face fell, and there was a look of despair on her face. She waved her jade-like hands, causing shields to appear, in a bid to defend against those attacks.

When the tentacles struck Yue Hua's shield, they easily tore the shields apart, continuing towards her body.

During her despair, a silhouette flashed past, grabbing out and blocking the 18 tentacles.

Yue Hua opened her eyes to look closely, and exclaimed with joy, "Yue Zhong!"

"Get up!"

Yue Zhong grabbed onto the 18 tentacles, roaring with rage as he tugged forcefully, causing all 3 to fly off the ground and towards him.

The Holy Light Wings flapped, and he shot towards them, his fists punching out at one. Instantly, that Tentacular Beast was

blasted into many parts, blue blood flowing everywhere.

After that, he could sense a powerful amount of life force being absorbed into his body, increasing his strength once more.

Feeling energized, Yue Zhong shot into the group of Tentacular Beasts fearlessly, as he punched out one by one, directly killing those beasts.

Yue Hua watched in amazement as Yue Zhong tore through the Tentacular Beasts like it was nothing, her heart full of shock, "Strong!! He's too strong!!"

Those Tentacular Beasts were not easy to kill even with the Type 9 powerhouses giving their all, and yet, they could not withstand a single fist from Yue Zhong. His might was apparent.

Other than him, many other half-step True God experts had also pulled out their Gold-Grade weapons, attacking the Tentacular Beasts.

Under the circumstances where laws and domains could not be used, only Gold-Grade weapons could be used to kill these Tentacular Beasts.

As Harlem fought, he laughed out, "Heh! Not bad!! Really decent! Seems like there are a few good seedlings here, we should be able to hold out for even longer."

Since he was a True God expert, even if he did not turn around to see, he could still assess the surroundings while he fought. He could discern the situation of each small skirmish clearly.

With the threat of death looming over them, the experts of the various races began to unleash their potential, forcefully slaughtering hundreds of those beasts that tried to block their way.

When they broke out of the encirclement, the group followed Harlem and fled, finally escaping from this region of death.

The group continued to flee madly, after running for over 10,000

kilometers, they finally came to a fort.

Harlem gazed at the pure white fort, his eyes filled with a complicated gaze as he spoke, "This is the only safe point of gathering for us, and the only safe point in this world."

The group stared at the tower, noticing that it was as high as about a hundred meters, and encompassed a region of over 1,000 sqm. Each space had a cannon.

One Ice Demoness asked Harlem, "Sir, didn't you say that laws and energy-based attacks were ineffective against those Tentacular Beasts? What's the use of so many curtains?"

Everyone turned to look at Harlem.

He explained, "True, our energy-based attacks have no way of hurting those Tentacular Beasts, only serving to strengthen them. However, those Gold-Grade weapons could release devastating blows and can kill those beasts. However, the reason why our powers cannot hurt them is that the concentration of our powers is not enough. As for gold-grade Treasures, they are different. They are a condensation of the strength, thus, those beasts cannot suck anything from the weapons."

They all nodded and swiftly came to the bottom of the fort.

A number of beams shot out, falling upon them, and directly transporting them into the fort.

Inside, there were flora and fauna, with lush green trees, and an artificial sun, radiating brightly upon the land, giving life.

A few young men and woman from various races gazed at Yue Zhong and the rest curiously.

Yue Zhong swept his divine sense out and was shocked. These young people were all at the Type 7 realm above, with no shortage of Type 8 and Type 9 experts.

At this time, a goat-head True Devil-expert with a pair of Devil

wings walked over, "Harlem, you're back. How's the result this time?"

Harlem chuckled, "Qi Yang, just so-so, there are 80 half-step True God-experts, 43 Type 9 experts. There are also 56 gold-grade treasures and no Type 10 powerhouses."

The total number of experts that had entered the Tower of Babel at the start was over 8 billion, yet, those who truly reached the 6th Level were only a total of 123. The rest had fallen along the way.

Of the 43 alive Type 9 experts, 8 of them had been at the edge of the Type 7 and Type 8 realm. Having gone through the baptism of the Tower, they had swiftly broken through to the Type 9 realm and did not take part in most of the conflicts, thus surviving till now.

Qi Yang frowned slightly, "No Type 10? That's going to be a problem. The Tentacular Beasts have begun to surround the Universe Tree. If we don't take care of those nests, then the Fort of Hope would lose its final energy source. We only have about 50 Type 10 experts left, how are we going to tide through this?"

Yue Hua suddenly asked out, "May I ask if you guys can shed some light, where is this place?"

Although everyone had followed Harlem to the Fort, they were still filled with doubt and uncertainty towards the 6th Level and wanted to know what the situation was.

Qi Yang and Harlem exchanged a look and discussed through their divine senses.

Qi Yang then opened his mouth, "This is the 6th Level of the Tower of Babel, and it happens to be a world beyond the Great God World and the 800 worlds. This planet is called the Tentacular Planet, the mother planet of those beasts. Our current location is somewhere an unknown galaxy of the West Wood Constellation."

Chapter 1013: Qi Yang!

Qi Yang had a solemn expression, "The world we were in was a huge cage. Everything within, including you and me, are just considered lab tests for the entity called God. Us Type 10 experts might call ourselves True Gods, with our indestructible godly souls, however, compared to the real God, we are weak, nothing in fact."

He continued, "That entity called God has the strongest gold-grade treasure, basically, the number one godly weapon, the God-Devil System. Nothing within the 800 worlds could escape his attention. He could make use of it to create an entire race and help that race to become an intelligent species within a year. He could also wipe out an entire race in the blink of an eye."

When Yue Zhong heard this, his heart sank and he thought about all that had happened on Earth. In this short year, Earth had truly undergone shocking changes. Zombies, Mutant Beasts, the Sea Clan, these had all evolved within a year and had gone against the natural laws of evolution. It was truly heaven-defying. He had come across a record of an Ancient True God from the books of the Holy Heavens. In the past, there were many True God experts in Holy Heavens, and they were all invincible, possessing power that could flip entire worlds. However, none of them could possibly grow or nurture an entire species of intelligent beings within a year.

Furthermore, when he thought back to the point when it all changed, his body had been plucked out of time, and everything felt like it was silent. That sort of terrifying strength supported the theory that God even had control over time.

Time was a mysterious and terrifying force. It was a law that even the ancient True God experts had no way of comprehending. In a battle between God-class experts, it could take a second for the victor to be clear. That was how terrifying the power of time was.

The God-Devil System could actually pause everyone on Earth. That sort of strength was simply too terrifying. Even when Yue Zhong reached the True God level, he would not be remotely close to that level of strength.

"The Tower of Babel is also another powerful Treasure by that entity called God. Through it, many could evolve quickly, reaching the Type 9 realm, and transported to this Tentacular Planet. At the same time, the moment we walk out of the Tower of Babel, we have truly escaped from the 800 worlds. Other than an Oracle, the God-Devil System has no hold over us. This place might be true freedom, but it could also be said as another cage that we've landed in."

"On this Tentacular Planet, there are too many Tentacular Beasts to count. What you guys have seen were just the lower-level ones. Among them, there are even the King-class Tentacular Beasts. There might not be many of them, but every single one of them surpasses a True God expert, and when coupled with the endless horde, we are incapable of taking them on."

Qi Yang continued, "We have lived for over 100,000 years here, and at the peak of our strength, we had 13 Type 10 experts, over 8,000 Type 9 powerhouses. However, after fighting for so long, we are down to 5 Type 10 experts, and barely 500 Type 9 powerhouses."

Hearing Qi Yang's words, the faces of everyone who had just arrived turned ashen.

If a true God expert were to appear in the Great God World or the rest of the 800 worlds, he or she could become the overlord and would be immortal. However, to think that 8 of such existences had fallen here in this Tentacular Planet. They were just Type 9 experts, at the most, they were equivalent to high-quality cannon fodder.

Many of them were filled with regret at this point. In the 800

worlds, they were considered lords and had numerous subordinates. Yet, in order to break through, they had risked their lives to barge through the Tower of Babel. In the end, after paying such high prices, they had actually come to an even more dangerous region, it was no wonder that they were filled with endless regret.

Yue Hua's brows arched as she asked, "Sir Qi Yang, I see that this Fort of Hope is full of energy and resources. Sir Harlem had also mentioned that this is the absolute safest place. Why do we still need to head out and clash with those Tentacular Beasts? If we stay inside here and train to the Type 10 stage, then head out to slaughter those beasts outside, wouldn't that work?"

The Fort of Hope was formed from some technology, filled with abundant Qi, which Earth could not even compare to. The only other comparable place was the Tower of Babel itself.

Since the party had just gone through the baptism of the Tower, they had understood many things and obtained great rewards. If they were to hole up in this Fort of Hope for a few tens of thousands of years, they might break through to the Type 10 realm. A half-step True God expert already had an indestructible soul, and even if they were to cultivate for hundreds and thousands of years, they would not die. Their lifespans were generally over a million years.

It was because of this, that among the numerous worlds, there were a few half-steps True Gods who did not enter the Tower of Babel, because they could still afford to wait, and did not want to risk their lives.

Qi Yang shook his head, "Not possible! The energy source of this Fort of Hope comes from the single Universe Tree on this planet. Every once in a while, the Tentacular Beasts would gather and nest around the tree. Once they are successful, they would suck and absorb the energy from the tree, becoming stronger and evolving constantly. If we were to lose the Universe Tree, then this Fort of

Hope would lose its strength, and lose the ability to protect us. At that time, we would have to fight the Tentacular Beasts with no safe base. On this treacherous planet, that's basically a death sentence.

One Ghost Race cultivator, who had a ghostly visage and his entire body covered in scales, asked, "Sir Qi Yang, then, is there any way that will allow us to return to the Great God World?"

The moment these words came out, everyone looked to Qi Yang. Having seen the cruelty and harshness of the environment here, many had started to harbor thoughts of returning to the 800 worlds.

Once they return, they would become peak experts in their own worlds.

Qi Yang smirked, "Yes, according to the rumors, at the peak of the Universe Tree, there's an entrance to the other side of the Tower of Babel. If you pass through that, you should be able to transcend space and head back to the Great God World. However, here's a word of reminder. Half-step True Gods, as well as True Gods, would not be able to use that tunnel. Furthermore, those that use the tunnel would have their memories controlled by the God-Devil System, and would forget everything that transpired here."

Everyone exchanged looks and finally understood why in the past, each time the Tower of Babel opened, there would be a few fortunate survivors, with huge leaps in strength. However, there were no half-step True Gods or True Gods that returned.

Qi Yang laughed mildly, and continued, "There's an additional bad news. Once the Tentacular Beasts destroy the Universe tree, there would be a wormhole straight to the Great God World, and they can make use of it to enter the Great God World as well as the rest of the 800 worlds. At that time, everything will be destroyed by them. Even if you guys escape back now, it is just prolonging

the inevitable. There are about 1.1 billion Tentacular Beasts on this planet, because they lack flesh and blood, thus they can only maintain such a number. If they could consume more, they would multiply quickly, reaching 5 billion within a year."

Hearing this, everyone felt their scalps turn numb. Those Tentacular Beasts were truly terrifying, if they were to reach 5 billion, then nothing in the Great God World or the 800 worlds would be their match.

Yue Hua asked curiously, "Sir Qi Yang, may I ask where does your information come from?"

Qi Yang did not reply, instead, turning around to walk, and said, "Come with me!"

The rest could only follow him towards a palace.

Inside the vast palace, there was a gold pillar with spirals going all around, and it was embedded with many palm-sized white stones, emitting a sacred and powerful aura. Qi Yang looked at it with a complicated gaze, "This is a branch of the God-Devil System, the Exchange System. We gain our knowledge from here."

Qi Yang turned to it and spoke indifferently, "Come out, it's me, Qi Yang!"

From within the pillar, there was a flash of golden, sacred light, turning to form a beautiful woman, with long, black hair reaching her waist, her features exquisite, and her proportions following the golden ratio.

She smiled gently, "Mr. Qi Yang, how do you do, what do you want to exchange this time?"

Qi Yang pointed to the beauty and spoke indifferently, "This is the sentient program of the God-Devil System, you can think of it as a Treasure spirit. With the nuclei obtained from the Tentacular Beasts, you can exchange all sorts of gold-grade treasures, information, and knowledge. Our information was gained through

her."

Chapter 1014: God-Devil System A.I.!

The beautiful woman smiled charmingly, "How do you do. I'm the spirit of the God-Devil System, or an A.I., so as to speak. Master usually calls me Light. You can exchange Tentacular Beasts nuclei for anything with me, including food, natural treasures, gold-grade treasures, laws and Daos, information, and even cultural knowledge."

Light's eyes then flashed, sending beams of black light into the consciousness of everybody present, imprinting the exchange rates on them, "This is the list of exchange rates, please accept it!"

In a flash, Yue Zhong understood what he could exchange.

There were all sorts of items within the exchange system, with uncountable Gold-Grade treasures. Even the Gold Battle Armor on Yue Zhong could be exchanged. There were even Mechs with strength surpassing Type 10 experts. However, depending on the items, the exchange value was different. A gold-grade treasure would usually cost about 100,000 nuclei and above. As for the Mech that could surpass Type 10 experts, it required a million nuclei or a single King-class nucleus. It was truly precious.

Yue Zhong eyed the God-Devil System A.I., his fists clenched tight as he took in a deep breath, and without hesitation, he stepped up to ask, "Light, why, why did your Master make Earth go through those changes?!" After the apocalypse, over 1 billion people had died, and the rest had suffered terribly.

Along the way, Yue Zhong had seen many tragedies, broken families, betrayals, cannibals, and all sorts of horrendous things. These were all engraved deeply in his mind. As a result, he had become a hardened tyrant and seemed stone-cold at times, but in truth, in the deepest parts of his heart, he had always been furious about the state of matters. It was anger from his conscience as a human being.

Light chuckled, "Please pay the price of 1 nucleus." Yue Zhong waved his hand and threw a Tentacular Beast nucleus at her. When battling those beasts earlier, Yue Zhong had seen Harlem picking up those nuclei, thus, he took the opportunity to pick up a few as well.

When the nucleus touched Light, it disappeared immediately.

Light then smiled and spoke slowly but clearly, "Master had ordered for the Earth to undergo changes in order to allow the life forms on it to evolve. It would create powerful soldiers and warriors, at the same time, he could gain joy from seeing the growth of humans. Mr. Yue Zhong, if those things did not happen, you would not have evolved to this stage."

'Based on your standing at that point in time, your knowledge, character, psychology, and overall health, I can compute your fate. You would have struggled for 20 years, becoming a general manager of a company worth 1.5million in assets, married to Lu Wen. Both of you would have a son, and you will live to the age of 76 and die. Your friends would become ordinary members of society, without the strength, status, nor power they have now."

"Now, you're an expert at the peak of the Type 9 realm. According to the classifications of the Great God World, there is something called the half-step True God stage. You're just one step away from the Type 10 realm. Please continue to strive hard, you're looked upon favorably! Within this batch of survivors of the Tower of Babel, there's only Yue Zhong, Lei Huang, Balthazar, Brendan, and Radford with chances of becoming a Type 10 expert within 10,000 years. As for the rest, without fortuitous encounters, it would be impossible."

"Those who I have called out, please do not be arrogant. These 10,000 estimate refers to the constant battle against the Tentacular Beasts and exchanging the nuclei with all sorts of evolution resources. If you want to cultivate within the Fort of Hope, then even if you cultivate for 100,000 years, there's no chance of

breaking through."

Hearing those words from Light, everyone trembled and looked to the 5 of them who were called with gazes of envy and jealousy.

As for the 5 experts, other than Yue Zhong, they revealed expressions of joy. They had fought so hard in order to become a Type 10 expert. Now, there was a ray of hope, they were naturally ecstatic. Within the Great God World, even if they cultivated for 100,000 years, they would not be able to reach the True God realm.

Yue Zhong suddenly asked, "Light, is your Master capable of wiping out all the Tentacular Beasts?"

"1 nucleus!"

He immediately threw one over.

Light replied in a short and precise manner, "Yes!"

After a moment, Yue Zhong discovered that Light was not as fluent as earlier, and had a strange feeling. Yue Zhong then spoke solemnly, "I want to meet your Master, what are the requirements?"

"1 nucleus!"

Again, he threw one over.

There was a strange glint in her eyes, as she smiled, "On this planet, there are 9 Tentacular King Beasts, and 3 Tentacular Queen Beasts. As long as you can take them out, I can take you to meet Master."

After that, she sent out a beam of black light to everyone, "This is the map containing information on the positions of those powerful beasts that I mentioned."

Light laughed, "If there're no further questions, I'll be making a move. When you have enough Tentacular Nuclei, you can summon me once more to conduct exchanges." She then disappeared into motes of light.

When she left, there was a hint of fury in Yue Zhong's eyes, "To create powerful soldiers, he could easily sacrifice a billion lives?! Damn it, I'm still too weak. When I've evolved enough, I will make sure to teach that fucker a lesson!!"

Yue Zhong might be at the half-step True God stage, but in front of the expert who had the God-Devil System, he was still too weak. He did not know how strong the other part was, but he knew that even a Type 10 expert was nothing to that fellow.

After all, there were plenty of Type 10 Mechs, Type 10 Mutant Beasts and monsters in the exchange system. It was obvious that the owner of the God-Devil System could create such powerful beings. Yue Zhong was still a weakling. Yue Zhong also only dared to show his temper after the A.I. left.

Qi Yang smiled warmly at everyone, "Come, let's all go celebrate, the arrival of our new members. Everyone can get to know one another. Haha!"

The Devil Race might be selfish and had their own motivations, but Qi Yang had already become a Type 10 expert and protected the Fort of Hope for so many years, thus, he had grown past all schemes and selfish ambitions.

To him right now, surviving, evolving, and becoming stronger, was the only goal to chase after. With powerful allies, they could all survive better.

Inside the Fort, the Type 9 experts numbered less than 500, but those below that realm were over a million.

In a vast square, there were many crystal tables, as the hundreds of Type 9 experts sat to enjoy delicious food.

Beautiful women of each race were dancing on the stage, to the sound of melodious music, as though it was heaven on earth.

At the head of each table, there were 10 seats, of which, the 5 great Type 10 experts, as well as the 5 half-step True Gods that

Light had announced to have the greatest hope of breaking through.

The 5 great heads of the Fort were Harlem of the Human Race, Qi Yang of the Evil Devil Race, Gui Li of the Man-Eater Race, Zu Hua of the Beast Race, and Lie Yan of the Stone Race.

Yue Zhong and Lei Huang were humans, thus, they were closer to Harlem, and sat near him.

Yue Zhong suddenly asked, "Sir Harlem, why is that the people here are so little?"

The Fort had stood for millions of years, and under such circumstances, it had produced all sorts of life forms, and yet, there were only a million-odd people. It was mysterious.

Harlem put down his wine glass and sighed deeply, a sunken look in his eyes, "The people here are restricted by the Fort. It can only accommodate 1,110,000 people. If the inhabitants exceed this amount, us Type 10 experts would not be able to absorb the energy and would become weaker. Hence, we can only control the population. There's a rule here, that if one does not become a Type 9 expert in 500 years, and is not needed by any Type 9 powerhouse, they would be abandoned."

When Yue Zhong heard this, his heart shuddered. Abandoned, naturally meant given up on and left for dead. After all, the heads of the Fort would not allow anyone to leave the Fort to become food for the Tentacular Beasts.

It seemed that the Fort of Hope was also a cruel place. Lei Huang downed the contents of his glass, and asked, "Sir Harlem, when are we moving out to deal with the nesting problem?"

Harlem replied, "7 days! The nesting requires 10 days at least, and the 7th day is usually the most critical period. Most of the strength would be concentrated within the nests, and it is the moment that they were weakest. That's the only chance we have to deal with

their nest."

Chapter 1015: Universe Tree!

After the banquet was over, Yue Zhong came up to the exchange system once more.

When he arrived, there was a flash of light, as Light materialized, and revealed a brilliant smile, "How do you do, Yue Zhong, or should I say, Oracle? May I ask, what do you intend to exchange for?"

Yue Zhong waved his hands, throwing 24 nuclei to her, "I want to exchange for 24 years' worth of time to cultivate, one hour for a year."

The God-Devil System was beyond any Gold-grade treasure, and one of the most important reason was that it controlled time. In the exchange system, there was the option of exchanging for cultivation time. The exchange rates were as follows, 1 hour: 1 year, or 1 hour: 10 years, and even more. Of course, the stronger the rate, the more nuclei required.

Yue Zhong only had a few Tentacular nuclei, thus, he only had enough to exchange for 24 years.

His speed of improvement had been fast, purely because of his God-Devil Imprint. However, because of his speed, he needed time to consolidate and comprehend his laws and Daos.

Along the way, Yue Zhong had made use of the God-Devil Imprint to evolve, and he could use it to reach the Type 10 realm. However, there are differences even among those in the same realm. Only by going through refining, consolidation of knowledge and information, cultivating diligently, would one become strong.

When he was weak, he had always chased after strength. Now, at the peak, what he needed was knowledge and absorbing of information, truly building a solid foundation, to become a terrifying God-like being.

Light pointed to a number of rooms packed neatly within the palace, and said, "Understood, that is the Room of Time. Once you enter, it will begin, after 24 hours, it will automatically send you out."

Yue Zhong walked in immediately and began to sift through all the knowledge he obtained in the Tower of Babel.

As he cultivated, he sank in deep and lost track of himself. In a flash, 24 years had gone past.

Outside, it had only been a day, and the Room of Time automatically opened up to send Yue Zhong.

When Yue Zhong was sent out, he opened up his eyes slowly, revealing a glint of wisdom.

As he came to clarity, he exchanged for a device that could search for Tentacular Beasts and chose to leave the Fort of Hope, hunting those beasts.

He did not head for the nests immediately, instead, choosing to hunt outside the nests. He would conduct sneak attacks and retreat quickly from time to time.

On this planet, there were countless beasts roaming about. Only a horde or the King Beasts had the ability to kill Yue Zhong. Other than that, the rest of the weaker beasts and smaller groups served to become his prey.

After hunting enough beasts, he would return to the Fort of Hope and enter the Room of Time to cultivate.

7 days passed quickly. The Room of Time that Yue Zhong was in opened up, and he walked out slowly, his gaze filled with a deep and profound look. His current understanding was more than a hundred times deeper than 7 days before. At the same time, his strength had increased exponentially.

"Yue Zhong, are you out?" Qi Yang looked at Yue Zhong before his brows arched, and there was a sharp look, "Ah? You look

somewhat different."

Qi Yang could tell that Yue Zhong had undergone some changes. Before his closed-door cultivation, Yue Zhong had looked like a sharp, unsheathed blade, full of killing intent and strength. However, after the hundred years within the Room of Time, Yue Zhong had become unfathomable even to Qi Yang.

Harlem swept Yue Zhong a look as well, before urging, "Come on, our target are the nests, we don't have time to waste!"

Everyone was looking to destroy the nests, and every single minute and second was precious. Harlem could not bother about Yue Zhong's training progress.

Breaking through to the Type 10 realm from the Great Circle of the Type 9 realm was not easy, even if one cultivated for 10,000 years. Even if Yue Zhong had improved by a small step, it would likely not affect the battle much.

Soon, 5 battleships of over 10,000m, their frames entirely in white, equipped countless E-Grade cannons flew out, heading towards the nests.

These 5 E-Grade Battleships were the true treasures left behind in this Fort of Hope from the numerous generations before.

Their speed was terrifying, the moment they opened their throttles, the distance crossed was over a million kilometers. They soon appeared about 150km away from the Universe Tree.

Qi Yang spoke solemnly, "We've reached!"

At that instant, the hull contorted and disappeared entirely, allowing the people within to look at the huge Universe Tree. It stood over a thousand kilometers tall, reaching past the clouds, as though poking straight into the galaxy. It was filled with lush green leaves.

Countless green light beams shot out from the ground, flowing along with the Universe Tree towards the sky. It was extremely

beautiful and captivating.

Harlem eyed the Universe Tree and spoke, "This is the Universe Tree, the divine tree supporting the Fort of Hope. Normally, there are strong self-defense mechanisms, and no living beings can get near. However, every 100 years, there would be a period of weakness. During this period, it is unable to prevent the Tentacular Beasts from absorbing its strength and energy. This is also your only way of heading back to the Great God World."

Hearing those words, many Type 9 experts became excited, eyeing the Universe Tree with passion.

Those experts who could exit from the Tower of Babel, all of them had attained some incredible benefits. If they could return to the Great God World or any of the 800 worlds, they would become peak experts, wielding incredible authority and power. If they remained here, they would just be cannon fodder.

Around the Universe Tree, there were 3 huge holes with unknown depths, and countless Tentacular Beasts crawling all around.

Their perception was terrifying, immediately catching the scent of the 5 E-Grade Battleships a 100 kilometer away. Numerous Tentacular Beasts began to pour out of the 3 nests, pouncing towards the direction of the 5 E-Grade Battleships.

Outside the nests, the ground rumbled as countless Tentacular Beasts poured, charging towards their directions.

Other than them, there were even some flying-types that had dragon-like wings, soaring through the skies.

The terrifying horde was heading over.

Seeing the numbers coming at them both from land and air, everyone felt a chill in their heart. Lei Huang and the rest finally understood why there would be so many True God experts that had fallen.

These Tentacular Beasts were not ants that could be squashed to death. Even a Type 10 expert would not be able to utilize the atmospheric energy or Qi to squash them. Instead, it had to be done through melee combat.

If it were in the Great God World, a True God expert could wipe out everything in a thousand kilometers radius, other than Type 9 experts. That was truly terrifying.

From afar, those Tentacular Beasts opened their mandibles, firing blue beams towards the 5 E-Grade Battleships.

The 5 E-Grade Battleships flashed and opened up their energy shields, withstanding the blue beams.

At the same time, the cannons on the ships also began to fire back at the Tentacular Beasts.

Under the barrage of attacks, many Tentacular Beasts were punched full of holes, and fresh blood dyed the ground.

At the same time, a number of silver balls were fired out towards the horde.

The moment these silver mechanical balls soared out, they extended to form silver Mech Beasts with 2 blades at their sides, wings on their backs, and their 4 limbs powerful.

The moment those silver Mech Beasts landed on the ground, they charged straight right for the Tentacular Beasts, and both sides began to engage in a vicious clash.

Soon, the battlefield was filled with broken parts and flesh.

These silver Mech Beasts were all composed of the most advanced nano cells, as long as their smart chips were intact, they could fight on indefinitely. On the ground, it seemed as though the Mech Beasts had the advantage. However, in terms of numbers, the Tentacular Beasts held the advantage. From time to time, more beasts would pour out from the nests, tearing the Mech Beasts apart.

The Tentacular Beasts were truly savage, consuming everything and anything. They could even digest rocks, turning them into energy to survive. It was because of this that they could survive on this cruel and harsh planet.

Qi Yang was solemn, "They had already built 3 nests. The 9 King-class Beasts and 3 Queen Beasts are inside. This time, we have to focus our forces on one particular nest and destroy it first. Lie Yan, I'll leave the command here to you. This is our only chance to focus on the nest."

Chapter 1016: Tentacular King Beast!

In the face of the horde of Tentacular Beasts, the experts were definitely not a match for them. The best strategy was to focus all their strength on destroying a nest, only then they would have a chance for success.

Lie Yan, who was over 4m-tall, his whole body forged from crystal fire jade, nodded, "Alright, leave it to me."

Quickly, all the Type 9 experts equipped their Gold-Grade armor and weapons and followed the 4 True God experts out of the battleship.

Over the countless years, the Fort of Hope had accumulated many Gold-Grade weapons and equipment. Although in the course of battles, many of them were damaged, they were still of the Gold-Grade, thus, they were naturally stronger than most of the other equipment that the Type 9 experts had.

At that moment, the 5 E-Grade Battleships focused their fire and shot out at one nest.

Those cannons were capable of injuring a True God expert seriously, or even killing one, thus the Tentacular Beasts could not withstand those beams.

Under the assault of those 5 beams, everywhere the beam touched was vaporized, and over a million Tentacular Beasts were wiped out in an instant.

When the 5 beams slammed into the nest, it blasted apart, as countless flesh and blood splattered out of it.

A clear tunnel was carved out from that beam, as though a huge trench had been dug out, revealing the massive nest within.

The dense horde of aerial Tentacular Beasts in the air was also vaporized during the beam, revealing a patch of sky.

Yue Zhong looked at the devastation caused, and was filled with shock, "Those cannons are truly powerful. If it was used on Earth, I'm afraid there would be nothing left of Earth."

The density of this Tentacular Planet was easily more than a hundred times that of Earth, thus its gravity was also more than a hundred times. The cannons of the 5 Battleships had been focused and was enough to cause a 100m-deep tear in the ground. The beam had even pierced through the 1st nest, causing a deep hole. If it was used on Earth, it would likely penetrate through.

Qi Yang hollered once, and turned into a flash towards the nest, "Charge!"

Currently, it was the best to storm the first nest, as those Tentacular Beasts in the way had been eliminated. Otherwise, even a True God expert would find it tough to trudge through the horde.

All the experts flashed and headed towards the first nest. They were clear that time was not on their side.

The might of the 5 E-Grade Battleships was powerful, able to blast through an ordinary planet, however, the cooldown time period was long, requiring at least 24 hours before they could fire again.

The Tentacular Beasts could feel the threat and quickly charged towards Qi Yang and the rest.

As they scrambled over towards the first nest, many of them opened their mandibles and fired out blue beams of light at the experts.

The number of Tentacular Beasts was simply too high, their blue beams almost like rain, leaving them no room to dodge or evade. Many of them were struck in their bodies, but under the protection of their gold-grade armor, they were forced one side.

The stronger experts immediately stood up and continued to charge towards the nest.

The weaker ones or those who were unfortunate were bombarded by the numerous blue beams, and their defensive equipment was torn through, before finally collapsing and the owners ripped apart, dying in a miserable fashion.

Seeing the weaker experts being torn apart by the blue beams, many of the rest felt their hearts turn cold, and their expressions of despair. Most of them were equipped with rare and powerful defensive equipment, but it was still hard to withstand those blue beams. They were talented experts out there as well, however, under the circumstances, they were reminded of their weaker days where they had to struggle and fight for survival.

After paying the price of a dozen experts, Qi Yang managed to lead the rest into the first nest.

Inside, there were many Tentacular Beasts corpses, their blood and dismembered limbs splattered all over the nest.

"Oh right, the nuclei inside the brains are all treasures."

Yue Zhong looked at the corpse and with a thought, he waved his hands, causing their corpses to fly into his Universe Ring.

The heads of these Tentacular Beasts were incredibly tough, if Yue Zhong wanted to break through them, it would take some strength and time. Under the current circumstances, he could not afford to waste either.

Seeing Yue Zhong keep the heads, the rest also quickly scrambled to collect the heads as well.

Since all Type 9 powerhouses had some comprehension into spatial laws, they could make use of spatial crystals to form spatial treasures. Unfortunately, their treasures could not compare to Yue Zhong's Universe Ring.

"Make your preparations!" As they charged in for some distance, Qi Yang gazed deep into the first nests, and he just uttered that sentence when his face changed and he barked, "Careful!! It's a

King-class Beast!!"

At this time, there was a powerful energy fluctuation, as 2 thick and coarse blue beams shot out from below, slamming into the group. In an instant, 13 of the experts were vaporized, together with their equipment.

The defense of the Gold-Grade armors was shocking, however, they also had an upper limit. Obviously, the power of those beams had exceeded the threshold.

Seeing this, the rest of the experts felt their scalps go numb, they had finally seen the terror of a King-class Beast. It was something not weaker than a True God expert.

Qi Yang's eyes lit up as he roared out and charged, while the rest of the True Gods soared deeper in, "2 beams, good chance!! One of them is injured, this is the best opportunity we have. Everyone attack with all your might!"

Everyone was already forced against the wall, hence, they could only grit their teeth and charged further on.

They were all peak experts, and in a breath, they had already reached deeper.

Deep inside the nest, there was a Queen-class Beast, with a pair of sharp claws, its body length over 10km, while 3 other King-class Beasts stood in front of it, each of them 50m in size, with a blue-crystal armor. They had dragon-like wings, 6 powerful legs, and 8 tentacles, their entire bodies covered in sharp spikes.

Currently, one of the King-class Beast had its lower body blasted apart, and it was struggling frantically. The numerous tentacles of the Queen-class Beast were stuck in the body of the King-class Beast, nourishing it and hastening its recovery.

With the nourishment, the wounds of the King-class Beast was healing at a rapid rate, visible to the naked eye.

Inside the nest, other than these 4 great beasts, there were over

tens of thousands of Tentacular Beasts. They were larger than ordinary Tentacular Beasts, and the moment they saw the experts arriving, they began to attack.

"Quick!! We have to act quickly to wipe them out. Otherwise, when that King-class Beast recovers, we will be in trouble!"

Qi Yang pulled out a pitch-black statue that was exuding a thick, dark energy. It had 9 Demonic Dragons engraved on it, and he slashed out on his own body, causing some blood to flow into the Gold-Grade Treasure.

Immediately, it lit up, and 9 Demonic Dragons, containing the strength of the Type 10 realm, flapped their wings and soared out of the statue, pouncing towards one of the King-class Beast.

The Tentacular King-Class Beast was vicious, evading and charging towards one of the Demonic Dragons, retaliating with its blades and managed to tear through its body.

The moment the Demonic Dragon was torn apart, it could not reform.

Instead, the remnant energy flowed into the bodies of the 8 other Dragons, causing them to evolve into stronger beings.

At the same time, the tentacles of the King-class Beast shot out like projectiles towards the remaining 8 Demonic Dragons.

The 8 dragons opened their jaws and pounced onto the Tentacular King-class Beast, biting out chunks of bloody flesh, even tearing through a few tentacles in the process.

Both sides went all out in a savage and vicious manner.

The other King-Beast flashed and charged through the group, its blades slashing out, and directly tore through 2 experts and their Gold-Grade Armor, before tearing them apart and swallowing them.

Chapter 1017: Intense Battle in the Nest!

The True God expert of the Man-Eater Race, Gui Li, who was 4m-tall, possessing a single green horn, his entire body covered in green fur, and his visage ferocious and terrifying, had a vicious glint in his eyes before he suddenly transformed. His physique ballooned to a size of over 10m, similar to the Green Tooth Ghosts that Yue Zhong had come across before.

After he transformed, a terrifying aura emitted from him, and in a flash, he had appeared in front of the Tentacular King-class Beast, grabbing one of the tentacles and slammed the beast viciously onto the ground.

The Beast True God Zu Hua, who had a True Dragon head, his entire body covered in gold dragon scales, his height of about 3m and his physique powerful, charged right ahead. He appeared in front of that Tentacular Beast and grabbed out, ripping one tentacle away.

Harlem wielded a mighty gold battleax, looking like a heavenly god as he slashed out at the Tentacular King-class Beast, his strike seemingly capable of ripping space apart.

The Tentacular King-class Beast raised one of its blades, slashing back at the gold battleax, forcefully parrying that slash. At the same time, the rest of its tentacles shot out towards Gui Li, Zu Hua, and Harlem.

The strength of the Tentacular King-class Beast was not to be underestimated. Its tentacles could even injure a True God expert heavily, to the point of death.

Gui Li and Zu Hua channeled their strength, slamming out at the tentacles, blasting them apart.

Under the frenzied assault of 3 True Gods, the Tentacular King-class Beast continued to shudder and tremble, fresh blood flowing,

and it lost all energy to retaliate.

Seeing that, everyone's faces fell, their fear towards the King-class Beast increasing. They had finally understood how terrifying a King-class Beast was.

After all, Harlem and the other 2 were True God warriors. They simply had to lift a finger and they could wipe out a Type 9 expert. No one present could hope to take on the combined attacks of these 3 experts. And yet, even when assaulting the weakened King-class Beast, they had no way of killing it at one go. One could only imagine the true terror of the beast when it was at its peak.

4 True God experts joining hands to take down 2 Tentacular King-class Beasts, while the rest of the experts had to deal with the 10,000-over Tentacular Beasts in the nest.

Harlem slashed out at the King-class Beast and yelled, "Zu Hua, you go help those fledglings carve out a path. Quickly eliminate that injured King-class Beast!"

Currently, the 3 experts had launched into a flurry of attacks at the Tentacular King-class Beast, causing it grievous injuries. Zu Hua could pry himself away from the battle to assist the Type 9 powerhouses.

Those Type 9 experts were not a match for the 10,000-odd Tentacular Beasts. Even if they were equipped with gold-grade treasures, they could not hope to withstand the multitude of attacks. The difference in strength was too great.

"Ok!"

Zu Hua did not waste any breath, immediately charging towards the Tentacular Beasts. He channeled his energy, and his claws slashed out with 20m-beams, slicing through the horde of monsters.

Within the space, many Tentacular Beasts fell under the merciless attacks of Zu Hua, their bodies sliced apart and fresh

blood flowed.

Many of the experts quickly followed after, charging at those Tentacular Beasts.

A number of them had ranged weapons, firing out at the Tentacular Beasts, tearing them apart.

The Tentacular Beasts were a powerful alien species of the universe, capable of devouring almost anything, including Domains, Laws, Energies, atmospheric Qi, spatial energies, etc. Hence, the comprehension that these powerhouses obtained through the Tower of Babel was basically obsolete in the face of these monsters. However, the Exchange System had its fair share of powerful equipment that could be effective.

The only regret was that their defenses were tough and their regeneration terrifying. It took many hits from those gold-grade treasures just to take one down.

The majority of the rest had close-combat gold-grade weapons. They could only charge in frantically at the horde, displaying their strongest attacks to kill the beasts.

A long, gold-grade train of over 100m appeared, smashing through the horde, slamming into one particular Tentacular Beast viciously, causing its body to burst apart.

After that, the train continued to surge forward, crushing everything in its path, directly turning 20-odd Tentacular Beasts into meat paste.

However, just as it killed about 29 of the beasts, hundreds of tentacles bored down on it, wrapping around that invincible and indestructible item, forcefully holding it in place.

The next moment, a dozen Tentacular Beasts slammed into the gold train, causing it to shudder intensely. At the same, many of the beasts began to slash out viciously.

Under those attacks, the gold train that had been invincible and

indestructible throughout the 800 worlds finally had a number of dangerous cracks.

The owner was shocked, and hastily channeled his treasure, causing it to billow with more steam, as it tried to shake off the Tentacular Beasts. However, the tentacles were too numerous, and regardless of how the gold train struggled, it had no way of extracting itself.

The gold train needed time to accelerate for its speed and destructive power to be most effective. Once it was impeded by the tentacles, its strength would be reduced greatly. Furthermore, these Tentacular Beasts were much more powerful than those outside. Even True God experts would find it hard to escape from these beasts.

As it was on the verge of breaking apart, Yue Zhong appeared like a specter among the horde, punching out at one of the beasts, instantly turning it into meat paste.

Before the rest of the beasts could react, Yue Zhong punched out continuously, slamming more of them into the ground, before jumping on the train.

He roared out, "Head towards the injured King-class Beast!! Go!! I will protect all of you!!"

Before this, as they all gone through the Tower of Babel, Yue Zhong had great enmity with the owner of this gold train. However, under the current circumstances, they could only join forces.

A clear voice sounded from within, "Alright!"

At the same time, the owner pulled out a gold seed that he had obtained from the Tower of Babel, throwing it at the damaged gold train.

The seed emitted a powerful radiance, enveloping the train, and the damages began to repair at a visible rate.

At the same time, the speed of the train picked up, and it smashed into the injured Tentacular King-class Beast.

Along the way, hundreds of tentacles continued to writhe around, trying to constrict the train.

Yue Zhong stood on the train, wielding a gold-grade Flame Battle Blade slashing out at the tentacles, slicing them up.

More Tentacular Beasts lunged towards the train viciously.

Yue Zhong ran along the train, slashing out continuously without a break, easily killing the numerous Tentacular Beasts.

The other beasts far away felt the threat to their King, and quickly opened up their mandibles, firing out blue beams at the train.

The train radiated brightly, activating its gold-grade shield, forcefully blocking the beams. The train was a gold-grade treasure after all, and its defenses were astonishing. Its shield had negated most of the beams. Only the bladed limbs of the beasts could damage the shield and its body.

The train continued to chug and smash forward mercilessly, bashing through numerous beasts, while Yue Zhong stood on top, wielding his Flame Battle Blade to take care of those that got too close.

In a few breaths, the gold train continued on its track, smashing into the Tentacular King-class Beast that only had its upper body intact.

With a loud blast, the heavily injured beast was slammed to one side, the connections and tentacles filled with nourishment ripped apart. The body of the King-class Beast bled out a little, but other than that, there were no other visible injuries.

At that moment, the beast had finally regained a slight amount of its strength. It let out a weak roar of rage, one tentacle smashing towards the gold train.

With a loud blast, the gold train was smashed and destroyed, half of its carriage entirely devastated. The rest of it was sent soaring back towards the horde of Tentacular Beasts.

Chapter 1018: Killing the King Beast!

Taking the opportunity when the King-class Beast was distracted by the gold train, Yue Zhong's Holy Light Wings burst open, as he turned into a flash of light and charged right beside the beast. He then slashed down with all his might, the Flame Battle Blade burning brightly.

The blade sliced down, as though meeting an incredibly tough wall, and barely got past the first layer.

In a rage, Yue Zhong roared out, his body tensing up, every single cell bursting forth with power. His strength reached a hundred-fold, as he shouted, "Fusion Slash!!"

At that moment, the Flame Battle Blade seemed to burst forth with terrifying might, causing the carapace of the King-class Beast to burst open, fresh blood splattering everywhere.

This particular move that used the potential of the cells within Yue Zhong's body to burst forth with strength was a secret move he comprehended in the 100-year closed-cultivation. It was only possible with his God-Devil Physique.

Had he tried to use this move at the Type 8 realm, his body would have burst apart. Even at the half-step True God realm, this move was extremely consuming, and it could only be utilized once, not in a prolonged state.

The blade sliced through the body of the King-class Beast, however, it did not die, instead, letting out a piercing shriek. A tentacle shot out, aiming to strike Yue Zhong viciously.

The blade flashed once more, as his cells burst forth once more with their potential, and in a brilliant gleam of light, the tentacle was sliced off and dropped to the ground.

After slicing through the tentacle, the Holy Light Wings flapped, and Yue Zhong's speed soared, charging towards the head of the

King-class Beast. He then burst forth once more with the Fusion Slash, attacking the head.

"Si!!!"

Following a miserable scream of agony, the head was torn apart, and the brain inside was incinerated, turning into ash rapidly before the beast died.

With the death of the King-class Beast, there was a thick and abundant mysterious energy that entered Yue Zhong, filled with truths of the universe, not only nourishing him with life force but also a part of the energies, truths, principles and even spatial laws that the King-class Beast had obtained.

After he absorbed the life force, Yue Zhong had a flash of insight, obtaining some conjectures about the Tower of Babel, as well as the Tentacular Planet itself, "So it was like this... the bodies of these Tentacular Beasts are truly amazing. There are some similarities between my God-Devil Physique, God-Devil Imprint, and these beasts. It was likely that the owner of the system had researched on the physiques of these beasts to create the God-Devil Physique. , the ability to absorb everything of the Imprint is similar to these beasts' abilities to consume everything as well. The difference is that the direction of the God-Devil Imprint is for humans to evolve, absorbing the purest life force, while these Tentacular Beasts absorbed all sorts of energies to fight and nourish themselves. From the perspective of an evolution standpoint, the God-Devil Imprint definitely has an advantage, but from a combat perspective, the Tentacular Beasts are stronger. As long as I absorb enough King-class Beasts, I can combine the best of both worlds, and become even stronger."

Qi Yang was still holding off the other Tentacular King-class Beast, and when he saw what happened over at Yue Zhong's end, he was filled with shock, "What?! He actually killed that Tentacular King-class Beast!!! Isn't this Yue Zhong too overpowered?! Even if he is an Oracle, killing a King-class by

himself is just too heaven-defying! The past few Oracles that I've seen were also dragons amongst men, but they cannot compare to him!"

Harlem had a similar look of shock, "That's crazy! This fellow is just at the great Circle of the Type 9 realm, and yet, he had already surpassed us Type 10 experts. It's the first time seeing such a terrifying existence!"

The Tentacular King-class Beast was a Type 10 life form, at its peak, a single beast could take on 2 Type 10 experts and not be at a disadvantage. This time, even of the strength within the nest had been affected, it was still incredibly vicious, and could suppress Qi Yang.

With such a powerful beast, even if it were injured, it was difficult for a Type 9 powerhouse to be able to injure it with gold-grade equipment, much less kill one. And yet, Yue Zhong was able to do so, causing everyone to be shocked.

After Yue Zhong killed the Tentacular King-class Beast, the numerous Tentacular Beasts became enraged, roaring out and surging forth with even more fervor, pouncing towards Yue Zhong.

The rest of the beasts at a distance had also discarded their targets, opening their mouths to fire out blue beams at Yue Zhong.

The Holy Light Wings on Yue Zhong's back flashed, and he transformed into a beam of light as he pounced towards the Queen-class Beast.

In a breath, he had appeared on top of it, his cells transforming once more as he slashed down viciously at its head.

That strike was able to cause a deep gash, as large amounts of blood began to pour out.

The head alone of the Tentacular Queen-class Beast was over a few hundred meters in length, thus, Yue Zhong's attack could only

cause a deep gash, and not kill it in a single strike.

Even so, the Queen-class Beast let out an agonized shriek.

It was an egg-producing machine, the core, and nucleus of the Tentacular Beasts. However, its combat abilities were not particularly strong, although its defenses were something to behold.

At that instant, the Tentacular Beasts charged towards Yue Zhong frantically.

The King-class Beast engaged in battle with Qi Yang quickly turned and dashed towards Yue Zhong, while holding up its torn off flesh due to those Demonic Dragons.

The other Tentacular King-class Beast that was held by the other 2 True Gods was immobilized.

Yue Zhong knew his time was little, thus his cells continued to transform, his Flame Battle Blade slashing down repeatedly.

As he was slashing out viciously, the head of the Queen-class was torn through, its blood flowing profusely. After barely a second, Yue Zhong had already destroyed the head and retrieved the nucleus within.

After eliminating the Queen-class Beast, a thick life force thrice that of the King-class Beast surged through Yue Zhong. After he fully absorbed that mysterious and powerful energy, his body began to strengthen once more, evolving towards an even more perfect state.

Having cultivated over a hundred years within the Room of Time, Yue Zhong had obtained all sorts of knowledge and understood the techniques to transform his body. He had also truly grasped the miraculous properties of his God-Devil Physique. It was because of this that he could help his body achieve the next step in evolution quickly.

At the moment that Yue Zhong slaughtered the Queen-class

Beast, the King-class Beast had arrived in front of Yue Zhong, slashing out savagely.

The same instant, Yue Zhong turned around, his Flame Battle Blade searing as it met the King-class Beast's strike.

With a loud explosion, Yue Zhong was sent flying back a few meters, but he deftly leaped into the Tentacular Beast horde and took out more of them.

"He blocked it!! He actually blocked the attack of a King-class!! That's terrifying!! He's obviously not at the True God realm yet, how could he do it?!"

Seeing Yue Zhong block the strike, many of the experts were all taken aback, their faces filled with disbelief.

The all-out attack of the King-class Beast could even surpass that of Harlem and the other Type 10 experts. To think that Yue Zhong could actually block it, meant that his combat ability had even surpassed that of Harlem and the rest.

At the moment of the Queen-class Beast's death, its abdomen burst apart, as countless fist-sized Tentacular Beasts crawled out, escaping through countless channels. They were not yet matured, but as long as one got out, it was possible for one of them to evolve into another Queen-class Beast.

At the same time, the nest began to break apart, as a bright green energy shot towards the sky, radiating outwards.

When Qi Yang saw this, he shouted, "Flee!!! Once a Queen-class Beast dies, the entire nest will collapse!! The King-class Beasts of the other 2 nests will come over quickly to provide reinforcements!! We have to evacuate now!!"

Chapter 1019: Desperate Situation!

The moment he finished, he had quickly fled towards the exit.

Harlem and the rest also quickly turned around, fleeing frantically.

The Tentacular King-class Beasts all grew under extreme circumstances, each of them possessing capabilities well beyond Qi Yang and the rest. Since this nest was destroyed, the surrounding King-class Beasts would definitely rush over to provide reinforcements. If they all stayed here, everyone would die without a doubt.

Qi Yang and the rest had already suffered some losses against the King-class Beasts, and a few of their True God comrades in the past had fallen under the siege of those beasts. That sort of despair and the hopeless situation was not something they wanted to relive.

The moment the True Gods turned to flee, the rest of the powerhouses quickly followed after.

The rest of the Tentacular Beasts and the King-class Beast did not even bother about them, instead, they turned to charge at Yue Zhong.

"A bunch of bastards!!"

Yue Zhong stared at the incoming horde, his expression turning ugly. His Holy Light Wings flapped once and while wielding his Flame Battle Blade, he quickly soared out.

The beasts all tried to pounce towards him, their sharp blades slashing out, while their tentacles formed dense nets in a bid to impede Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong waved the blade, slashing out at the numerous Tentacular Beasts, turning them into slices while he continued to charge out in a frenzy.

After absorbing the life force of the Queen-class Beast, Yue Zhong's combat strength had already exceeded that of a True God powerhouse. He continued to swing his Flame Battle Blade away, carving out a path through slaughter.

As he flew out of the horde, one of the King-class Beasts, which had been heavily injured, slashed out at him with a flash of its bladed limb.

In response, Yue Zhong swung his blade viciously, attacking the bladed limb, and his strength burst out in a terrifying fashion. The resulting force from the collision forced Yue Zhong backward from the horde.

Within a breath, countless beasts pounced towards Yue Zhong, their sharp blades aiming for his face.

Their blades were sharp and numerous, even the Gold Battle Armor would not be able to resist that sort of damage.

In mid-air, the wings on Yue Zhong's back flapped and he twisted to evade many of the beasts, slashing out with his Flame Battle Blade, taking out many of them.

The King-class Beast continued to chase after Yue Zhong in a frenzy. Each time he tried to escape from the horde, the beast would send out its tentacles to slap Yue Zhong back into the horde.

The other King-class Beast continued to lay on the ground silently, slowly extracting some blue light from the ground, its strength recovering to a terrifying extent.

Each King-class Beast could take on 2 True God experts like Qi Yang at its peak strength. This time, they had been casting their nests, hence the drop in strength. That was how the True Gods could suppress these King-class Beasts. The moment they recovered their strength, it would spell Yue Zhong's doom.

Yue Zhong continued to slaughter the Tentacular Beasts, absorbing the life force. However, he was expending much of his

stamina and strength every passing second. If this went on, he would definitely fall.

"Save me!!" Right at this time, there was an urgent plea for help within the horde.

"That is! The gold train!! It was still intact?!" Yue Zhong swept out with his sense and discovered the golden train still struggling inside the horde. With a flicker, he charged towards its position, slicing up any beast standing in his way.

In a few breaths, he had appeared in front of the train, which had been battered to a pathetic state. There were only 3 carriages left, and its length was now reduced to about 50m. Many of the Tentacular Beasts were holding it down with their tentacles, slashing down with their bladed limbs, damaging the train.

Yue Zhong transformed into a beam as he slaughtered the beasts nearby. He then leaped on top of it and roared out, "Charge now!"

"Good!"

The gold train blew steam, and the track appeared once more, as it charged forwards frantically.

Yue Zhong continued to slash out in a frenzy, killing any Tentacular Beasts that got too near.

The King-class beast that had been harassing Yue Zhong arrived in front of him, slicing down with its blades, its tentacles also shooting out to hit him.

At that instant, Yue Zhong's cells transformed once more, his strength bursting out as he charged forward, and slashed out viciously at the Tentacular King-class Beast.

His strength burst out, adding on the intense force of the gold train, both joined together, allowing him to exceed the strength of the Tentacular King-class Beast, forcing the beast to fly away.

Yue Zhong was also knocked back, striking the train hard due to

the recoil, causing the gold train to shudder slightly.

The gold train took the chance to push its speed and shot out of the nest.

About 500m away, one King-class Beast rushed over, slashing down viciously at the train.

Forcing down the turmoil within his body, Yue Zhong ignited his cells once more, and the blade in his hands flashed out, slicing out at the blade of the King-class Beast.

With a loud blast, Yue Zhong was sent flying once more due to insufficient strength, as he slammed into the train once more, spitting out a mouthful of blood.

The capabilities of the King-class Beast was extremely terrifying, 2 of the tentacles shot forward, directly slamming into the gold train, causing even more damage, while sending it back towards the nest.

At the entrance of the nest, there were countless Tentacular Beasts swarming all over the place, sealing it shut.

Within the gold train, there was a fearful shout, "The reinforcements have arrived! What do we do, Yue Zhong?"

Yue Zhong swept out with his sense, only to see numerous Tentacular Beasts all gathered outside the entrance, only the nest that was spitting the green lights did not have any beasts. He immediately made the decision, "Head towards that other nest, it could be our only chance!"

"Alright!!"

The owner of the gold train was a decisive fellow as well, quickly urging his treasure towards the new direction.

The Tentacular Beasts within the nest rushed towards them frantically, in a bid to slam into the gold train.

Yue Zhong stood on top of the train, slashing out at the

numerous tentacles.

At that instant, the gold train had charged towards the cave that was emitting green light.

That same moment, the King-class Beast that had been absorbing energy let out an earthshaking roar, as 8 tentacles shot out like lightning.

2 of them wrapped around the gold train, forcefully bring it to a halt. The other 6 tentacles slammed towards Yue Zhong with lightning-speed.

Initially, all 8 tentacles had been broken. However, after absorbing enough strength, it released it out into 8 tentacles. The regeneration ability of the Tentacular King-class Beast was extremely terrifying, surpassing even True God experts. However, the True Gods had indestructible souls, as long as their enemies were not these Tentacular Beasts, they could flee with just their nascent souls alone, before resurrecting.

"Abandon the train and flee!"

Yue Zhong roared out in anger, his body transforming once more, as the Flame Battle Blade blasted out, slicing out at the tentacles of the King-class Beast.

Yue Zhong made use of rebound to send himself towards the green cave.

At the same time, a small figure charged out from the gold train, rushing towards the green cave.

Currently, the entire nest was crawling with Tentacular Beasts, and this green cave was their only chance.

Seeing Yue Zhong charge through the green cave, the rest of the Tentacular Beasts quickly surrounded the place, but they just gathered and did not dare to enter, as though afraid of something.

The recovered King-class Beast let out another furious shriek, the

horrifying sounds reverberating through the region.

On the other side, Qi Yang and the rest had been slaughtering their way out after abandoning Yue Zhong and the others, arriving outside of the nest.

"Hahaha!!! Universe Tree!! I've been waiting for this day for so many years!!"

At this time, a golden light shot towards the sky, rushing up the Universe Tree like a meteor, aiming for the top.

Chapter 1020: The Ancient, Strongest Type 10 Powerhouse!

Eyeing the giant Universe Tree, those Type 9 experts that had not reached the half-step True God realm was full of joy, "The Great God World!! We can make use of the tree to return to the Great God World!"

With this thought, many of them could not wait any longer and charged up the tree in a frenzy.

Qi Yang stared at the fleeing Type 9 powerhouses, laughing coldly, "Bunch of fools!! Let's go!"

Harlem and the rest eyed the leaving Type 9 powerhouses with cold looks, as they also turned to flee towards the 5 E-Grade Battleships.

Those who had reached the half-step Great God realm were helpless, and could only follow Harlem and the rest. They had obtained their own information through the exchange system, clarifying that whatever Qi Yang and the rest spoke of, and they were indeed unable to make use of the same passage to return. Under the cover of the 5 E-Grade Battleships, the rest swiftly soared back into the battleships. On the other side, after losing the suppressing fire, countless Tentacular Beasts poured out from the 2 nests.

The moment they rushed out, they quickly pounced towards the Type 9 experts.

"Save us!!"

"Help!!"

"Help me!!!"

"Ah!!!"

"..."

A number of screams of despair rang out from within the horde, as the Type 9 experts were all torn apart by the beasts, their gold-grade treasures not helping in the slightest.

Without the True God experts to hold the fort, the Type 9 experts were met with a mishap and quickly perished.

Bu Lie saw the struggling experts, his eyes flashing with unwillingness, "Sir Harlem, why don't we go and save them? If we act now, we should be able to rescue a few."

Harlem replied with a cold look, "Since they want to go, we will not keep them. If they can break through, it is their own capabilities. If not, it's their fate. There's a limit to our strength, and we cannot keep helping them. If you want to, go by yourself then." Bu Lie noticed that most of the powerhouses present did not share his views, instead, they had a look of schadenfreude. He thus kept silent.

The fact that the Type 9 powerhouses were not willing to stay on to fight caused dissatisfaction among most of the half-step True God experts. They were expressing their unhappiness through this episode. Without the support of the 5 E-Grade Battleships, it was unlikely that many of them could make it past the beast horde.

It was because of this that the number of survivors that return from the Tower of Babel each time was minimal, however, those who did come back had obtained countless treasures and had huge leaps in their strength.

The numbers of the Tentacular Beasts were in the millions, and the dozens of Type 9 experts struggled for barely a while before falling.

Only the golden glint charged close to the peak of the Universe Tree.

Thousands of Tentacular Beasts lunged for that golden beam.
"Trash!! Die!!"

There was a roar of rage, as a number of golden bones shot out, piercing the heads of the beasts and accurately destroyed them.

The golden silhouette continued to run, the golden bones blasting out at the heads of the Tentacular Beasts, tearing them apart, while it continued towards the tree.

On the 5 E-Grade Battleships, everyone watched this with a shocked look.

Qi Yang gazed at that beam, his eyes filled with disbelief, "Strong! That fellow's combat strength should be above the Type 9 realm. However, it's not quite at the Type 10 realm. Strangely, he's only at the peak of the Type 9 realm. What's going on? Harlem? Didn't you receive all those who ascended?" Harlem also frowned, revealing a pondering expression, "No! That day, I did bring everyone back. Those who did not make it have been confirmed to be corpses, their souls also devoured by the Tentacular Beasts."

All of a sudden, one half-step True God expert shouted out, "That's Amano! He's the Golden Giant God Guardian we came across at the 3rd Level!"

"Amano?! He did not die?! Impossible!! He shouldn't be alive!!"

"Amano, Golden Giant God? That's not right! Amano is an expert from the Bone-consuming Ghost Race! How did it become like this?" "...". Hearing Amano's name, the 5 True God warriors were taken aback, as they began to discuss, and the atmosphere instantly became tense.

At this point, one Evil Devil expert at the half-step True Devil realm asked curiously, "Sir Qi Yang, who is Amano exactly?"

Qi Yang fell silent, before sighing, "A long time ago, Amano was our leader. He led us against the Tentacular Beasts. At that time, we trusted him a lot and killed many beasts. However, after a thousand years, he suddenly schemed to kill all of us, intending to consume us to break through. The Bone-Consuming Ghost Race

has a special ability, the consumption of bones would hasten evolution. If he could digest us, he would reach an even higher state. We discovered his ploy and all the Type 10 experts surrounded to attack him. In the end, 6 of us fell in order to kill him."

At this point, everyone was filled with a chill. The peak strength of Amano was truly shocking. He had taken out 6 other Type 10 experts before he perished. He was truly heaven-defying.

After all, even the peak-strength Tentacular King-class Beast could only suppress 2 True Gods. They were not Amano's match.

Lie Yan stared at the beam and frowned, "If that fellow truly is Amano, what is he intending to do? A True God expert could not pass through the Universe Tree!" Qi Yang had a look of wisdom as he came up with a conjecture, "Simple, that fellow should be something that was cultivated by the strand of Amano's indestructible soul. He should be suppressing his realm in order to head back to the Great God World to lord over everything. Once he returns to the Great God World, he would be invincible, and no one can resist him."

Harlem asked solemnly, "Should we stop him? If we do it now, it's possible to crush his hopes."

Qi Yang spoke, "Why should we? Once he leaves the Tentacular Planet, he will have nothing to do with us. Even if he is invincible in the Great God World, what does that have to do with us? Even if he tries the Tower of Babel again, who knows how far in the future that would be? By that time, we might not even be alive any longer. Forcefully keeping him here would just breed another strong enemy."

As a Devil, Qi Yang's thoughts were usually more self-motivated. In the Fort of Hope, he was nice to Yue Zhong and the rest because there was value in them. Once the value was used up, he would not waste time or energy to bother.

Hearing those words, everyone fell silent.

Lei Huang and the rest wanted to stop Amano, but they had no way of doing so, and could only watch wide-eyed as Amano charged through the peak, making use of the spatial transfer to disappear from this world.

Qi Yang spoke, "Let's go!! Once the first nest is destroyed, the energy will be at an imbalance. The rest of the nests would crumble after. We can return to the Fort of Hope."

Under his orders, the 5 E-Grade Battleships immediately turned around, heading towards the Fort.

With the numerous Tentacular Beasts, even the proclaimed-strongest Type 10 powerhouse Amano had not been able to stop them at that time. Qi Yang and the rest were definitely not a match as well. Their aim was to destroy the nests and obtain room for a breather.

Soon, in the void space of the Great God World, a huge hole appeared, as the golden giant frame of Amano stepped through, descending upon the plane.

"I'm back, I'm back from the Tower of Babel. Haha, from today on, I'll be unstoppable on the path to being a True God! I'll be invincible throughout the heavens and earth!!" After descending, Amano laughed out loud, however, he swept his right hand a gaze, and noticed a map.

"This is...?" Amano stared at the map with no recollection. However, after a moment's of hesitation, he tore through space and stepped in the spatial hole. He arrived at a mysterious group of caves, and within them, there was a strange altar. On top of it, there was a black rock.

The moment he stepped into the caves, the black rock shot up and into his sea of consciousness. In an instant, countless memories flowed through his brain.

This was his memory capsule, carrying all of his memories, and was one of his backup plans.

At his peak, he had been capable of countless techniques and was incredibly strong. When the rest had joined forces to take him down, he had set aside countless backup plans, and this was one of them.

Chapter 1021: Catastrophe of the Great God World!

When Amano was done absorbing the memories, he came to a complete understanding, "So this was the case!! I had already reached the True God stage. It was only because I was killed once, and my memories tempered with by the system, that I forgot everything! However, once I've absorbed enough strength, I will be able to break through once more, reaching the True God realm!"

The current Amano was formed from a strand of his indestructible soul, which would not be easily extinguished. As long as a single strand still exists, there would be a chance for a revival.

However, even if there was a strand of soul left, in order to reach the peak of prowess once more, it would take a long time of accumulation of strength and energy. As long as the remnant soul of a True God has enough time, it would not be a problem to reach the half-step True God stage once more. However, the bottleneck to cross the True God realm, even for someone who had reached it before.

Amano was one of the most terrifying characters among the True Gods, far surpassing the rest of his peers. When he was taken down, he had already left so many backdoors for himself, just so he could reach the peak once more. "Now, let's break the half-step True God bottleneck."

There was a glint in his eyes, as he suddenly let out a huge roar, and a terrifying surge of strength blasted outwards. His aura then rose rapidly, swiftly breaking through to the half-step True God realm, and continued to strengthen. It only came to a stop when he was right at the peak of the half-step True God realm.

A savage look appeared on his face, as he muttered ferociously, "Seems like this is the maximum right now. I need more flesh and

bones to help my breakthrough. As long as I have not reached the True God stage, even if I massacre all 800 worlds, I would not be forced out by the God-Devil System. This time, I must wipe the whole place clean, turning them all into my nourishment. At the point when I break through, I will leap beyond the True God realm and truly escape the grasp of the system!!"

In ancient times, Amano had been the top expert among those at the True God realm. He had also come in contact with the absolute threshold of the True God realm. That year, as long as he took that one step, he had the possibility of breaking through, exceeding a True God powerhouse. It was because of that higher realm that enticed him so much, pushing him beyond the edge, causing him to betray his comrades and was forcibly killed by them.

"There seems to be delicious food over there!!" His divine sense swept out, and a savage look appeared. He tore through space and stepped right into the void.

About 3,000 li to the east, there was a huge mountain range, and a half-step True God Wurm-Dragon was currently sleeping. All of a sudden, there was a spatial fluctuation in front of it, as Amano stepped through.

The black Wurm-Dragon took a look at Amano, with a hint of viciousness, as it growled, "Scram. Get out of here now, the great Dohzireh is in a good mood, and will not take offense. Otherwise, I will definitely tear you apart."

"My mood is good today, seeing you, such a delicious prey, my appetite is truly aroused. After eating you and all of the Mutant Beasts in this mountain range, my power is sure to rise once more."

Amano gazed at Dohzireh condescendingly, before laughing and grabbed out at him.

A powerful hand appeared out of mid-air and reached for the black Wurm-Dragon.

"Audacious! You dare offend the great Dohzireh!! You shall pay with your life!!"

The black Wyrms-Dragon roared out, and transformed into a True Dragon, soaring into the sky, congealing its own dragon claw to slam into the hand in the skies.

This particular black Wyrms-Dragon was already capable of transforming its entire body into that of a True Dragon, leaving only its eyes. Once its eyes also completed the transformation, it could step through and reach the Type 10 stage. Among the numerous experts of the Great God World, it was already considered a peak existence. When both hands came in contact, Amano's hand that was capable of blotting out the sky directly crushed the dragon claw, before grabbing the black dragon in one swift motion.

Dohzireh struggled within the energy palm, its face full of shock as it roared, "How is this possible?! How could you defeat me so easily?! Who the hell are you?!"

"Haha!! Remember this, the one who consumes you is me, Amano!"

Amano roared with savage laughter, as his mouth opened wide, and clamped down viciously on the body of Dohzireh, directly crushing his head. In a few breaths, he had devoured the whole of Dohzireh cleanly.

After that, he swept out with his divine sense and got the entire situation of the mountain range within his perception.

"So much delicious food... seems like I can eat my fill."

Amano laughed out savagely and flew above the mountain range. He then opened his mouth and started to suck, becoming a huge, 100m-wide black hole.

In a flash, the thousands of Mutant Beasts and Mutant Bugs were all sucked into the huge whirlpool that was Amano's mouth.

Many of them were not capable of resisting the suction force and were dragged into his mouth. At that moment, they were then crushed by his sharp teeth.

"Not good!! There's a huge freak slaughtering everybody!!"

"Flee!! Dohzireh had also been killed by him!!"

"..."

The numerous Type 8 and Type 9 powerhouses could feel the terror of Amano, as they fled with their lives. In their bid to escape, they formed a huge beast horde.

"Want to escape?! This is the Great God World, not the Tentacular Planet. Come back and become my food!"

With a grim laugh, the atmospheric energy consolidated behind him, pushing his strength higher. His whirlpool of a mouth became even stronger as it continued to exert a terrifying suction force, as though capable of swallowing the entire planet. The countless life forms fleeing could not get far before they were all dragged into his mouth.

The entire mountain range was consumed by Amano, exhibiting his terrifying might. This was a True God.

On Tentacular Planet, the powers of law, Dao, principles and mostly everything was restricted, thus, most of the powerhouses could not utilize their strength. If they were allowed to return to the Great God World, if they were to go all out, the devastation was sure to be even more terrifying than Amano.

Amano could sense the accumulated strength within him, and nodded in satisfaction, "Not bad, it's already at 30%. After another 70%, I will have the strength that surpasses True Gods."

"I remember the Devil Race to be over at this direction. Let's head over then."

With a thought, Amano tore through space once more, and

appeared in a dark and insidious corner of the universe, filled with violent, and powerful Devil Qi.

At the moment he appeared, there was a cold voice that rang out, "Who's that? How dare you barge into my 10,000-Devil Altar! Do you want to be kept here, never to see the sunlight again?"

"Hahaha!! The presence of so many experts, such delicious food!! You are all my, Amano's, food!! Offer your flesh and blood!"

With a vicious laugh, Amano opened his mouth once more, executing his suction ability, and started to suck in the entire place. There was a loud roar, as the planet began to shudder, and the laws broke down, causing many Devil cultivators to fly into Amano's mouth, before being crushed.

The current Devil Lord, Sky-Suppressing Devil Lord, had a look of shock as he roared out madly, "Activate the final defense!!!" Within the deepest recess of the planet, there were countless cultivators urging on something with their strength. The Devil Qi gathered and congealed into a terrifying monstrosity with a pair of huge Devil Wings.

This manifestation slammed viciously into the black hole that was Amano.

There was a loud explosion, as the black hole collapsed, while Amano himself was sent flying a few hundred meters. All the Type 5 and Type 6 experts within the 10,000 Devil Altar were also crushed by the recoil. "Shit, it's still a little too early. I need to go absorb more lives and strengthen myself. When I reach the True God stage, I will devour this place!"

Amano was sent flying a few meters, but he was not injured, instead, choosing to leave and find some other prey.

Not too long after, Amano appeared in front of a human kingdom, as he opened his mouth to suck, and chewed numerous humans in his mouth.

Chapter 1022: Yue Zhong Steps into the Type 10 Realm!

Amano swallowed an entire human kingdom, and had a dissatisfied expression, "Damn it, these humans are too weak. Even after swallowing a few billions, it isn't comparable to a Type 9 expert at all. Seems like I need to consume something stronger."

He quickly made the choice and tore through space once more, leaving behind a desolate city without a single corpse.

Amano began to massacre countless powerful races, each of their millions and billions of people consumed by him. As the numerous races fell one after another, it caused a huge uproar and fear to spread through the Great God World.

He did not have a camp, nor did he communicate. He just continued to slaughter city after city, consuming living thing after living thing. Amidst that slaughter, his strength was rising steadily.

With such a threat, the countless races of the Great God World had no choice but to band together, sending an entire unit of half-step True Gods to deal with Amano.

However, the entire team was wiped out in a single move, as Amano's strength was already beyond a True God expert.

After that battle, all the races were shocked. Amano could be considered an invincible existence, and the only thing they could do was to utilize their secret techniques to seal their positions and hide. Amano was also busy consuming the living things of the Great God World and did not bother to chase after those experts. As long as he could become a True God expert, he could easily consume the entire Great God World. No matter what corner the other races were hiding at, they would not be able to escape his attention.

On the other side, Yue Zhong had entered the cave emitting the green light and continued to descend downwards. The energy surged through him, as though intending to blow him up.

"Help!! Help me!!" The owner of the gold train was already bloated like a huge balloon the moment he entered the cave, as though on the verge of exploding. He began to moan out in pain, pleading with Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong roared out to remind him, "Refine the energy!! Channel it into your Golden Seed!!"

At the same time, Yue Zhong channeled the energy through to his Gold Battle Armor, the Radiant Battleship, the Flame Battle Blade, as well as the treasures he obtained from the Tower of Babel, like the Holy Light Wings and the Golden Battle Bow. After absorbing that boundless strength, the treasures began to radiate with a dazzling glow, becoming even more resplendent. As Yue Zhong sent the energy out, his body began to feel better.

The owner of the gold train was also shocked to see his seed sprout into a gold tree when he channeled the inbound energy into it.

When the tree was formed, it began to absorb the green energy frantically, giving the owner some breathing space.

Among the few gold-grade treasures in Yue Zhong's hands, the Holy Light Wings, as well as the Radiant Battleship, had the highest potential for evolution. After absorbing enough energy, they began to evolve once more.

When the Holy Light Wings evolved, there was an additional pair of wings that appeared. At the same time, mysterious runes began to shine and engrave onto the wings. As for the Radiant Battleship, while there were not many changes on the exterior, within, more strange and mystical runes appeared at various corners. When all the gold-grade treasures were done with their evolution, Yue Zhong felt the energy surge through his body again, turning him

bloated. "No, if this goes on, my body will not be able to handle this. I'm already at the Great Circle of the Type 9 realm, I can make use of the energy to charge through the Type 10 stage. Even if I fail, I can wear down the bottleneck greatly."

There was a sliver of understanding, and with a thought, he began to direct the flow of the energy towards his gold God-Devil Nucleus.

As the energy poured into his nucleus, they were turned into the gold liquid energy that nourished his indestructible Nascent Soul, evolving it towards an indestructible God Soul.

The moment he started condensing his God Soul, it felt like he became a black hole, absorbing the boundless green energy into his body. For a short period of time, it felt like the region around him was a vacuum zone.

When the owner of the gold train saw this, he quickly charged towards Yue Zhong's side and heaved a sigh of relief. Had the energy continued to surge into him, he would have exploded. The train owner then began to observe Yue Zhong quietly, and was shocked, "This...?! He's charging through the True God realm?! What terrifying energy! Is he intending to consume all these energies?! Impossible right? Based on the records of a True God breakthrough, the energy required should only be 10% of what he is currently doing!"

Breaking through to the True God realm did require a vast amount of energy, but what Yue Zhong was absorbing was easily more than 10 times what the owner of the gold train knew. This was basically due to Yue Zhong's God-Devil Physique, the most perfect body. Since he had absorbed the life force of the King-class Beasts, his body had already evolved, becoming even stronger, thus it was much harder for him to break through.

With such a body, without the God-Devil Imprint and his fortuitous encounters, it would be impossible for him to

breakthrough even if he trained for a hundred years.

The green energy was simply boundless. As long as any Tentacular Beasts dropped in, they would explode. However, Yue Zhong's ability to consume the energy was terrifying as well, there was no sign of him exploding.

After they fell through the hole for another 3,000 km, they landed on the ground. Yue Zhong was still absorbing the green energy, metamorphosing and evolving.

After 3 days, a powerful aura emitted out from Yue Zhong, as he slowly opened his eyes. 2 godly lights shone.

"Succeeded? He actually succeeded?!" The train owner stared with a look of shock, "Yue Zhong, you succeeded?"

In response, he turned to look and laughed incredulously, "That's right!"

Only to discover that the owner was actually a beautiful girl with a whole body covered in green scales, a pair of dragon wings, a long-dragon tail, yet her figure was full and bouncy.

Qing Ya looked at Yue Zhong, her eyes flashing with a hint of fear, as she bowed deeply, "I'm Qing Ya of the Green Tooth Dragon race. I apologize for the offenses I've committed in the Tower of Babel. Sir Yue Zhong, if you want to kill me, please grant me a quick death."

Before he had even broken through, Qing Ya knew she was not his match. Now that he had reached the True God realm, there was no chance at all. Thus, she gave up resisting and was resigned to her fate.

Yue Zhong reached his hand, "Since we've fought together on this damned planet, just forget about it. However, may I have the gold seed please."

It was a treasure that was hard to come by, even if Yue Zhong had reached the True God stage, his gold-grade treasures were lacking.

He intended to give the seeds to Ji Qing Wu and the rest, hopefully grooming another batch of experts.

There was a slight reluctance in Qing Ya's eyes, but she took it out respectfully, handing the small gold tree to Yue Zhong, "Yes!"

He then kept the tree in his Universe Ring, before turning around to assess his surroundings.

Right now, they were in a huge cave, and there was still the terrifying green energy threatening to surge towards them.

However, since reaching the True God realm, Yue Zhong's body was no longer the same, reaching even greater heights, and was absorbing the energy entirely. He had the ability to fly out of the hole now, and nothing would be able to stop him. However, he was extremely curious about the green energy, as he headed deeper within.

After following the hole for a few thousand li, he finally came to a huge, empty field. At the center, there was a mysterious altar, and surrounding it were 9 x 9, 81 powerful eggs. There was a gigantic green stone floating over the altar, and it was radiating with that unknown and vast power.

Yue Zhong looked at the stone and had a look of delight. He flashed forwards and grabbed out at it, "This is the greatest treasure beneath the ground! With this, my cultivation will soar by leaps and bounds! I can break through and control my own destiny."

Chapter 1023: Killing a True Dragon!

When the green stone was grabbed in Yue Zhong's hands, an incomparably thick energy gushed into his body. Even with his physique, he felt like his body was stretched to the limit. With a thought, he quickly sent it into his Universe Ring.

Once it was sent in, the energy emitted by the stone began to waft radiate through the ring. It could not dissipate, instead, the energy began to condense into beads of elemental energy, scattering throughout the ring.

The moment the green stone was grabbed by Yue Zhong, the 81 eggs that were full of life energy began to lose their vitality.

At the same time, the Universe Tree seemed to have lost its source of strength and started to wither.

Amidst the horde of Tentacular Beasts, the remaining 8 King-class Beast, as well as the 2 Queen-class Beasts, let out shrieks, before scrambling towards the cave that Yue Zhong was in. The Universe Tree was not only an energy source for the Fort of Hope but also an irreplaceable energy for the Tentacular Beasts. Once it withered, the reproduction capabilities of the Tentacular Beasts would be affected, and with every additional death meant one less beast. To the Tentacular Beasts, it was a terrible disaster.

The beasts would establish nests around the Tree in order to absorb huge amounts of energies, eroding the source to the Fort of Hope, but not extinguishing the Tree itself.

Inside the cave, one of the eggs suddenly trembled and cracked open. Out crawled a True Dragon-like creature, similar to those of Chinese mythology.

This life form exuded a strong, violent aura, as it swept Yue Zhong a vicious glare, and opened its mouth to absorb the rest of the eggs.

The eggs began to soar towards the True Dragon-like creature.

Since reaching the True God stage, Yue Zhong had the indestructible God Soul, and his perception was much stronger than when he was at the half-step True God stage. He could perceive all sorts of killing intent. He could sense the ill intentions of the creature, and with a frown, he immediately sent a palm in a bid to crush the creature.

In a flash, a golden hand formed out of the energy around, pressing down on the creature.

The True Dragon creature had a vicious glint in its eyes, as it let out a roar of rage. A powerful energy fluctuation that could rival that of a True God was emitted out of it, and a True Dragon claw materialized, clashing against Yue Zhong's palm.

With the assault of the Draconic laws and principles, everything around the creature seemed to transform, becoming small dragons that pounced towards Yue Zhong. Qing Ya could sense the dangerous and threatening fluctuations, and her eyes were filled with shock, "True God-level Beast, it is a True Dragon!!"

Dragons and Phoenixes had faded from the worlds outside, being mystical, divine beasts, after they reach maturity, they would possess True God strength. Among powerhouses of the same realm, they were terrifying. When the True Dragon claw met the golden palm of Yue Zhong, the Dragon Claw immediately crumbled, and the True Dragon was also separated into two, fresh blood pouring out of its body. "How is that possible? That's a True Dragon, how could it be that weak?" Qing Ya stared at Yue Zhong and the defeated Dragon, her eyes filled with shock, "Is that to say, he has already evolved to a realm far more terrifying than a True God?"

"That's True Dragon blood! A rare treasure that cannot be found outside! Qing WU and the rest are in luck!" Yue Zhong laughed lightly as he looked at the dead Dragon, grabbing it. A huge

amount of blood flowed out, separated into various glass vials controlled by Yue Zhong's will.

True Dragon blood was useless to Yue Zhong. However, to the people he cared about, it was an incredible treasure. A single drop could change their entire physique, and boost their potential.

The young Dragon opened its eyes and roared out in rage, "Let me go!! Lowly human!! You dare act against me, courting death!! My parents are characters you cannot afford to offend!! If you kill me, they will not let you off!!"

"Fool, you want to lie to me? If your parents really look upon you favorably, they would not have kept you here and become nourishment for the Universe Crystal. I don't have time to bicker with you, go and die!!"

Yue Zhong laughed coldly, pointing out with a finger, as the fresh blood of the True Dragon flowed out, entering into the various vials. At the same time, a powerful flame appeared, incinerating the body of the True Dragon. In a few breaths, there was nothing left. Right as the True Dragon was being incinerated, its indestructible Dragon Soul soared out, trying to escape. As long as a single strand could make away, it could return to being a True Dragon in the future.

However, the moment the soul shuddered, the powerful golden God-Devil Flame burnt brightly, enveloping it, and began to burn away at the soul.

The soul struggled as it pleaded, "Ah!!! Please!!! Let me go!!! Human, I'm pleading you!! Let me off!!"

"It's too late!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and his hands crushed down. The God-Devil Flames radiated brightly, incinerating the indestructible soul to nothing.

As the soul was eradicated, the soul force was absorbed into Yue

Zhong's flame, causing it to become even more radiant. At the same time, the life force entered his own body. When Qing Ya saw how easily Yue Zhong dealt with the indestructible soul, her heart was filled with shock, "He could actually kill a True Dragon just like that, that's too terrifying!"

After killing the True Dragon, Yue Zhong waved his hands, and immediately kept the 80 remaining eggs that had lost all signs of vitality, into his Universe Ring.

These were all True Dragon eggs and were mythical-level creatures. Even if they had lost their life force, they were still rare treasures.

After Yue Zhong kept the 80 eggs, the 2 Tentacular King-class Beasts came shooting in, waving their blades as they slashed out at Yue Zhong. Eyeing the 2 King-class Beasts, Yue Zhong tapped his feet, and he appeared on top of one of them, his fist blasting out at its head.

With a loud blast, the King-class Beast was instantly obliterated, its body splattering apart in a mess of blood and flesh, as its life force entered Yue Zhong's body.

After that, Yue Zhong stepped through the air, looking like an unstoppable wargod, and with a finger, the God-Devil Flames burst out, blasting onto the remaining King-class Beast. The beast then turned to ashes within a short 2 seconds.

"That!!! That was a King-class Beast!! That's too terrifying!! After reaching the True God realm, he is actually this strong!! He's even above Qi Yang and the rest!! An Oracle is truly something else!"

Qing Ya watched on silently, knowing that she could not participate. It did not matter if it was Yue Zhong or the King-class Beast, either of them could kill her with a single move.

"There are 8 more left!!" After dealing with 2 King-class Beasts, Yue Zhong charged outside, sensing the incoming

Tentacular King-class Beasts from the other nests. In a few breaths, he had appeared in front of the 6 of them.

There was a savage glint in the eyes of the 6 King-class Beasts. They roared out loud and pounced towards Yue Zhong at lightning speed.

Yue Zhong pointed out and his God-Devil Flame burst forth, enveloping the 6 King-class Beasts, swallowing them.

The King-class Beasts could absorb energy, Daos, spatial laws, but they were unable to absorb the God-Devil Flames that Yue Zhong produced. In 2 seconds, the 6 King-class Beasts turned into ashes amidst their struggling.

Their pure and abundant life force surged through Yue Zhong's body, allowing him to comprehend the numerous miraculous abilities of the King-class Beasts.

"There are still 2 more!!"

After he was done, he shot through towards the other nests, locking on to the 2 Queen-class Beasts.

There were countless Tentacular Beasts inside the nest, and they poured towards Yue Zhong like a wave. They were not afraid of death, and their numbers could easily overwhelm a Type 10 powerhouse.

Yue Zhong was wrapped in a layer of God-Devil Flames, burning the region of 30m around him, as he blocked the oncoming attacks, and incinerated them all.

Chapter 1024: The Owner of the God-Devil System!

Yue Zhong continued to dash about, as though the God of Fire had descended upon the world, and everywhere he touched would be set ablaze. Only ashes remained behind him as he quickly soared out the nest of the Queen-class Beast.

When he exited, all he saw around him was the dense horde of Tentacular Beasts. Based on what he estimated, it was easily over a billion, and it was not something even Amano at his peak would have dared to take on.

The beasts all sensed the arrival of Yue Zhong and opened their mandibles, and over a billion blue beams fired at him.

Facing that, Yue Zhong transformed into a gold beam of light, braving the attacks and soared towards another nest.

In a few breaths, Yue Zhong arrived at the deep part of the nest, blasting the Queen-class Beast into a few pieces with a single slap.

After that, he quickly exited and made his way towards the remaining Queen-class Beast, also turning it into minced meat with a single slap, absorbing the life force.

"So it was like this, there's still potential for evolution between the Tentacular Beasts and God-Devil Physique. With the life force from those beasts, my strength can improve once again."

When he finished absorbing the life force of the last Queen-class Beast, he had a flash of inspiration, understanding that the life force he had absorbed from the powerful Tentacular Beasts had surged into the various corners of his physique, turning it even more perfect.

At this time, there was a gold beam that descended upon the ground, forming the figure of Light. Light giggled and asked, "Congratulations, Yue Zhong, on killing all the King-class and

Queen-class Beasts, as well as pushing your physique to the most perfect state. Now, you have the qualifications to meet my Master. Do you want to do so?"

Yue Zhong pondered, and spoke, "Yes!!" Light waved her hands in response, and a beam of gold light shone upon Yue Zhong, causing him to disappear.

In an instant, he had appeared in a strange world that looked like it was composed out of countless cosmic stars, with views into the various galaxies and universes.

Yue Zhong took in the sights with a chill down his back, "Strong... this God-Devil System is too frightening. It can transfer me before I even know it, and its strength is truly far above mine."

Currently, he was already a True God expert, it would be difficult to kill him. However, if the system decided to send him to far ends of the galaxies, it would take him goodness knew how long to reach Earth. It was also not impossible for him to be lost for more than hundreds and thousands of years.

"Yue Zhong, didn't you want to meet me? Come on up!" Right at this moment, there was the voice that he could not forget since the 1st day when it all happened, as a golden staircase materialized in front of him.

He looked at the stairs, his scalp turning slightly numb and he did not hesitate to walk up.

Following the staircase, he found himself in a palace that was made entirely out of red crystals, and he saw something that shook him to his very core.

In the numerous clear crystal pillars laid throughout the palace, there were True Dragons, Qilins, Phoenixes as well as other mythical life forms. Each of them if allowed to mature, would become True God-level experts.

At the center of the palace, there was a floating head of a

handsome man with purple hair. The right eye was pierced with 3 black needles, as a black spear was pierced through the mouth, nailing the head to the throne.

The A.I. of the God-Devil System, Light, stood quietly, watching the head smile at Yue Zhong.

The head used its remaining eye to stare at Yue Zhong, his expression one of appreciation. Even though his mouth did not move, a voice rang out in his head, "Hi, Yue Zhong, it's the first time we meet. I'm Red Crystal King. The one who had toyed with your life, caused the changes on Earth, throwing the lives of over 6 billion humans on Earth into Hell."

Yue Zhong frowned, asking slowly, "Red Crystal King, why did you do that?"

The answer caused Yue Zhong to be bewildered, "It's simple. It was all in order to create the strongest weapon that can kill me, as well as my enemy."

Red Crystal King stared at Yue Zhong, his single eye filled with a heated look, "Yue Zhong, you are the strongest and most perfect weapon that I've created. You possess the potential to kill me, as well as my enemy!"

"I am the master of the Aizhouma universe. Earth, the Great God World, as well as the other 800 worlds of the God-Devil System, are all under the Aizhouma universe, thus, my own property. However, compared to the universe itself, this place is a barren one, and no one knows of the wormhole coordinates of this location. It could be considered a hidden and rural corner of the galaxy."

"A long time ago, I was backstabbed by a despicable person, causing my state to be as you see. I made use of the God-Devil System to flee here. However, my body has been destroyed by that despicable person, and my soul had already been largely destroyed by him. My head is nailed to the throne by the Spear of

Destruction, every day, I'm condemned to suffer pain on a scale you can't possibly imagine. I've had enough of this endless torment. I want someone to kill me, and seek revenge for me. Thus, I made use of the God-Devil System to spur the evolution of the human race in all 800 worlds, forcing you guys."

"Through the ages, I've experimented and failed, watching the chosen warriors of mine die to the various powerful monsters and existences of the universe. It has caused me disappointment and despair, time after time. However, you, Yue Zhong, have passed all my tests and reached the perfect Type 10 realm. Your potential and talent are boundless. Once you gain control of my strongest item, the God-Devil System, you will be able to kill me, and gain the power to deal with my hated enemy."

"Come on, Yue Zhong, as long as you're willing to kill me, and promise to seek revenge for me, I will hand the God-Devil System to you, and allow you to become the master of the Great God World, as well as the 800 worlds, with unbelievable authority and strength. The system gives you control over time and creation, and even in the multiple universes, it is an incredibly rare and precious treasure. I've never seen something else like it in all my years. Once you have obtained it, you'll become a powerful existence!!" Red Crystal King stared at Yue Zhong with a heated gaze, every word he spoke filled with fervor.

Yue Zhong's heart leaped slightly, but he still asked in wariness, "Who is your enemy? How strong is he exactly?"

The Red Crystal King was only left with a head, and covered with injuries. Even when nailed to the throne, Yue Zhong still felt like that was an immense pressure and danger emitting from this figure in front of him. It was as though he was not weaker than Yue Zhong at all. How strong would the enemy of such a powerhouse be?

Red Crystal King spoke solemnly, "My enemy is called the Serene Sea King, a powerful existence of the Serene Sea in the galaxy.

That year, when he attacked me by surprise, he was a peak-Type 12 Galaxy Lord-level powerhouse. His talent, coupled with the vast amount of resources in the Aizhouma universe, with the countless years of cultivation, he should have reached the Type 13 Universe Lord stage.

He continued, "In the universe, a Type 10 powerhouse is termed as a Star-Lord expert. A Type 10 powerhouse would be able to reign over a rich planet. A Type 11 powerhouse would be called a Great Star-Lord expert, controlling 10 rich planets. A Type 12 powerhouse is termed as a Galaxy Lord and can control an entire galaxy. A Type 13 powerhouse would be a Universe Lord, controlling a universe. Initially, I was the owner of the Aizhouma Universe, a peak-Type 13 powerhouse."

Red Crystal King then said, "With your current strength, it is enough to contend with a Type 11 Star-Lord expert. If you gain my God-Devil System, even if a Type 12 Great Star-Lord were to attack you, you can still escape. As long as you are given enough time to evolve, you can definitely kill the Serene Sea King. How about it? It should be considered a decent deal right." Yue Zhong pondered, before replying solemnly, "Fine!! I promise you!!"

There was a passionate look in the eyes of the Red Crystal King, "Very good, let's swear a heavenly oath. As long as we do it, the God-Devil System is yours. Light!" Light waved her hands, and a golden sacred light entered Yue Zhong's consciousness, turning into mysterious runes. On them, there was the closure of the deal between the Red Crystal King and Yue Zhong. If Yue Zhong were to go against his oath and disregard the issue about the revenge, the God-Devil System would leave Yue Zhong, finding a new Master. At the same time, there were other enemies of the Red Crystal King, but the Serene Sea King was the one that had to be killed. The rest of them could be ignored by Yue Zhong, but the Serene Sea King could not be let off. Yue Zhong saw that there were no problems with the oath and after checking through,

imprinting them on his mind.

The moment the runes were formed, the A.I. Light flew towards Yue Zhong, swiftly forming an unassuming black battle blade.

Chapter 1025: Omnipotent, Omniscient, Omnipresent (Finale)!

When the black battle blade flew towards Yue Zhong, a huge amount of information poured into his consciousness.

Everything happening in the Great God World, Earth, as well as the other 800 worlds, could be sensed by him with a single thought.

Yue Zhong tried out by willing something, and on a barren planet, with no signs of life whatsoever, a golden, sacred beam of light shot down, shining on the planet.

Soon, the icy-cold planet began to brim with life, and a sun appeared in the atmosphere of the planet, shining on the planet.

Clouds began to form, while lightning and thunder occurred, and rain fell upon the planet. Water bodies began to form in the huge craters and started to appear similar to the oceans on Earth.

Then, some single-cell organisms began to appear within the ocean, as they evolved into plankton-like creatures, which did not stop evolving into marine life.

As the entire planet continued to evolve, becoming a planet capable of sustaining life, many biological life forms appeared and continued to evolve as well.

At the same time, according to Yue Zhong's will, the main inhabitants of the planet began to evolve a pair of white wings, as well as a white radiance over their heads, and all of them were female. It was like an entire race of angels.

"Amazing, so this is the power of creation. With this God-Devil System, I'm an omnipotent existence within the 800 worlds!" Yue Zhong watched the planet evolve, his heart filled with excitement.

He was now like the God of the Bible, able to create anything that

the System had a blueprint or knowledge of. At the same time, he could easily annihilate anything within the 800 worlds as well.

As he swept out with his will, he could sense that the energy consumption was high, "Ah, it's too much energy."

The Red Crystal King spoke, "Creation, Time control, and hastening evolution of any life form all require loads of power. The Mutant Beasts nuclei, as well as those from the Tentacular Beasts, are all good energy sources. Other than them, there are other efficient energy sources out there in the universes, however, Mutant Beasts nuclei and Tentacular Beasts are still among the top few sources. One can also use nuclei as a universal currency."

He then turned to Yue Zhong with a look of relief, "Now, please kill me."

After being reduced to a mere head, and nailed to the Red Crystal Throne for countless millennia, the Red Crystal King had enough. He just wanted to be released from his misery.

"Fine!"

Yue Zhong took up the black battle blade, his gaze turning cold, as he urged his cells once more, pushing his strength to jump over 48 times. He then slashed down at the head of the Red Crystal King.

Dang!

When his blade landed on the head of the Red Crystal King, it caused a deafening blast, and the decapitated head seemed to have blocked the attack. Time stopped for a mere second, before the black battle blade from the system burst out with a terrifying radiance, slicing through the Red Crystal King, together with the broken soul.

The moment the head of the Red Crystal King was destroyed, the long spear and nails stuck in him turned into ash and disappeared.

Once he was killed, a pure and abundant life force entered Yue

Zhong's body, nourishing and pushing him to the next stage of evolution.

After killing the Red Crystal King, Yue Zhong willed it and immediately received the information on Tentacular Planet.

Making use of the God-Devil System, he could check the entirety of a planet, and during his search, he came across an interesting thing.

"Ah! That is Amano, interesting, his strength had actually reached the True God Stage, but in order not to be teleported to the Tentacular Planet, he actually suppressed his own cultivation."

Yue Zhong laughed lightly, and with a thought, he disappeared from his original location.

In the Great God World, there was a secret corner, where the 3 main races were all gathered together. The 10,000-Devils Altar, the Man-Eater Temple, and the Holy Heavens had all disregarded their enmity to face the greatest threat to their existence.

The planet of the 10,000-Devils Altar had transformed into a huge giant, exuding a terrifying and baleful aura, its demonic wings flapping behind. The Man-Eaters Temple had also transformed into a giant with a single horn and possessed long canines and sharp claws. The Great God World had transformed into a silver Battleship.

With these 3 immensely powerful existences, they were the last resorts of the 3 major races. Forming them required the combination of all the elite powerhouses of their respective races. The combat strength was incredibly high, and within a short time, they were capable of displaying the strength of a True God warrior. However, such a method required an incredible amount of resources, with the accumulation of their resources, it would still eat into their reserves. Once this strength was utilized for more than 4 hours, their accumulated resources would be gone in an instant.

In the void, Amano had transformed into a huge black hole, exerting his suction force at a rapid speed. It was a powerful whirlpool, firmly grabbing hold of the 2 giants as well as the battleship.

The 2 giants and the battleship struggled frantically to pry themselves away from the whirlpool, however, regardless of how they struggled, they could not get away.

In the Holy Heavens, the remaining Heavenly Lord Zhuo Jian stared at the whirlpool, his eyes filled with shock, "Damn it!!! This Amano is too ferocious!! What the hell is he? How could he possess such strength!! He could actually take on the final trump cards of all 3 of us. Is he at the True God stage?"

Only a True God would be able to utilize his own strength to move an entire planet, going against the 3 races, while the rest could only watch helplessly.

Currently, in the Great God World, all the experts were standing at their assigned places, continually channeling their strength into vital points. From time to time, there would be Type 5 powerhouses who were absorbed clean of their strength and turned to dust.

Near one particular point, a dozen young men and women stood close by, sending their strength frantically into the point.

"No!"

One of the young women suddenly turned pale, and let out a scream of despair, as she withered and turned into ashes.

Seeing this, the rest of the young men and women had changes in expressions, their eyes filled with shock.

Among them, Bisiya was pale as she turned to George and asked, "Father, are we going to die?"

All the human experts had been gathered back within the Holy Heavens, including George and his family.

George's face turned pale and tried to assure, "No, we will definitely emerge victorious! We still have Sir Zhuo Jian, and he will lead us to victory."

Lina's face was pale as she screamed out, "No, it's hopeless! I know that monster, I've seen it in an ancient text. That is the first True God expert of ancient times. After he is resurrected, no one is his match. We will all become his food, it's all over for us!!"

She had always known this fact, which was pressuring her. Now, she could not help but spit it out.

"What?! The ancient 1st True God expert?"

"We're finished!! Such an existence, as long as he is not exterminated properly, even with a sliver of his soul left, he could resurrect and quickly rise to the True God level once more."

"We're dead!!"

"..."

At first, everyone had guessed that things were not looking good. However, hearing the truth, their eyes were filled with despair. However, they did not dare relax, as the moment they did so, they would be sucked into the vortex, swallowed by Amano.

Right at that time, there was a tear in space, and Yue Zhong walked out directly.

Seeing Yue Zhong appear, Amano's heart turned cold, as he retracted his whirlpool, and asked Yue Zhong warily, "I am Amano, may I ask who are you, friend?"

As the first True God expert since ancient times, Amano possessed a terrifying perception and could sense a threatening level of danger emitting from Yue Zhong.

Within the Holy Heavens, George looked up, and was taken aback, "That's Yue Zhong!!"

Bisiya had an excited look in her eyes as she cheered, "It's true!!"

That is Big Brother Yue Zhong!! He's back from the Tower of Babel!! We're saved!"

Lina eyed Yue Zhong, her eyes full of shock before turning into excitement. Tears started to flow as she muttered, "It's Yue Zhong, he's Yue Zhong. He's back from the Tower of Babel... we're saved!!"

Jody heaved a sigh of relief as he smiled, "He's back. That's great."

All the displays of the Holy Heavens had been ignited, broadcasting Yue Zhong's image for everyone to see.

"What's going on?" Zhuo Jian could sense the displays of the Holy Heavens lighting up. He frowned, after all, he did not give the order to broadcast any images of the battle in the void.

Yue Zhong spoke coldly, "I'm Yue Zhong. Amano, try throwing me your strongest attack. I know you're already at the True God level. If you can't kill me, just die."

"What an arrogant tone, I'll let you witness it then. Even if I have to be summoned to Tentacular Planet, I will kill you. " Amano raged, and tore open his seal, as a terrifying True God fluctuation emitted out. It was vast and caused everyone else to feel a deep sense of terror.

"So strong!!"

"True God!! He's really at the True God realm!!"

"What a terrifying fellow!!"

"..."

Amano's strength shocked the 3 great races, forcing those of the Type 6 realm and below to their knees. Their faces were pale, and it was hard to even breathe.

For them, it was easy for a True God powerhouse to kill them with a single thought. There was nothing they could do.

Boundless might poured out from Amano's body, as he began to

transform into a golden giant of over hundreds of meters in height, his body covered in golden bone blades.

In an instant, Amano had slashed out with over a million strikes, completely covering the sky, attacking Yue Zhong in a frenzy.

Without any sound, a golden silhouette appeared behind Yue Zhong, as 2 bone blades came slashing down imbued with the Laws of Blade and Slash.

The figure was as fast as light, by the time the 3 peak experts had realized it, he had already appeared behind Yue Zhong, about to slash through him.

"With just this capabilities? Truly disappointing! The 1st True God expert of ancient times, just barely so-so."

As the bone blades were about to slash through Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong pointed out with a finger on the forehead of Amano.

There was a loud blast, as Amano began to crumble apart.

"No!! Impossible!! I'm the strongest!!! How can I be killed by you!! I'm unwilling!!"

The remnant soul of Amano screamed out in reluctance, before dissipating forever from the world.

Zhuo Jian saw how Yue Zhong took out the strongest being Amano with a single finger, and his eyes were filled with disbelief, "What?! Amano was killed, just like that?! How is that possible?! How could he be so strong?! How!?!"

"Dead!! The first True God expert was killed!!"

"Unbelievable!!"

"Strong!! Yue Zhong is too strong!!"

"..."

Seeing Yue Zhong floating in mid-air, everyone in the Holy Heavens was filled with reverence and worship Many female elites

were also smitten.

Bisiya was no exception, her eyes sparkling, "Amazing!! Big brother Yue Zhong!! You're too cool!!"

George was filled with excitement, "Strong!! Thankfully I became friends with him!"

"The Man-Eater Races shall no longer exist! Die!"

Yue Zhong stood there, coldly eyeing the Man-Eater Race, before pointing down. In an instant, a huge finger congealed out of nothing pressed down towards the giant formed as a last resort of the Man-Eater Race.

The single-horned giant of the Man-Eater Race roared out in anger, punching out with towards the finger.

Unfortunately, the finger of Yue Zhong was enough to crush the entire giant, causing the entire planet to implode on itself, dissipating into nothing.

Just like this, one of the 4 Great Races of the Great God World was wiped away by Yue Zhong.

"Great!!"

"Awesome!! Long live Yue Zhong!!"

"Sir Yue Zhong, you're too amazing!!"

"..."

Seeing the Man-Eater Race wiped out by Yue Zhong, cheers erupted throughout the Holy Heavens. The Man-Eaters preyed on humans after all, and many humans had fallen to them. With this great enemy wiped out, the elites of the Holy Heavens were filled with respect and admiration for Yue Zhong.

After that, Yue Zhong turned to face the 10,000-Devils Altar, his voice cold, "Other than the Charming Devil Race, the Flower Devil Race, etc..., the rest is to be wiped out."

With those words, the various experts of the Devil Race, regardless of whatever corner they were hiding in, all exploded into bits. In an instant, 90% of the Devils had died.

Yue Zhong controlled the God-Devil System now, and all the life forms within the 800 worlds all fell under his control. Only those outside the 800 worlds were outside of the scope of the God-Devil System's powers.

The remaining Devils were all extremely beautiful and had charms, however, their combat abilities were not particularly high. Furthermore, they were not aggressive, and Yue Zhong could utilize them as wallflowers or maidservants.

Yue Zhong then looked down at them, asking sternly, "Do you agree to submit to me, and address me as your Lord?"

"Yes!! We're willing! We'll serve you wholeheartedly, and be your loyal servants forever!"

The surviving Devils all kneeled, their bodies trembling as they swore to Yue Zhong. They were helpless against his omnipotence.

Yue Zhong then swiftly announced, "Very good, Cai Yin, Yue Huo, Ming Xiang and Luo Hua, the 4 of you shall be the new 4 Great Devil Lords of the 10,000-Devils Altar, in charge of managing it for me."

The 4 of them were the most adept and most experienced at managing the rest of the Devils, and could quickly organize them and resettle the Devils after the turmoil.

When the 4 of them heard it, they replied respectfully, "Yes! Master!"

Having killed Amano, and settling the remaining Devils, Yue Zhong disappeared from his location.

The next moment, he appeared back on Earth.

Due to the Gates of Hell being closed, Earth was currently in a

chaotic mess, with numerous races fighting over the right to rule.

At the same time, the number of aliens hidden had proliferated to a terrifying degree, and the entire planet had traces of them.

Currently, there were many aliens gathered outside of China's capital, intending to launch a crazy assault.

Numerous Mechs and Mech Beasts were on the frontlines clashing with the oncoming aliens.

All sorts of mechanical parts and the corrosive blood of the aliens splattered everywhere throughout the battlefield. Troops were being decimated at every second. As for the humans, other than a few top elites, most of them could not even help.

Through this period, the aliens had already produced over a dozen Type 8 powerhouses. There were even 10 half-step Type 9 aliens, leading the armies to attack the defenses of the capital, forcing them back.

Even with Mech Emperor Zu Yuan Ting commanding the forces, there was no way of beating the aliens back.

Within the command center of the capital, Ji Qing Wu, Chen Yao, and the rest of the upper echelon were watching in rising apprehension.

Although there was Zu Yuan Ting holding the fort, and could maintain the security for a short while, if this continued on, the whole of China would fall sooner or later.

Ji Qing Wu watched the endless horde, and thought to herself amidst the anxiety, "If only he was here."

"Were you thinking of me?"

Just then, a voice rang out in the room, and everyone swiveled to find Yue Zhong behind them.

"Yue Zhong!"

"Big Brother!"

"Leader!"

"Sir Yue Zhong!"

"..."

Everyone erupted in cheers. Yue Zhong was an invincible existence in their hearts.

Ji Qing Wu came up to him and asked in worry, "Yue Zhong, when you were not around, the evolution of the aliens were too fast. Right now, the entire Earth is covered with those aliens. What do we do?"

On Earth, the greatest threat to humanity was not the experts of the other races, but the aliens. Their reproduction speed was too terrifying, as long as they were hidden in some corner for a period of time, they would reemerge with insane numbers. Furthermore, if one was not careful, there could be infections of humans, becoming hosts and food for the aliens.

"It's simple, we'll just wipe them all out." Yue Zhong laughed simply and spoke, "I hereby declare, that all the aliens are to be wiped out from Earth."

The moment those words fell, the billions of aliens rampaging throughout Earth exploded, not leaving even a single cell behind.

Seeing that, everyone was stunned.

"From today onwards, we have no need to fear any strange creatures or monsters anymore." Yue Zhong laughed and embraced Ji Qing Wu, Floxenia and the various women that came jumping into his arms.

2 years later.

On the beaches of Hawaii, Tong Xiao Yun, Chen Yao, Zhuo Ya Tong, Yin Shuang, Han Qiong, were all playing around in bikinis.

Yue Zhong laid on the sand, while Bisiya was kneeling beside him and massaging his legs, while Lina helped to peel grapes for him.

Ji Qing Wu was also dressed in a black bikini, laying on the sand while donning a pair of sunglasses.

Numerous beauties of the Devils Race, the Angels Race, the Flower Devils Race, etc were gathered around, acting as maids to them. It was practically a heavenly scene.

All of a sudden, Yue Zhong spoke, "Qing Wu, I'm intending to head to Aizhuoma Universe."

There was a strange glint in her eyes, as she asked in a low voice, "When?"

"In 3 days' time."

She stood up, coming up to his side, and buried herself in his embrace, planting a deep kiss on his lips, "Alright. Come back soon. Remember, we are all waiting for you on Earth."

"Got it!"

Three days later, Yue Zhong brought the God-Devil System with him, as he stepped out of Earth, beginning a new adventure.

Table of Contents

[God and Devil World](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 910: Entering the Radiant Battleship Once More!](#)

[Chapter 911: Embracing Chen Yao!](#)

[Chapter 912: The Sea Clan's Invasion!](#)

[Chapter 913: Chaos!](#)

[Chapter 914: Suppressing the Chaos!](#)

[Chapter 915: Killing Human Scum!](#)

[Chapter 916: Subduing the Zombie King!](#)

[Chapter 917: 3-Headed Wurm Beast!](#)

[Chapter 918: Boundless Rain of Blood!](#)

[Chapter 919: Conflict in the Hotel!](#)

[Chapter 920: Strength!](#)

[Chapter 921: Bermuda Triangle!](#)

[Chapter 922: Deep Sea Mutant Beasts!](#)

[Chapter 923: Killing the Mutant Beast!](#)

[Chapter 924: Sea God City!](#)

[Chapter 925: Possia!](#)

[Chapter 926: Heroism!](#)

[Chapter 927: Defeating the Sea God!](#)

[Chapter 928: Agnis!](#)

[Chapter 929: Entering the Great God World!](#)

[Chapter 930: Type 8 Mutant Bug!](#)

[Chapter 931: Rescue!](#)

[Chapter 932: Giant!](#)

[Chapter 933: Man-eating Giants!](#)

[Chapter 934: Type 8 Giant!](#)

[Chapter 935: 3 Giants!](#)

[Chapter 936: Defeating the Giants!](#)

[Chapter 937: Wiman!](#)

[Chapter 938: Jody and Lina!](#)

[Chapter 939: Holy Heavens!](#)

[Chapter 940: Wiping out the Giants!](#)

[Chapter 941: Imperial Conflict!](#)

[Chapter 942: Killing Everyone Present!](#)

[Chapter 943: Dominance!](#)

[Chapter 944: George!](#)

[Chapter 945: The Fang Clan!](#)

[Chapter 946: Death in One Blow!](#)

[Chapter 947: Fish Taking to Water! \(Direction Translation; actual meaning: Sexual Relations\)](#)

[Chapter 948: Starship Port!](#)

[Chapter 949: Howling Dragons and Roaring Tigers!](#)

[Chapter 950: Contest!](#)

[Chapter 951: Missions for a Holy Son!](#)

[Chapter 952: Cheng Tang Mountain!](#)

[Chapter 953: Black Devil Clan!](#)

[Chapter 954: Destroying the Black Devil Giant!](#)

[Chapter 955: Green-faced Ghost!](#)

[Chapter 956: Hunt!](#)

[Chapter 957: Wiping out the Green-faced Ghosts!](#)

[Chapter 958: True God Expert's Will!](#)

[Chapter 959: Absorbing the Will!](#)

[Chapter 960: Undying Devil Spirit!](#)

[Chapter 961: Spatial Devil Ghost!](#)

[Chapter 962: Cosmic Finger!](#)

[Chapter 963: Type 9 Specter Skeleton!](#)

[Chapter 964: Golden Treasure Armor!](#)

[Chapter 965: Killing the Devil Witch!](#)

[Chapter 966: Tear in Space!](#)

[Chapter 967: Destroying Ghost Tun!](#)

[Chapter 968: Crumbling of the Temple!](#)

[Chapter 969: Sealing Wade!](#)

[Chapter 970: Annie's Charms!](#)

[Chapter 971: 180° Change in Attitude!](#)

[Chapter 972: Jiao Beast City!](#)

[Chapter 973: Capturing the Mayor Manor!](#)

[Chapter 974: Shock!](#)

[Chapter 975: Attack!](#)

[Chapter 976: Silk Domain!](#)

[Chapter 977: Defeating the Holy Race!](#)

[Chapter 978: Killing a Holy King!](#)

[Chapter 979: Evolve: Half-Step Type 9 Realm!](#)

[Chapter 980: Controlling the Gold Wyrms King City!](#)
[Chapter 981: Half-God Aji Hong!](#)
[Chapter 982: Eliminating a half-God!](#)
[Chapter 983: Alien Invasion!](#)
[Chapter 984: Killing the Aliens!](#)
[Chapter 985: Jubilation!](#)
[Chapter 986: Reaching the Type 9 Realm!](#)
[Chapter 987: Guarding Earth!](#)
[Chapter 988: Intense Battle with Type 9 Mech Emperor Zu Yuan Ting!](#)
[Chapter 989: The Powerful Mech Emperor!](#)
[Chapter 990: Subduing Zu Yuan Ting!](#)
[Chapter 991: Gathering of the Various Races!](#)
[Chapter 992: Holy Lord Yue Hua!](#)
[Chapter 993: Pledge of Friendship!](#)
[Chapter 994: Dragon Mantis Beast Horde!](#)
[Chapter 995: Fight!](#)
[Chapter 996: Bull-head Dragon Devil!](#)
[Chapter 997: Bull-Crusher Devil!](#)
[Chapter 998: Red Jade Mantis Horde!](#)
[Chapter 999: The Dao of Fire!](#)
[Chapter 1000: Breaking out of the Cocoon!](#)
[Chapter 1001: Defeating Jeffery!](#)
[Chapter 1002: The Giant on the Throne!](#)
[Chapter 1003: The Awe-Inspiring Might of the Radiant Battleship!](#)
[Chapter 1004: Surrounded by 8 Devil Lords!](#)
[Chapter 1005: Gold Giant God Amano!](#)
[Chapter 1006: The Cunning Amano!?](#)
[Chapter 1007: Insta-kill Half-step True God Experts!](#)
[Chapter 1008: River of Golden Blood!](#)
[Chapter 1009: Sacred Temple of Laws!](#)
[Chapter 1010: Invincible!](#)
[Chapter 1011: Tentacular Beast!](#)
[Chapter 1012: Fort of Hope!](#)
[Chapter 1013: Qi Yang!](#)
[Chapter 1014: God-Devil System A.I.!](#)
[Chapter 1015: Universe Tree!](#)
[Chapter 1016: Tentacular King Beast!](#)
[Chapter 1017: Intense Battle in the Nest!](#)
[Chapter 1018: Killing the King Beast!](#)

[Chapter 1019: Desperate Situation!](#)

[Chapter 1020: The Ancient, Strongest Type 10 Powerhouse!](#)

[Chapter 1021: Catastrophe of the Great God World!](#)

[Chapter 1022: Yue Zhong Steps into the Type 10 Realm!](#)

[Chapter 1023: Killing a True Dragon!](#)

[Chapter 1024: The Owner of the God-Devil System!](#)

[Chapter 1025: Omnipotent, Omniscient, Omnipresent \(Finale\)!](#)